



National Library
of Canada

Bibliothèque nationale
du Canada

Canadian Theses Service

Service des thèses canadiennes

Ottawa, Canada
K1A 0N4

NOTICE

The quality of this microform is heavily dependent upon the quality of the original thesis submitted for microfilming. Every effort has been made to ensure the highest quality of reproduction possible.

If pages are missing, contact the university which granted the degree.

Some pages may have indistinct print especially if the original pages were typed with a poor typewriter ribbon or if the university sent us an inferior photocopy.

Reproduction in full or in part of this microform is governed by the Canadian Copyright Act, R.S.C. 1970, c. C-30, and subsequent amendments.

AVIS

La qualité de cette microforme dépend grandement de la qualité de la thèse soumise au microfilmage. Nous avons tout fait pour assurer une qualité supérieure de reproduction.

S'il manque des pages, veuillez communiquer avec l'université qui a conféré le grade.

La qualité d'impression de certaines pages peut laisser à désirer, surtout si les pages originales ont été dactylographiées à l'aide d'un ruban usé ou si l'université nous a fait parvenir une photocopie de qualité inférieure.

La reproduction, même partielle, de cette microforme est soumise à la Loi canadienne sur le droit d'auteur, SRC 1970, c. C-30, et ses amendements subséquents.

**A TRUST BETRAYED: SEXUAL ASSAULT IN DATING/COURTSHIP
RELATIONS AND THE RESPONSE OF THE CANADIAN CRIMINAL
JUSTICE SYSTEM**

by

Kenneth David William Garley

B.A. Honours, Simon Fraser University, 1982

THESIS SUBMITTED IN PARTIAL FULFILLMENT OF
THE REQUIREMENTS FOR THE DEGREE OF
MASTER OF ARTS (CRIMINOLOGY)

in the School

of

Criminology

© Kenneth David William Garley 1989

SIMON FRASER UNIVERSITY

August 1989

All rights reserved. This work may not be reproduced in whole or in part, by photocopy or other means, without permission of the author.



National Library
of Canada

Bibliothèque nationale
du Canada

Canadian Theses Service Service des thèses canadiennes

Ottawa, Canada
K1A 0N4

The author has granted an irrevocable non-exclusive licence allowing the National Library of Canada to reproduce, loan, distribute or sell copies of his/her thesis by any means and in any form or format, making this thesis available to interested persons.

The author retains ownership of the copyright in his/her thesis. Neither the thesis nor substantial extracts from it may be printed or otherwise reproduced without his/her permission.

L'auteur a accordé une licence irrévocable et non exclusive permettant à la Bibliothèque nationale du Canada de reproduire, prêter, distribuer ou vendre des copies de sa thèse de quelque manière et sous quelque forme que ce soit pour mettre des exemplaires de cette thèse à la disposition des personnes intéressées.

L'auteur conserve la propriété du droit d'auteur qui protège sa thèse. Ni la thèse ni des extraits substantiels de celle-ci ne doivent être imprimés ou autrement reproduits sans son autorisation.

ISBN 0-315-59350-4

APPROVAL

Name: Kenneth David William Garley

Degree: MASTER OF ARTS (CRIMINOLOGY)

Title of thesis: A TRUST BETRAYED: SEXUAL ASSAULT IN DATING/
COURTSHIP RELATIONS AND THE RESPONSE OF THE
CANADIAN CRIMINAL JUSTICE SYSTEM

Examining Committee:

Chairperson: Ted S. Palys, Ph.D.

Simon N. Verdun-Jones, J.S.D., Senior Supervisor

Brian E. Burtch, Ph.D.

Margaret A. Jackson, Ph.D.

Robert J. Menzies, Ph.D.

Christine L. M. Boyle, LL.M., Faculty of Law,
Dalhousie University, External Examiner

Date Approved:

June 7, 1989

PARTIAL COPYRIGHT LICENSE

I hereby grant to Simon Fraser University the right to lend my thesis, project or extended essay (the title of which is shown below) to users of the Simon Fraser University Library, and to make partial or single copies only for such users or in response to a request from the library of any other university, or other educational institution, on its own behalf or for one of its users. I further agree that permission for multiple copying of this work for scholarly purposes may be granted by me or the Dean of Graduate Studies. It is understood that copying or publication of this work for financial gain shall not be allowed without my written permission.

Title of Thesis/~~Project/Extended Essay~~

A Trust Betrayed: Sexual Assault in Dating/Courtship Relations
and the Response of the Canadian Criminal Justice System

Author:

Signature:

Kenneth David William Garley

Date:

2008. 17. 1979

Date:

ABSTRACT

This study inquires into the extent, nature, and official reaction to date rape (or date sexual assault) committed by males against females. It also examines the extent to which rape myth acceptance (R.M.A.) influences the offender's *commission* and the victim's *reporting* of the offence. Factors thought to influence R.M.A., such as sex role stereotyping, adversarial sexual beliefs, and the acceptance of interpersonal violence, are scrutinized in making this examination. Recommendations for understanding, responding to, and preventing date sexual assault are then suggested.

Three methods of investigation are utilized. The first, an extensive review of the literature, looks at the state of the date rape/date sexual assault research. As well, the legal and historical literature on date rape is reviewed. The second method involves distributing sex-specific self-report questionnaires to 524 college and university students to determine (1) their attitudes towards women, men, dating, and sexual assault, and (2) their involvement in date sexual assault as victims or offenders. The third method involves interviewing 46 female date sexual assault victims about their victimization experiences.

Date sexual assault is found to be (1) widespread among female college and university students, (2) *not* confined to the less serious kinds of sexual assault, (3) frequently committed by so-called "normal" men, (4) much more likely to result in mental than physical injury, and (5) extremely unlikely to be reported to the police. No statistically significant relationship between R.M.A. and either the commission of date sexual assault or the victim's reporting of the offence (to friends, family, or members of the helping professions) is found. Statistically significant *positive* relationships are found, however, between R.M.A. *in males* and

both adversarial sexual beliefs and the acceptance of interpersonal violence. Among the 17 recommendations, it is suggested that a national resource/referral centre on sexual assault and an international news bulletin be established, workshops be developed for use in the schools, sexual assault peer counselling programs be instituted, the general public and criminal justice personnel be educated about the issue of date sexual assault, greater use be made of expert witnesses in court, and civil justice remedies be considered along with the criminal justice ones.

DEDICATION

To Mary-Jane

Of all the agonies in life, that which is most poignant and harrowing, that which for the time annihilates reason and leaves our whole organization one lacerated, mangled heart, is the conviction that we have been deceived where we placed all the trust of love.

Edward Bulwer-Lytton, 19th C. poet, *A Mangled Heart*

No pattern of domination is necessarily part of human nature, whether it be individual acts of rape or total war and annihilation.

Petra K. Kelly, *New Forms of Power*

Rape is simply at the end of the continuum of male-aggressive, female-passive patterns, and an arbitrary line has been drawn to mark it off from the rest of such relationships.

Andrea Medea and Kathleen Thompson, *Against Rape*

The obscure we see eventually, the completely obvious takes longer.

Marcie Servedio, Social Psychologist

Is there, in human form, that bears a heart-
A wretch! a villain! lost to love and truth!
That can, with studied, sly, ensnaring art,
Betray sweet Jenny's unsuspecting youth?

Robert Burns (1759-1796), *The Cotter's Saturday Night*

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

This thesis would not have been realized and completed without the assistance of a number of individuals. In particular, I would like to thank my Senior Supervisor, Dr. Simon Verdun-Jones for his guidance, unfailing support, constructive criticism, and patience. For one having so little free time, he gave of his time generously, for which I am greatly appreciative. The legal sections of the thesis especially bear witness to his investment of time.

For sending unsolicited books and other written materials my way, for assisting in the shaping of the historical material especially, for meticulously reviewing the thesis, and for suggesting additional articles of interest, I am deeply indebted to Dr. Brian Burtch.

Many thanks are due to ~~Dr. Margaret Jackson~~ as well for not only reading the thesis twice from cover to cover and carefully reviewing both its substantive and stylistic components, but for supporting and encouraging its completion from day one. Her significant contribution, most notably in helping to develop the theoretical material, will not be forgotten.

And last but not least on my Thesis Committee, I am deeply grateful to Dr. Robert Menzies for his helpful suggestions, support, and willingness to discuss issues related to the thesis on a moment's notice. The methodological aspects of the thesis especially benefitted from his careful attention.

I am indebted to Dr. Nanette Davis of Oregon State University for introducing me to the topic of date rape/date sexual assault, and for suggesting that I write my thesis on the topic. Had she not introduced me to the topic, it is quite likely that this thesis would never have been written.

A special thanks must also go to Dr. Ted Palys and Dr. Douglas Cousineau. Both had an enormous impact on the writing of this thesis, perhaps more than they will ever know. Though they were not formal members of my Thesis Committee, they might just as well have been. Dr. Palys impressed on me the importance of not sacrificing ethical research principles on the altar of science, and Dr. Cousineau gave me a much better appreciation of sociology of knowledge issues.

I would be remiss if I did not acknowledge as well the first-class efforts of my two research assistants- Karen Lyons and Sharlene Cherniwchan. Both proved to be dependable, trustworthy, conscientious, and dedicated to their tasks whether it was interviewing sexual assault victims, helping to survey classes of students, or coding data into the computer.

Dr. William Glackman, Director of the Criminology Research Centre at Simon Fraser University, is yet another to whom the author is deeply indebted. Not only did he permit me to use the Centre's name and phone number in the newspaper ads, but he also allowed me to "pick his brain" from time to time when it came to statistical and computing matters.

For granting me written permission to reproduce scale items dealing with Sex Role Stereotyping, Adversarial Sexual Beliefs, Interpersonal Violence, and Rape Myth Acceptance, I would like to express my indebtedness and heartfelt thanks to Dr. Martha Burt of Washington's Urban Institute. As well, I would like to thank Dr. LeRoy Schultz of West Virginia University for similarly allowing me to reproduce material dealing with the communication of consent to sexual intercourse, and the rape victim's immediate and later reactions to sexual assault.

For permitting me to survey their classes, I would like to thank John Anderson, Joanne Beamish, Dr. Margaret Benston, Dr. Ehor Boyanowsky, Dr. Brian Burch, Dr. Dorothy Chunn, Dr. H. Dickie-Clark, Lynne Hissey, Dr. Ted Palys, Dr. Robert Ratner, and the late Ron Rea. And to those individuals who were surveyed by questionnaire and/or interviewed, I am forever grateful.

In addition, I would like to thank various faculty members, colleagues, support staff, and friends for their various and sundry input into the writing of this thesis. Specifically, and in alphabetical order, I would like to thank Reo Audette of SFU Computing Services for helping with SPSSx-related matters, Colin Campbell for sending articles my way, Robert Holstein for applying his Computer Graphics skills to Figure 1 of this thesis, Judith Osborne for suggesting how the classified request should read, Bessie Pang for telling me what she really thought about ideas I would discuss with her, Rob Pretto for helping with the translation of Suzanne Voilquin's autobiography, Aileen Sams for going out of her way to help with just about anything, Margaret Sharon of SFU Computing Services for her expert word-processing assistance, Drew Stainton for applying his knowledge of "Microsoft Word" to the Literature Review Table, Mary Sutherland for her continued support and positive attitude, Rob Turner for his computing assistance, the University Ethics Review Committee for approving my thesis research, and Dr. Phyllis Wren of the SFU French Department for assistance in translating a part of Voilquin's autobiography into English. As well, it is important to acknowledge the crucial contribution students in my Criminology 120 (Research Methods) tutorials made to the writing of this thesis. Often, I would ask for their input about the way I had worded instructions or questions on the questionnaires. If the instructions or questions were not clear, they told me, and together we rectified the situation.

Finally, I would like to thank my fiancée Mary-Jane for, among other things, videotaping television programmes dealing with my thesis topic and presenting them to me. Most of all, however, I would just like to thank her for being patient, understanding, and enduring.

Thanks to all of you, including those I may have inadvertently missed. I could not have completed this thesis without you. Of course, while I am most grateful for your assistance, any errors in the thesis are mine alone.

July 1989

Ken D. Garley

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Approval	ii
Abstract	iii
Dedication	v
Acknowledgements	vii
List of Tables	xiv
List of Figures	xviii
I. INTRODUCTION	1
II. DEFINITION OF SEXUAL ASSAULT AND RAPE IN DATING/ COURTSHIP RELATIONS	7
III. DATE RAPE AND THE LAW IN HISTORICAL PERSPECTIVE	17
Introduction	17
Pre-1800	18
1800-1982	26
1983-Date	34
IV. FROM KANIN ONWARDS: A REVIEW OF THE DATE RAPE RESEARCH	47
Introduction	47
The Early Research: 1957-1971	48
Later Research: 1972-1981	55
The Latest Research: 1982-1988	67
Conclusion	106
V. THE PRESENT STUDY	107
Introduction	107
S.A.R.P.'s Purpose	107
The Data Collection Instruments	108
The Data Collection Procedures	111

How the Data were Processed and Analyzed	118
Shortcomings and Limitations of the Data	121
VI. RESULTS	133
Introduction	133
The In-Class and Out-of-Class Conditions	134
The Sample	136
The Prevalence and Nature of Date Sexual Assault	144
The Offenders	153
The Victims	158
The Criminal Justice System Response	181
The Relationship of Sex Role Stereotyping, Adversarial Sexual Beliefs, and Acceptance of Interpersonal Violence to Rape Myth Acceptance	185
The Relationship of Rape Myth Acceptance to the Commission and Reporting of Date Sexual Assault	201
VII. DISCUSSION	206
VIII. RECOMMENDATIONS	214
IX. CONCLUSION	225
APPENDIX A: TABLE A.1- REVIEW OF THE DATE RAPE/DATE SEXUAL ASSAULT LITERATURE	232a
APPENDIX B: FEMALE QUESTIONNAIRE ON SEXUAL AGGRESSION	263
APPENDIX C: MALE QUESTIONNAIRE ON SEXUAL AGGRESSION	290
APPENDIX D: FEMALE INTERVIEW SCHEDULE (TYPE 1)	308
APPENDIX E: FEMALE INTERVIEW SCHEDULE (TYPE 2)	319
APPENDIX F: SUBJECT CONSENT FORM	341
APPENDIX G: GUARDIAN CONSENT FORM (TYPE 1)	342
APPENDIX H: GUARDIAN CONSENT FORM (TYPE 2)	343
APPENDIX I: INFORMATION SHEET FOR SUBJECTS	344

APPENDIX J: MISCELLANEOUS TABLES	345
References	361
Legal Cases Cited	386
Name Index	389
Subject Index	392

LIST OF TABLES

Table	Page
6.1 Crosstabulation of Condition Questionnaires Completed Under by Sex	135
6.2 Crosstabulation of Age of Respondents by Sex	138
6.3 Crosstabulation of Marital Status of Respondents by Sex	139
6.4 Crosstabulation of Race of Respondents by Sex	140
6.5 Crosstabulation of Educational Level of Respondents by Sex	141
6.6 Crosstabulation of Sexual Orientation of Respondents by Sex	143
6.7 Crosstabulation of Prevalence of Date Sexual Assault Among Female Respondents by Condition Completed Under (CCU)	146
6.8 Crosstabulation of the Prevalence of SPECIFIC FORMS of Date Sexual Assault Among Female Victims By CCU (Broken Down into Attempted and Successfully Completed Acts)	147
6.9 ^{6/2} Crosstabulation of Location of Date Sexual Assault by CCU	150
6.10 Crosstabulation of Day of the Week Date Sexual Assaults Occurred by CCU	152
6.11 Crosstabulation of Time of the Day or Evening Date Sexual Assaults Began by CCU	152
6.12 Crosstabulation of Duration of Date Sexual Assaults by CCU	152
6.13 Crosstabulation of Assailant's Age (as Reported by the Victims) by CCU	154
6.14 Crosstabulation of Assailant's Marital Status (as Reported by the Victims) by CCU	154
6.15 Crosstabulation of Assailant's Occupation (as Reported by the Victims) by CCU	155
6.16 Crosstabulation of Assailant's Level of Education (as Reported by the Victims) by CCU	156
6.17 Crosstabulation of Assailant's Race (as Reported by the Victims) by CCU	157
6.18 Crosstabulation of Length of Time Victim and Assailant Had Known Each Other Prior to the Date Sexual Assault by CCU	158

6.19	Crosstabulation of Length of Time Victim and Assailant Had Dated Each Other Prior to the Date Sexual Assault by CCU	158
6.20	Crosstabulation of Frequency of Date Sexual Assault from DIFFERENT Boyfriends and Dates by CCU	159
6.21	Crosstabulation of Frequency of Date Sexual Assault from the SAME Boyfriend or Date by CCU	160
6.22	Crosstabulation of Race of Date Sexual Assault Victims by CCU	162
6.23	Crosstabulation of Marital Status of Date Sexual Assault Victims at the Time of Their Sexual Victimization by CCU	163
6.24	Crosstabulation of Age of Date Sexual Assault Victims at the Time of Their Sexual Victimization by CCU	163
6.25	Crosstabulation of Sexual Orientation of Date Sexual Assault Victims at the Time of the Survey by CCU	163
6.26	Crosstabulation of Who Asked Who Out on the Sexually Assaultive Date by CCU	165
6.27	Crosstabulation of Who Paid on the Sexually Assaultive Date by CCU	165
6.28	Crosstabulation of Kinds of Pressure or Force Used on Date Sexual Assault Victims by CCU	165
6.29	Crosstabulation of Victim Response to Date Sexual Assault by CCU	167
6.30	Crosstabulation of Action Victims Took After the Date Sexual Assault by CCU	168
6.31	Crosstabulation of Date Sexual Assault Victims Who Sought Medical Attention as a Result of Being Attacked by CCU	168
6.32	Crosstabulation of Physical Injuries and Consequences Attributable to the Date Sexual Assault by CCU	169
6.33	Crosstabulation of Emotional Consequences Attributable to the Date Sexual Assault by CCU	169
6.34	Crosstabulation of Length of Time Emotional Consequences Attributable to the Date Sexual Assault Persisted by CCU	170
6.35	Crosstabulation of Measures Female Date Sexual Assault Victims Taking to Prevent Sexual Assault by CCU	175
6.36	Crosstabulation of Measures Other Kinds of Female Sexual Assault Victims Taking to Prevent Sexual Assault by CCU	175

6.37	Crosstabulation of Measures Females Who Have Never Been Sexually Assaulted are Taking to Prevent Sexual Assault by CCU	175
6.38	Crosstabulation of Believability of Sexual Assault Victims with Specific Characteristics by Sex	183
6.39	Crosstabulation of Burt's Rape Myth Acceptance Scale Items by Sex ..	187
6.40	Crosstabulation of Burt's Sex Role Stereotyping Scale Items by Sex ..	190
6.41	Crosstabulation of Burt's Adversarial Sexual Belief Scale Items by Sex	190
6.42	Crosstabulation of Burt's Acceptance of Interpersonal Violence Scale Items by Sex	190
6.43	Crosstabulation of Rape Myth Acceptance by Sex Role Stereotyping ..	196
6.44	Crosstabulation of Rape Myth Acceptance by Adversarial Sexual Beliefs	196
6.45	Crosstabulation of Rape Myth Acceptance by Acceptance of Interpersonal Violence	199
6.46	Crosstabulation of Rape Myth Acceptance by the Combined Scores of Sex Role Stereotyping, Adversarial Sexual Beliefs, and Acceptance of Interpersonal Violence	201
6.47	Crosstabulation of the Self-Reported Commission of Sexual Assault by Rape Myth Acceptance	203
6.48	Crosstabulation of the Reporting of Date Sexual Assault (to Friends, Family, and Members of the Helping Professions) by Rape Myth Acceptance	204
A.1	Review of the Date Rape Date Sexual Assault Literature	232
J.1	Crosstabulation of Believability of Sexual Assault Victims with Specific Characteristics by Sex (Out-of-Class Sample)	345
J.2	Crosstabulation of Believability of Sexual Assault Victims with Specific Characteristics by Sex (In-Class & Out-of-Class Samples Combined)	346
J.3	Crosstabulation of Burt's Rape Myth Acceptance Scale Items by Sex (Out-of-Class Sample)	347
J.4	Crosstabulation of Burt's Rape Myth Acceptance Scale Items by Sex (In-Class & Out-of-Class Samples Combined)	349
J.5	Crosstabulation of Burt's Sex Role Stereotyping Scale Items by Sex (Out-of-Class Sample)	351

J.6	Crosstabulation of Burt's Sex Role Stereotyping Scale Items by Sex (In-Class & Out-of-Class Samples Combined)	353
J.7	Crosstabulation of Burt's Adversarial Sexual Belief Scale Items by Sex (Out-of-Class Sample)	355
J.8	Crosstabulation of Burt's Adversarial Sexual Belief Scale Items by Sex (In-Class & Out-of-Class Samples Combined)	357
J.9	Crosstabulation of Burt's Acceptance of Interpersonal Violence Scale Items by Sex (Out-of-Class Sample)	359
J.10	Crosstabulation of Burt's Acceptance of Interpersonal Violence Scale Items By Sex (In-Class & Out-of-Class Samples Combined)	360

LIST OF FIGURES

Figure	Page
1 The Four Main Types of Rape and Their Relationship to the Larger Picture of Violence	13

CHAPTER I

INTRODUCTION

"When I was about 16, I went out on a date with a guy I knew from school. We went to the movies and afterwards he wanted to go for a ride. There was still time before I was supposed to be home, so I agreed.

He drove into the country singing with the radio. He pulled a beer out from under the car seat and started drinking it. He offered it to me. I said, 'No thanks'. I was sort of surprised, but didn't want to make a big deal of it. Suddenly he turned down a small dirt road and stopped. He turned to me and pulled me over to him. I didn't know what to say and he acted like it didn't matter anyway. I tried to pull away from him but he wouldn't let me. Then I got scared and said, 'What are you doing?'

He said, 'What do you think I'm doing. You wouldn't have come here with me if you didn't want it.'

I started for the car door but he grabbed my arm so tightly it really hurt. I was afraid he would hurt me even more if I didn't do what he said. He raped me and then drove me home.

I didn't tell anybody because I was too ashamed. My parents had told me not to talk to strangers and to never let a guy take advantage of me. Nobody had told me it was rape if you knew the guy."¹

Unfortunately, scenarios similar to this one are all too common. Labelled as "date rape" by both the academic community and the news media, such sexual assaults are slowly starting to be recognized as no less frequent or serious than sexual assaults committed by strangers or family members. Undoubtedly, the growing research into family and courtship violence, significant changes in Canadian, American, English, and Australian sexual assault laws in the last decade, and the increasing willingness of the media to deal with the issue (i.e., such television programmes as *Donahue*, *Oprah Winfrey*, *Sally Jessy Raphaël*, *Town Meeting*, *Cagney and Lacey*) have contributed to this trend.

¹Caren Adams and Jennifer Fay, *Nobody Told Me it was Rape: A Parent's Guide for Talking with Teenagers about Acquaintance Rape and Sexual Exploitation* (Santa Cruz: Network Publications, 1984), p.1.

With date rape "emerging from the closet", so to speak, one is naturally curious as to whether it is a relatively recent phenomenon on the upswing or a longstanding but hidden social problem. The available evidence, what little there is, suggests that date rape has been with us as long as the customs of dating and courtship.² For reasons which will become apparent in reading this thesis, the behaviour remained hidden until quite recently.

As to why some men sexually assault women they have just begun to date or have been dating for years, there is a great deal of scholarly debate. At one end of the spectrum are theorists such as Nicholas Groth who base their explanations of the behaviour on the *Psychopathological Model*. This model posits that date rapists are "sick individuals" from the "lunatic fringe" of society.³ At the other end of the spectrum are theorists such as Diana Russell, Susan Brownmiller, Lorene Clark, Debra Lewis, and Mary Koss who base their explanations of date rape on the *Social Control/Social Conflict Model* which postulates the existence of a "sick society". Specifically, they believe that sexual assault in general, and date rape in particular, are symptomatic of an ill society rather than the product of a few sick minds.⁴ Furthermore, they contend that date

²According to Moon, "The distinction between courtship and dating may be made analytically by viewing the former as an activity directed toward a member of the opposite sex with a serious intent of marriage and the latter a playful or less-committed activity. However, given the essential ambiguity of intentions and actions it is more useful to view dating and courtship on a continuum with various identifiable stages such as casual dating, casual going-steady, serious going-steady or 'going with', and engagement...". For the source of this quotation, see Sueng Gyu Moon, "The Courtship Process: Dating and Mate Selection," in *Courtship, Marriage, and the Family in Canada*, ed. G. N. Ramu (Toronto: Macmillan Co., 1979), p.31.

³Diana Scully and Joseph Marolla, "Riding the Bull at Gilley's: Convicted Rapists Describe the Rewards of Rape," *Social Problems* 32 (February 1985): 251.

⁴See Diana Russell, *Rape in Marriage* (New York: Macmillan Publishing Co., 1982); Susan Brownmiller, *Against Our Will: Men, Women, and Rape* (New York: Bantam Books, 1975); Lorene Clark and Debra Lewis, *Rape: The Price of Coercive Sexuality* (Toronto: The Women's Press, 1977); and Mary Koss et al., "Nonstranger Sexual Aggression: A Discriminant Analysis of the Psychological

rape is only to be expected, given the sexual socialization process in North American society, and that the behaviour is actually an over-extension of society's coercive sexuality. And unlike theorists such as Kanin,⁵ whose published writings on the topic predate their own by a decade or more, they believe that date rape is first and foremost an assaultive act as opposed to a sexual one.

Falling somewhere between these two perspectives, or so it would appear, are four other explanations of date rape- Kanin's Theory of Relative Sexual Frustration, Merton's Theory of Anomie, the Generational Theory of Violence, and Shotland's Theory of Date Rape as a Normal Social Process.⁶ These explanations, along with others which are perhaps less well-known, will be discussed in greater detail in Chapter 4 of this thesis.

Almost as fascinating as the study of date rape is the study of the academic community's neglect of the topic. Prior to 1957, no studies had been conducted on the phenomenon in all of North America.⁷ Prior to 1971, only a

⁴(cont'd) Characteristics of Undetected Offenders," *Sex Roles* 12 (May 1985): 981-992.

⁵*Infra* note 7.

⁶For a closer look at Kanin's Theory of Relative Sexual Frustration, see Eugene J. Kanin, "An Examination of Sexual Aggression as a Response to Sexual Frustration," *Journal of Marriage and the Family* 29 (August 1967): 428-433; "Date Rapists: Differential Sexual Socialization and Relative Deprivation," *Archives of Sexual Behaviour* 14 (June 1985): 219-231; and "Rape as a Function of Relative Sexual Frustration," *Psychological Reports* 52 (February 1983): 133-134. Merton's Theory of Anomie and the Generational Theory of Violence are two of three theories discussed and tested by Kenneth Wilson, Rebecca Faison, and G. M. Britton in "Cultural Aspects of Male Sex Aggression." *Deviant Behaviour* 4 (1983): 241-255. Shotland's Theory of Date Rape as a Normal Social Process is contained in Lance R. Shotland, "A Preliminary Model of Some Causes of Date Rape." *Academic Psychology Bulletin* 7 (Summer 1985): 187-200.

⁷Clifford Kirkpatrick and Eugene Kanin have the distinction of being the first researchers in North America to investigate the phenomenon of date rape. See Clifford Kirkpatrick and Eugene Kanin, "Male Sex Aggression on a University Campus." *American Sociological Review* 22 (February 1957): 52-58.

handful of researchers were even studying date rape.⁸ Indeed, it has only been in the last six years that date rape has begun to be studied by more than a modest number of researchers.⁹ Even so, the increased interest can hardly be described as an "opening of the floodgates".

As far as the present research is concerned, it is hoped that a modest contribution will be made to the social scientific community's current state of knowledge on date rape. It is also hoped that the present research will encourage further scholarly investigation into the phenomenon of date rape. Further research into the official response to that phenomenon is also needed. But a torrent of research alone is insufficient as a necessary first step in understanding, and ultimately preventing, date rape; such research must also strive to avoid the pitfalls of some of its predecessors. Generally speaking, these pitfalls have included (1) not defining key terms such as date rape, (2) poorly defining terms, (3) confusing date rape with acquaintance rape, (4) failing to appreciate

⁸Prior to 1971, the researchers who had studied or were studying the phenomenon of date rape included Clifford Kirkpatrick, Eugene Kanin, and Menachem Amir (the latter researcher only touched on the topic).

⁹From 1971 onwards, other researchers began to directly examine or touch on the topic of date rape. In chronological order, such researchers included: Diana Russell, Susan Brownmiller, Lorene Clark, Debra Lewis, Stanley Parcell, Sandra Byers, Kenneth Wilson, Rebecca Faison, Silke Vogelmann-Sine, Pauline Bart, Philip Sarrel, William Masters, Antonia Abbey, Sheila Korman, Gerald Leslie, Wayne Wilson, Robert Durrenberger, James Check, Neil Malamuth, Lance Shotland, Lynne Goodstein, G. M. Britton, Gail Abarbanel, Alan McEvoy, Jeff Brookings, Fern Mims, Audrey Chang, Kay Porterfield, Carol Sigelman, Carol Berry, Katherine Wiles, Paula Wilson, Ken Garley, Mary Koss, Kenneth Leonard, Dana Beezley, Cheryl Oros, Katherine Lane, Patricia Gwartney-Gibbs, Charlene Muehlenhard, Debra Friedman, Celeste Thomas, Genny Sandberg, Diana Scully, Joseph Marolla, Gloria Fischer, Joyce Levine-MacCombie, Maureen Pirog-Good, Jan Stets, Thomas Dull, David Giacomassi, Susan Estrich, Christine Gidycz, Nadine Wisniewski, James Makepeace, Melaney Linton, and Jacqueline Kikuchi. It should be noted that this list does *not* include all date rape researchers. Also, because this list is based on the dates appearing in *selected* books, journals, newspaper articles, and unpublished materials dealing with date rape, it is possible that these dates may not accurately reflect whom was researching date rape when.

that criminological definitions of rape or sexual assault may differ considerably from the legal definitions, (5) examining date rape in an historical and cultural vacuum, (6) failing to recognize the merits of an interdisciplinary approach to the understanding of the behaviour, (7) using inappropriate or questionable methodology to study date rape, (8) using the appropriate methodology in a suspect manner, (9) failing to describe one's methodology in sufficient detail so as to permit proper evaluation of its suitability to the task or its application thereof, and (10) arriving at conclusions not supported by either the scholarly literature or one's data. In carrying out the research on which this thesis is based, the author has striven to avoid these ten common pitfalls.

The purpose of this thesis is first and foremost to inquire into the extent and nature of, and official reaction to date rape/date sexual assault committed by males against females.¹⁰ Its secondary purpose is to examine the extent to which rape myth acceptance (R.M.A.) influences two important factors: the *commission* of date sexual assault and the victim's *reporting* of such a betrayal of trust. As a precursor to making this examination, the relationship of sex role stereotyping, adversarial sexual beliefs, and acceptance of interpersonal violence to rape myth acceptance will be examined. The thesis is reform-oriented in

¹⁰Although the author is focusing on *heterosexual* date rape committed by males against females, he is in no way implying that date rape only occurs in the heterosexual community or that only males can be offenders. Date rape also occurs in the homosexual community- "gay" males have sexually assaulted "gay" males and lesbians have sexually assaulted lesbians. In the heterosexual community, females have sexually assaulted males they have been dating. In a nutshell, date rape transcends both sexual orientation and gender. So why did the author choose to focus on heterosexual date rape committed by males against females? There were essentially two main reasons- he wanted to keep his thesis topic manageable, and also wished to address the larger aspect of the date rape problem. With reference to this latter point, the available evidence indicates that more date rapes occur in the heterosexual than in the homosexual community (due no doubt to the fact that homosexuals make up only about 10% of the general population). Of the date rapes occurring in the heterosexual community, the vast majority are ones in which males are offenders and females victims.

approach. Ways of understanding, responding to, and ultimately preventing date sexual assault are suggested based on information obtained from the foregoing used in conjunction with cost-benefit analysis.

Before proceeding further, however, it is imperative that a number of terms be defined in order to avoid confusion. As well, it is crucial that the phenomenon of date rape be seen in its historical and cultural context in order to be more fully understood. This comment applies equally to the date rape research. For these reasons, Chapter II deals with definitions, Chapter III with date rape's history, and Chapter IV with past and present date rape research. Chapters V and VI build on this foundation, the former dealing with the present study itself and the latter with its findings. Chapter VII follows up with a discussion of the study's findings and their implications for both social policy and future research. With the previous seven chapters as support, Chapter VIII makes specific recommendations for preventing, overcoming, and eliminating date rape/date sexual assault. The final chapter, not too surprisingly, summarizes that which has preceded it, states the author's conclusions, and leaves the reader pondering a question or two.

CHAPTER II
DEFINITION OF SEXUAL ASSAULT AND RAPE IN DATING/COURTSHIP
RELATIONS

On August 4th, 1982, the House of Commons passed Bill C-127, *An Act to Amend the Criminal Code in Relation to Sexual Offences and Other Offences Against the Person*.¹ This Bill became law on January 4th 1983. It abolished the *Criminal Code* offence of forcible rape (s. 143) and created three new offences to take its place- sexual assault (s. 271), sexual assault with a weapon (s. 272), and aggravated sexual assault (s. 273). These offences were placed under Part VIII of the *Code* which deals with "Offences Against the Person and Reputation".

For whatever reason, the term "sexual assault" was not statutorily defined;² this task was instead left to the judiciary. As the case law shows, however, there has been some conflict as to the meaning of this term. In *R. v. Chase*.³ the New Brunswick Court of Appeal held that "...the offence requires proof of an intentional and forced contact with the sexual organs or genitalia, not merely the parts of the body having secondary sexual characteristics such as the breasts of the female victim".⁴ However, in both *R. v. Alderton*⁵ and *R. v.*

¹David Watt, *The New Offences Against the Person: The Provisions of Bill C-127* (Toronto: Butterworths, 1984), p. 4.

²See *Martin's Criminal Code, 1988* (Ontario: Canada Law Book, 1987), p.294.

³*R. v. Chase* (1987), 37 C.C.C. (3d) 97 (S.C.C.); (1984), 13 C.C.C. (2d) 187, 40 C.R. (3d) 282, 55 N.B.R. (2d) 97 (C.A.).

⁴*Supra* note 2 at 294. At least one legal commentator is not impressed with the appeal court's reasoning in *R. v. Chase*. According to Graham Parker in *An Introduction to Criminal Law* (3rd Edition) at 342, "A ludicrous decision from New Brunswick has decided that female breasts are not sexual (*Chase*), but courts in Ontario and Alberta have had the good sense to ignore this aberration".

⁵*R. v. Alderton* (1985), 49 O.R. (2d) 257, 17 C.C.C. (3d) 204 (C.A.).

*Cook*⁶ the courts adopted a wider definition. Sexual assault was deemed to "...include an assault with the intention of having sexual intercourse with the victim without her consent, or an assault made upon a victim for the purpose of sexual gratification".⁷ The cases of *R. v. Ramos*⁸ and *R. v. Taylor*⁹ appear to support this wider definition of sexual assault.

The Supreme Court of Canada, in reviewing *R. v. Chase*,¹⁰ agreed that the New Brunswick Court of Appeal had imposed too restrictive a meaning on the term "sexual assault". The test to be applied, in determining if an assault was a sexual one, is an objective one. More than just the part of the body touched is relevant to the determination; the nature of the contact, the situation in which it occurred, the words spoken, the accompanying gestures, and all other circumstances surrounding the conduct will be relevant. In the words of McIntyre J.:

"Sexual assault is an assault within any one of the definitions of that concept in (s. 265(1)) of the *Criminal Code* which is committed in circumstances of a sexual nature, such that the sexual integrity of the victim is violated. The test to be applied in determining whether the impugned conduct has the requisite sexual nature is an objective one: 'Viewed in the light of all the circumstances, is the sexual or carnal context of the assault visible to a reasonable observe? (sic)' ...The part of the body touched, the nature of the consent, the situation in which it occurred, the words and gestures accompanying the act, and all other circumstances surrounding the conduct, including threats which may or may not be accompanied by force, will be relevant."¹¹

The motive of the person alleged to have committed a sexual assault may also be relevant, although it must still be considered along with the other factors

⁶*R. v. Cook* (1985), 20 C.C.C. (3d) 18, 46 C.R. (3d) 129 (B.C.C.A.).

⁷*Supra* note 2 at 294.

⁸*R. v. Ramos* (1984), 42 C.R. (3d) 370 (N.W.T. Terr Ct.).

⁹*R. v. Taylor* (1985), 19 C.C.C. (3d) 156, 44 C.R. (3d) 263, [1985] 3 W.W.R. 415 (Alta C.A.).

¹⁰*Supra* note 3.

¹¹*Supra* note 3 at 103.

mentioned above. As McIntyre J. explains:

"The intent or purpose of the person committing the act, to the extent that this may appear from the evidence, may also be a factor in considering whether the conduct is sexual. If the motive of the accused is sexual gratification, to the extent that this may appear from the evidence it may be a factor in determining whether the conduct is sexual. It must be emphasized, however, that the existence of such a motive is simply one of many factors to be considered, the importance of which will vary depending on the circumstances."¹²

Clearly, then, the test for recognition of sexual assault depends on more than just the part of the body with which contact is made; the nature of the contact, the words spoken, the gestures made, the motive of the accused, and other circumstances related to the act determine whether an assault is sexual.

Given that the offence of forcible rape no longer exists under Canadian criminal law and that its replacement (sexual assault) is not as precise and all-inclusive a definition as it could be, a major problem confronts sexual aggression researchers who wish to both label and define the phenomenon of unwanted sexual aggression occurring among dating partners. This problem is particularly acute for researchers who seek to relate the criminological definition of such behaviour to the legal one. Does one label the phenomenon of unwanted sexual aggression occurring among dating partners as a type of rape or a type of sexual assault? To date, the phenomenon has been labelled at least 16 different ways- date rape, forcible date rape, acquaintance rape, social rape, non-stranger rape, non-stranger sexual aggression, premarital rape, petty rape, real rape, simple rape, campus rape, sex aggression in dating/courtship relations, erotic aggressiveness in dating courtship relations, sexual assault in dating/courtship relations, sex abuse in dating courtship relations, and as an unwanted stressful sexual experience.¹³ As well, unwanted sexual aggression occurring among dating partners

¹²*Supra* note 3 at 103.

¹³The following authors have labelled unwanted sexual aggression among dating partners in the following ways:

has been deemed by various researchers as falling under the general headings of dating violence, premarital violence, courtship violence, and sexual violence.¹⁴ Once labelled, how should the phenomenon be defined? Should it only include forced vaginal intercourse or should other types of forced sexual behaviour (such as forced oral and anal intercourse, unwanted touching, etc.) be included? Should the definition exclude certain groups (such as men and married women) or should all individuals be included? And should such a definition make any distinction on the basis of how young the victim is? The answers to these and other questions will determine how present and future researchers label and define unwanted sexual aggression occurring within the context of dating/courting relationships.

For the purposes of this thesis, two main terms are used to refer to the phenomenon of unwanted sexual aggression occurring within the context of dating/courting relationships. These terms are "date rape" (D.R.) and "date sexual assault" (D.S.A.) The former term is the more restrictive of the two, and refers

¹³(cont'd) (1) *Date Rape*- Brownmiller, Wilson, Faison, Abbey, Korman, Leslie, Russell, Check, Malamuth, Kanin, Shotland, Goodstein, Porterfield, Muehlenhard, Friedman, Thomas, Scully, Marolla, Briskin, Gary, Fischer, Dull, Giacobassi, Estrich, Muehlenhard, Linton, and Bateman; (2) *Forcible Date Rape*- Amir and Fischer; (3) *Acquaintance Rape or a Form of Acquaintance Rape*- Abbey, Check, Malamuth, Shotland, Goodstein, McEvoy, Brookings, Porterfield, Scully, Marolla, Briskin, Gary, Levine-MacCombie, Koss, Dull, Giacobassi, Estrich, Abarbanel, and Bateman; (4) *Social Rape*- Browder; (5) *Non-stranger Rape*- Koss; (6) *Non-stranger Sexual Aggression*- Koss, Leonard, Beezley, and Oros; (7) *Premarital Rape*- Russell; (8) *Petty Rape*- Greer; (9) *Real Rape*- Shotland, Goodstein, and Estrich; (10) *Simple Rape*- Kalven and Zeisel; (11) *Campus Rape*- Creange, Ehrhart, and Sandler; (12) *Sex Aggression*- Kirkpatrick, Kanin, Korman, Leslie, Wilson, Faison, Britton, Sigelman, Berry, Wiles, Byers, Wilson, Muehlenhard and Linton; (13) *Erotic Aggressiveness*- Kirkpatrick and Kanin; (14) *Sexual Assault*- Byers and Wilson; (15) *Sex Abuse*- Pirog-Good and Stets; and (16) *Unwanted Stressful Sexual Experience*- Mims and Chang.

¹⁴The following authors have labelled unwanted sexual aggression among dating partners as coming under the following headings:

(1) *Dating Violence*- Henton, Cate, Koval, Lloyd, and Christopher; (2) *Premarital Violence*- Henton, Cate, Koval, Lloyd, and Christopher; (3) *Courtship Violence*- Lane, Gwartney-Gibbs, and Makepeace; and (4) *Sexual Violence*- Sigelman, Berry, and Wiles.

to *non-consenting sexual intercourse* that occurs in the context of a dating-courtship relationship, whether the relationship be casual and superficial (as in a "pick-up") or relatively involved and committed (as in an engagement). Date rape includes non-consenting vaginal, anal, and oral intercourse. It is not necessary that a penis be involved; the projectile may be a finger or any other foreign object. Nor is it a requirement that the non-consenting intercourse occur while the individuals involved are on a date; the relationship between the individuals involved is crucial to the definition, *not* whether they were on a date when the bodily intrusion transpired. Date rape does *not* include non-consenting sexual intercourse occurring between strangers, family members, or relatives, or occurring within the context of a marital or common-law relationship. The term "date sexual assault", in contrast, covers more than just non-consenting sexual intercourse between dating and courting couples; it also covers kissing, fondling, bottom-pinching, undressing, and any form of sexual behaviour lacking the true consent of the affected party, be that person female or male. Like "date rape", "date sexual assault" is defined as occurring *only* if the following factors are all present: the behaviour lacking the consent of the affected party must occur in the context of a dating-courtship relationship, be it casual and superficial or relatively involved and committed; the unwanted behaviour need not actually take place on a date; and the individuals involved must *not* be strangers, family members, relatives, or living together as husband and wife in a formalized or non-formalized relationship (i.e., married or living common law with one another). Although there is no valid reason why the terms "date rape" and "date sexual assault" should not apply to situations where males victimize males, females victimize females, or females victimize males, this study focuses on the most predominant form of date rape sexual assault- that occurring within *heterosexual* relationships where the male is the offender and the female the victim.

Defining the boundaries of this thesis and two of its key terms is not enough insofar as understanding D.S.A. is concerned. Just as one would not study a tree in isolation from the forest from which it came, so too one should not study D.S.A. in isolation from the larger picture of violence. The danger in so doing is that one may fail to recognize the similarities and differences between the various types of sexual assault which may inhibit or even distort the explanation of the behaviour. At the very least, the phenomenon of D.S.A. will not be seen as part of the larger picture of violence. The extent to which such a myopic view of this behaviour can handicap research into the phenomenon is open to debate, but it would appear preferable to preclude the possibility of its occurrence. Towards this end, Figure 1 is offered.

Beginning at its centre, one can see that there are essentially four main types of rape- stranger, acquaintance, date, and marital.¹⁵ Stranger rape is defined as involving "...a victim and offender who have *no* relationship to each other..."¹⁶ whereas acquaintance rape is defined as "...involv(ing) parties who knew each other prior to the assault (but who were not in a dating or courting relationship) and includes relatives, neighbours, or family friends".¹⁷ Date rape, as was previously pointed out, is defined as occurring in the context of a dating-courting relationship. The parties involved may have only dated once or they may have dated hundreds of times. Lastly, marital rape is defined as involving a victim and offender who are *spouses*, whether married or living common law with one another. Several brief examples of these four definitions, courtesy of Koss and Harvey, are reproduced in Table 1 below:

¹⁵Mary P. Koss and Mary R. Harvey, *The Rape Victim: Clinical and Community Approaches to Treatment* (Massachusetts: The Stephen Greene Press, 1987), p.11-12.

¹⁶*Id.* at 11.

¹⁷*Id.* at 11.

Figure 1

The Four Main Types of Rape and Their Relationship to the Larger Picture of Violence

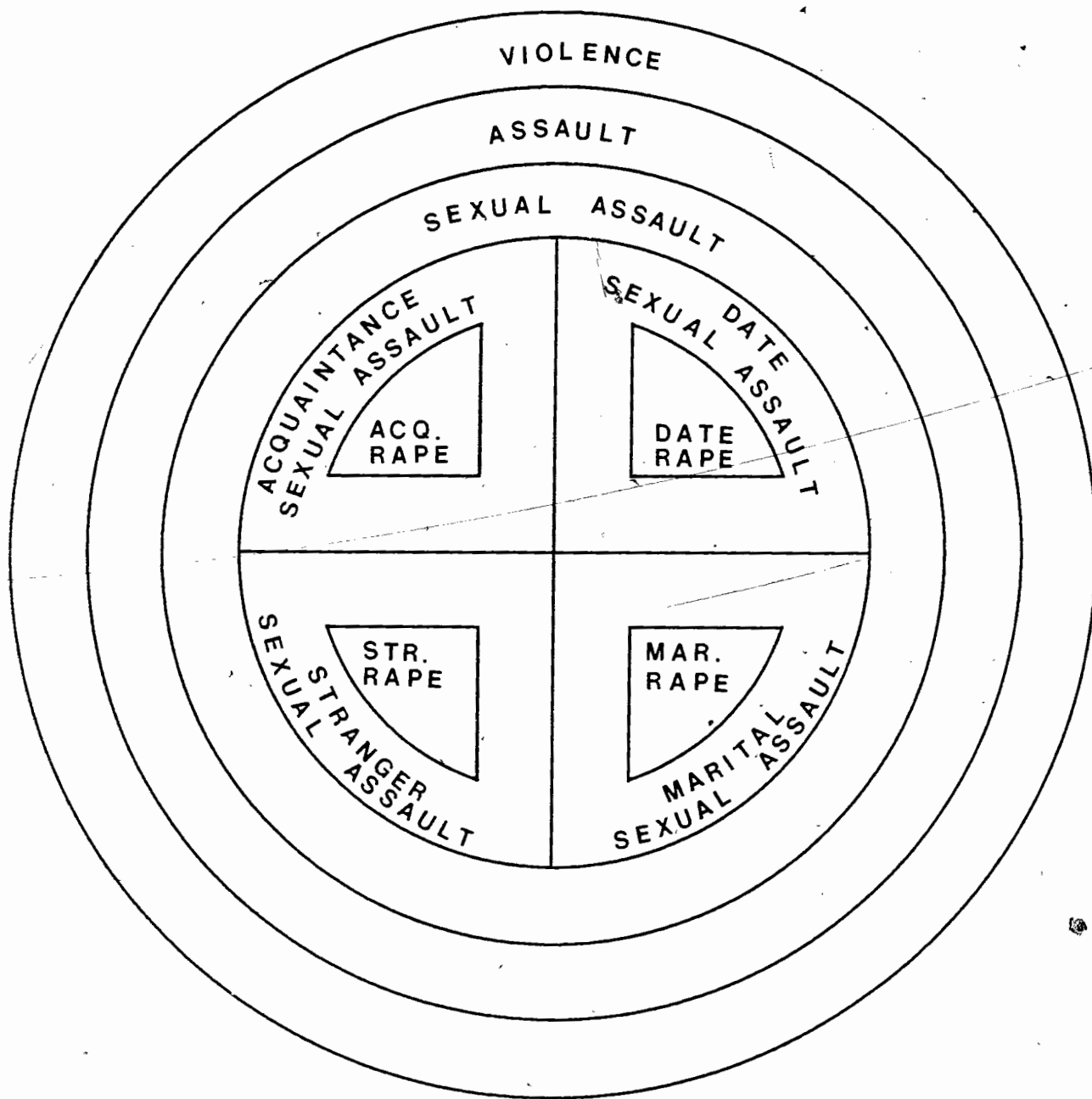


Table 1: *The Four Main Types of Rape*¹⁸

Stranger Rape: Rose, age 25, was accosted at knife point in a shopping mall parking lot and forced by a stranger into his car. He drove her to a rural area, raped her, stabbed her five times, set the car on fire, and left her. Although severely injured, she survived.

Acquaintance Rape: Susan, age 23, went to the door of her house to find a man she recognized from one of her college classes. She opened the door to let him in the house, whereupon he threw her on the sofa and raped her.

Date Rape: Diana, age 50, is vacationing in the Caribbean. She spends some of her time learning sailing and walking along the beach with a fellow guest. At a hotel dance, she dances with this man, and he asks to walk outside. Once on the beach, this 6'4" man asks to have sex and forces her to cooperate by holding her down. Diana is too afraid to resist.

Marital Rape: Unidentified caller, 30's, telephones a radio talk show on which marital rape is discussed. She describes her husband's sexual assaults and asks where to go for help.

Moving from the four main types of rape in Figure 1 outwards, one can see that each type of rape is a specific type of sexual assault. Date rape, for example, is a type of *date sexual assault*. Although the victim-offender relationship is the same for both a date rape and a date sexual assault, the specific unwanted behaviour may not be. As previously pointed out, a date rape involves non-consenting sexual intercourse of the vaginal, anal, or oral kind; a date sexual assault, in contrast, covers a much wider array of non-consenting sexual behaviour. Moving to the next outer limit, one can see that stranger sexual assault, acquaintance sexual assault, date sexual assault, and marital sexual assault can be subsumed under the general heading of *sexual assault*. Moving further outwards, one can see that sexual assault is but one type of *assault*, a fact reflected in the *Criminal Code of Canada*.¹⁹ Finally, one can see that an

¹⁸This table is reproduced from Mary P. Koss and Mary R. Harvey, *The Rape Victim: Clinical and Community Approaches to Treatment* (Massachusetts: The Stephen Greene Press, 1987), p. 11-12.

¹⁹The term "assault" includes both sexual and non-sexual assaults. A non-sexual assault (s. 266, s. 267, and s. 268 of the *Canadian Criminal Code*) would include *physical violence* such as battering or "beating up" the victim.

assault is ultimately a part of all the violence that exists in the world.²⁰

Date sexual assault, as is the case with the other three types of sexual assault, can be further defined in terms of its form, spontaneity, and public recognition.²¹ As far as form is concerned, D.S.A. may involve a single offender (individual D.S.A.), two offenders who act together to sexually assault the same victim (pair D.S.A.), or three or more offenders (multiple or gang D.S.A.). As long as *at least one* of the offenders is in a dating or courtship relationship with the victim, the sexual assault will be considered a D.S.A. Concerning spontaneity, D.S.A.'s may be planned, partially planned, or unplanned. A D.S.A. will be deemed to have been planned if "...the offender arranged the site of the assault, deliberately selected a victim, and employed elaborate tactics to coerce her to have sexual relations".²² It will be deemed to have been partially planned if "...the offender (made) vague plans regarding how to proceed after spontaneously meeting a potential victim"²³ and unplanned if he acted impulsively with no plans. Finally, as far as public recognition is concerned, D.S.A.'s may be either reported or unreported. A reported D.S.A. is defined as the victim reporting her victimization to the police. An unreported D.S.A. is the exact opposite- the incident is *not* reported to the police. With respect to unreported D.S.A.'s, they are of two types: acknowledged and unacknowledged. An acknowledged but

²⁰ Violence is defined as involving the exercise of unlawful force and *may* involve the exercise of lawful force. To those who would argue that violence cannot ever include the exercise of lawful force, the author would draw their attention to the former section of the 1982 *Canadian Criminal Code* which dealt with the offence of rape. Section 143 statutorily prohibited husbands from being charged with the rape of their wives even if they had forced their wives to engage in sexual intercourse. In essence, a marriage license was tantamount to a license to rape one's wife. Fortunately, the marital rape exemption was abolished in Canada on January 4th 1983.

²¹ *Supra* note 15 at 10.

²² *Supra* note 15 at 12.

²³ *Supra* note 15 at 12.

unreported D.S.A. is defined here as "...where a victim considers the experience to have been rape (or sexual assault) but for various reasons (e.g., fear of damage to reputation, fear of being held responsible) *declines* to report".²⁴ An unacknowledged D.S.A. is where "...the victim does not realize that the experience she has had meets (the) legal definition of (sexual assault) and does not think of herself as a (sexual assault) victim".²⁵

It is important to note that D.S.A. can be broken down even further into more specialized definitions, and that Figure 1 (illustrating D.S.A.'s relation to violence in general) is not finished. With specific reference to this figure, future researchers will undoubtedly add further categories within categories. But now it is time to survey the past so that we may better understand the present which Figure 1 and the definitions represent. With this agenda in mind, then, let us look first at D.S.A. and the law from an historical perspective.

²⁴ *Supra* note 15 at 13.

²⁵ *Supra* note 15 at 13.

CHAPTER III

DATE RAPE AND THE LAW IN HISTORICAL PERSPECTIVE

Introduction

The historical study of rape in general, and date rape in particular, is disappointing. As Bashar laments:

"...the historical study of rape has not been extensive. Historians of crime and society in early modern England (the period between 1550 and 1800) have readily given their attention to other crimes affecting women such as infanticide and witchcraft, but not to rape."¹

Whether they realize it or not, historians who dismiss the study of rape as unimportant are following in the footsteps of a well-known Victorian whose written comments on the topic have since been rejected. His name is Sir James Fitzjames Stephen. According to Backhouse, Stephen was terribly mistaken and ended up "...slight(ing) important aspects of women's legal history"² when he wrote in *A History of the Criminal Law of England*:³

"I pass over many sections punishing particular acts of violence to the person, and in particular the whole series of offences relating to the abduction of women, rape, and other such crimes. Their history possesses no special interest and does not illustrate either our political or our social history."⁴

Contrary to Stephen's claim, England's early rape laws are of special interest and do illustrate key aspects of that country's political and social history. Specifically, these laws and their application reveal a great deal about the roles

¹Nazife Bashar, "Rape in England Between 1550 and 1700," in *The Sexual Dynamics of History: Men's Power, Women's Resistance*, ed. London Feminist History Group (Great Britain: Photobooks, 1983), p.28.

²Constance B. Backhouse, "Nineteenth-Century Canadian Rape Law: 1800-92," in *Essays in the History of Canadian Law*, Vol. II, ed. David H. Flaherty (Toronto: Osgoode Society, 1983), p.200.

³James Fitzjames Stephen, *A History of the Criminal Law of England*, 3 vols. (London, 1883), 3: 117-118.

⁴*Supra* note 2 at 200.

assumed by the two sexes, attitudes towards sexuality, and the lawmakers' changing views as to the "raison d'être" of England's rape laws (i.e., whether their intended purpose was to protect women or particular forms of male property).⁵

It is important to keep in mind, however, that England's early rape laws and their application can only tell us so much. In Porter's words:

"Rape generally leaves its stain on the historical record only if it comes to trial, and the analogy of today's experience suggests that only a fraction (but how small a fraction?) ever reached court in the past; and even in those cases, the evidence that survives is far from the whole story."⁶

Thus, as far as date rape and the law are concerned, we have a jigsaw puzzle with an unknown (but large) number of pieces missing. Nevertheless, the remaining pieces and our current knowledge of sexual assault can provide us with valuable bits of information regarding date rapes of both the past and present.

This chapter, as its title implies, examines date rape and the law in historical perspective. The focus is primarily from 1500 onwards, although we will journey back as far as the Middle Ages. England and Canada are our destinations, France and the United States our brief stopovers.

Pre-1800

The word "rape" is derived from the Latin "rapere" which means to steal, seize, or carry away.⁷ Its history, though fascinating, is dull in comparison with

⁵*Supra* note 2 at 200.

⁶Roy Porter, "Rape- Does It Have a Historical Meaning?," in *Rape*, ed. Sylvana Tomaselli and Roy Porter (New York: Basil Blackwell, 1986), p.216.

⁷Carmen Germaine Warner, "Rape and Rape Laws in Historical Perspective," in *Rape and Sexual Assault*, ed. Carmen Germaine Warner (Maryland: Aspen Systems Corp., 1980). p.1.

the history of the act itself and the law which evolved in response to it.⁸

According to Clark and Lewis, the development of Canada's criminal offence of rape (now legally referred to as sexual assault) began in the Middle Ages as a specific response to the problem of heiress-stealing or bride capture.⁹ Under this system, marriages and the accumulation of wealth were often accomplished by men abducting and raping women of means.¹⁰ Marriages were accomplished because of the long-standing tradition that sexual intercourse determined possession and, ultimately, ownership through marriage. The wealth simply came about as an inevitable result of the marriage and the marriage laws of the time. Under these laws, "...any property which a woman owned, or to which she might become entitled upon marriage (such as a dowry), automatically became the property of her husband".¹¹ Given such a state of affairs, it is not at all surprising that fathers wanted to prevent marriages between their daughters and men of little or no wealth. Such fathers wanted their daughters to "marry well", to marry in such a way that their property holdings would remain secure and possibly increase.¹² As Clark and Lewis so candidly put it, such marriages were more like "...business mergers rather than the wedding of kindred spirits".¹³

⁸For the legal history of rape, see Ken D. Garley, "History of Rape/Evolution of Canada's Rape Law," in *The Law of Rape in Canada: A Critical Analysis of its Shortcomings with Suggestions for Reform* (B.A. Honours Thesis, Simon Fraser University, 1982), p.7-15.

⁹Lorenne Clark and Debra Lewis, *Rape: The Price of Coercive Sexuality*, (Toronto: Women's Educational Press, 1977), p.118.

¹⁰*Ibid.*

¹¹*Ibid.*

¹²*Ibid.*

¹³*Ibid.*

In order to prevent the unauthorized transfer of property (be it land, money, and/or females), rape laws began to be developed. In Brownmiller's words:

"Rape entered the law through the back door, as it were, as a property crime of man against man. Woman, of course, was viewed as the property."¹⁴

An analysis of the medieval rape statutes tends to support Brownmiller's view that the law was *most* concerned with protecting valuable male property as opposed to looking after the welfare of individual women. The *First Statute of Westminster*, enacted in 1275, is a case in point. Section 13 of that *Statute* defined rape and abduction interchangeably as involving the *theft* of a woman and placed the two crimes side by side: "...the King prohibiteth that none do ravish, nor take away by Force...".¹⁵ Section 6, of a statute enacted in 1382, lends additional support to the proposition that the law's primary concern was to prevent the unauthorized transfer of property:

"...wheresoever and whensoever such Ladies, Daughters, and other Women aforesaid be ravished, and after such Rape do consent to such Ravishers, that as well the Ravishers, as they that be ravished, and every of them, be from thenceforth disabled, and by the same Deed be unable to have or challenge all Inheritance, Dower, or Joint-Feossment after the Death of their Husbands and Ancestors...And that the Husbands of such Women, if they have Husbands, or if they have no Husbands in Life, that then the Fathers, or other next of their Blood, have from henceforth the Suit to pursue, and may sue against the same Offenders and Ravishers in this Behalf, and to have them thereof convict of Life (i.e., put to death), and of Member (i.e., castrated), although the same Women after such Rape do consent to the said Ravishers."¹⁶

Similarly, a statute of 1486, by its wording, would appear to be more concerned with the protection of property than with the protection of women:

¹⁴Susan Brownmiller, *Against Our Will: Men, Women and Rape*, (New York: Bantam Books, 1975), p.8.

¹⁵Owen Ruffhead, gen. ed., *The Statutes at Large, from Magna Charta to the End of the Last Parliament, 1761*, 8 vols. (London: Mark Basket, 1763), vol. 1 at 45.

¹⁶*Id.* at 360.

"...Where Women, as well Maidens, as Widows, and Wives, having Substances, some in Goods moveable, and some in Lands and Tenements, and some being Heirs apparent unto their Ancestors, for the Lucre of such Substances been oftentimes taken by Mis-doers, contrary to their Will, and after married to such Mis-doers, or to other by their Assent, or desoiled...it is therefore ordained...that what Person or Persons from henceforth that taketh any Woman so against her Will unlawfully...be Felony."¹⁷

As Backhouse quite correctly points out, the statutes just cited (i.e., those of 1275, 1382, and 1486) only applied to women who had property interests. In her words:

"These statutes were enacted to protect the property of the wealthy class. Abduction and defilement of women who had no property interests fell outside the scope of the legislation."¹⁸

Towards the end of the sixteenth century, however, the legal view of the purpose of rape laws began to change. The offence of rape became separated from that of abduction in the statutes of 1555 and 1597.¹⁹ In the process, rape came to be seen as a crime against the person (specifically females), not as a crime against property.²⁰ With this development in mind, then, let us examine date rape in England spanning the period 1500-1800.

According to Stone, the mating arrangements of the wealthy differed from those of the poor in early English society. Specifically, the marriages of the wealthy were often arranged by their parents, whereas this was not the case with the poor who could marry freely.²¹ Although speculative, this difference

¹⁷Owen Ruffhead, gen. ed., *The Statutes at Large, from Magna Charta to the End of the Last Parliament, 1761*, 8 vols. (London: Mark Basket, 1763), vol. 2 at 69.

¹⁸*Supra* note 2 at 204.

¹⁹*Supra* note 1 at 41.

²⁰*Supra* note 1 at 41.

²¹Lawrence Stone. *The Family, Sex and Marriage in England: 1500-1800*, (New York: Harper and Row, 1977). p.489. It is interesting to note that "Almost everyone (in England between 1500-1800) agreed...that both physical desire and romantic love were unsafe bases for an enduring marriage, since both were violent mental disturbances which would inevitably be of only short duration"

would appear to have influenced courtship patterns between the upper and lower classes. Members of the upper or propertied class may have not dated as often as members of the lower class. It is certainly the case that they were often denied the opportunity to date their future mates.²² As well, the wealthy's choice of potential dating and marriage partners was probably smaller owing to their station in life and their family's expectation that they would marry for further money, land, status, and power.²³ All of this is not meant to imply that date rape was unknown among England's wealthy or that only the poor committed date rape. Rather, certain members of both classes sexually victimized females with whom they were involved. The preceding does, however, suggest that the circumstances under which date rape occurred were different for the "haves" than for the "have-nots" of early English society.

Although Stone does not deal with the issue of sexual assault in dating relationships *per se*, he does seem to suggest that the possibility of it occurring between intended marriage partners of wealth was slim:

"...before the eighteenth century most marriages among the propertied classes were arranged by the parents in the interest of family financial or political advantage. The bride and groom were not expected, and indeed were given *no opportunity*, to develop any prior attachment or affection."²⁴

Presumably, the intended marriage partners were not introduced until shortly before the wedding or else were chaperoned everywhere they went. The situation among the property-poor classes was probably somewhat different. Fewer arranged marriages among the members of this class would present more and greater opportunities to develop attachment and affection *and/or to sexually*

²¹(cont'd) (p.272).

²²*Supra* note 21 at 502.

²³*Supra* note 21 at 186, 193, 489, and 502.

²⁴*Supra* note 21 at 502.

victimize the intended spouse. Since even less has been written on the non-propertied classes of the time, this is mere conjecture. When the females were not intended marriage partners, however, it is highly questionable that males from the propertied class had a monopoly on sexual etiquette. More than likely, certain males from both classes sexually assaulted women they had just met or had known for some time.

In dating situations, widows were perhaps at greater risk of their dates sexually assaulting them than other women. The common misconception of England's males in the seventeenth century that widows were sexually frustrated, coupled with widows' lack of chaperones, apparently contributed to this state of affairs. As Stone explains:

"Widows were perhaps a special case, being generally regarded as allowing, indeed *demanding, direct physical attack*, partly because they were not chaperoned, and partly because they were more likely to be suffering from sexual frustration."²⁵

Stone continues:

"...it was generally assumed that young widows, suddenly deprived of regular sexual satisfaction by the loss of a husband, were likely to be driven by lust in their search for a replacement. A proverb that goes back at least to the Elizabethan period, and probably much further, has it that 'He that woeth a widow must go stiff before'. Suitors of widows were expected to make aggressive sexual advances, unlike suitors of virgins, who in upper-class circles were virtually untouchable before marriage."²⁶

Whether a greater proportion of widows were actually sexually assaulted by their dates than, for example, women who had dated but not married, is unknown. Regardless, it is clear that several hundred years ago, just as today, myths about women and rape existed. One can only speculate at the extent to which women's lives have been horribly altered by men's acted-on belief of this and similar rape myths throughout the course of history.

²⁵ *Supra* note 21 at 551.

²⁶ *Supra* note 21 at 281.

Finally, it should be pointed out that women living in England prior to the nineteenth century, be they widows or non-widows, also had to contend with their dates and other men taking advantage of their lack of undergarments:

"...before the introduction of the brassiere and underpants in the nineteenth century, women's erogenous zones were wide open to the roving hand of any man. Women before the nineteenth century must have been accustomed to being intimately fondled as they went about their business, and being indecently exposed if they fell down."²⁷

That women were intimately fondled against their wishes is something even the perpetrators of such acts have admitted. In a diary devoted largely to describing his sexual experiences, Samuel Pepys (who was 23 years old in 1655) tells how a woman he was standing next to in church "...threatened to stick pins in him if he persisted in molesting her..."²⁸ Although Stone suggests that she may have issued this threat "...more (as a) result of the unsuitability of the occasion and place than her general hostility to being touched",²⁹ it seems much more plausible that she issued the threat because she objected to Pepys fondling her without her consent and wanted him to cease. Given that Pepys was writing about this incident and not the woman he molested, it certainly seems plausible that he would interpret her threat in such a manner as to cast himself in the most favourable light.

Given that the phenomenon of date rape existed in England from at least 1500 A.D., one is prompted to ask a plethora of questions: What sort of legal action did date rape victims take? Did they bring rape charges to court? If not, what sort of action did they take? As far as legal action was concerned, date rape victims prior to 1800 rarely brought rape charges to court. There were essentially two reasons for this state of affairs. First, few violent encounters of

²⁷ *Supra* note 21 at 560.

²⁸ *Supra* note 21 at 559.

²⁹ *Supra* note 21 at 559.

any kind except those that caused serious injury or death gave rise to a court case in eighteenth century English society; violence tended to be ignored, revenged privately, or settled without judicial intervention.³⁰ And secondly, in the case of all types of rapes, the fear of publicity and embarrassment discouraged rape victims from launching court actions. In the words of Beattie:

"In rape trials it was especially the case that the credit of the witnesses and particularly of the woman who brought the charge was very often the leading issue in the trial. Even without the kind of organized defense that counsel might provide (and few defendants yet had counsel), the court looked for evidence of the victim's character and past life, and any doubts raised by this were often sufficient to overthrow the charge...It is thus hardly surprising that only a few women brought rape charges to court."³¹

Those women who did launch court actions often charged their attackers with attempted rape rather than with rape itself. They preferred this charge for essentially four reasons: the difficulty of proof was less, the expense to the victim was less, the court most of them would have to attend was closer, and they could avoid the unpleasantness of a rape trial.³² It was therefore not unexpected that the charge of attempted rape became as preferred as it did by the eighteenth century. In Surrey, for example, twice as many women charged men with attempted rape as with rape itself (86 versus 42) in the period spanning 1660 to 1802.³³

To sum up the situation in pre-1800 English society: it would appear that sexual assault in dating and non-dating relationships was a fact of life for the women of England from at least 1500 A.D., if not before that time. For the most part, these women did not bring rape charges to court; they tended to

³⁰J. M. Beattie, *Crime and the Courts in England: 1660-1800*. (New Jersey: Princeton University Press, 1986), p. 124.

³¹*Id.* at 126.

³²*Id.* at 129-130.

³³*Id.* at 130-131.

either take no action against their attackers or used non-judicial means for exacting justice. Those few victims who did go to court tended to charge their attackers with attempted rape rather than with rape itself.

1800-1982

In 1800, the legislature of Upper Canada passed *An Act for the Further Introduction of English Criminal Law into Upper Canada*.³⁴ In passing the Act, the province formally adopted the criminal law of England as it stood on September 17th, 1792.³⁵ England's rape law, in essence, became Canada's rape law. A look at the number of rape cases reported in the law reports reveals little about how the judiciary interpreted the law prior to 1869; only four rape cases appear to have been reported.³⁶ As Backhouse points out, however, the surviving Minute Books of the courts of Criminal Assize (Court of Oyer and Terminer) and those kept by Ontario's County Court judges for the period 1840 to 1892 document approximately 330 cases of forcible rape, statutory rape, assault with intent to commit rape, and indecent assault.³⁷ Unfortunately, the four reported cases and cases documented in the Minute Books "...have so few details concerning the relationship of the rapist to the victim...",³⁸ that it is difficult to come to any sort of conclusion insofar as the phenomenon of date rape and the judiciary's handling of it is concerned. It is known, however, that the

³⁴*An Act for the Further Introduction of English Criminal Law into Upper Canada*, 40 Geo. III (1800), c.1, s.1.

³⁵Constance B. Backhouse, "Nineteenth-Century Canadian Rape Law: 1800-92," in *Essays in the History of Canadian Law*, Vol. II, ed. David H. Flaherty (Toronto: Osgoode Society, 1983), p.201.

³⁶*Supra* note 35 at 212.

³⁷*Supra* note 35 at 212.

³⁸*Supra* note 35 at 243 (footnote 84).

phenomenon is *not* a recent development of the twentieth century.

In the Fall of 1822, Suzanne Monnier Voilquin (1801-1877) was raped and then later abandoned by a "courting" medical student. The student's name was Stanislas. He attacked her after five months of courtship. In her own words, Voilquin describes how the man she trusted raped her:

"Au moment de nous quitter, après nous avoir bien embrassés, mon père recommanda vivement ses deux filles à ces messieurs; mon frère ainsi que Stanislas le rassurèrent par leurs protestations chaleureuses. Eh bien! cet homme, qui avait, le matin, pressé la main d'un père trop confiant, choisit ce jour-là même pour renouveler ses attaques. Vers la brune, étant tous deux seuls dans ma chambre, il devint violent, emporté; il se livra envers moi à un assaut tellement brutal que l'épouvante me saisit."³⁹

Voilquin never did report her sexual victimization to the police, but this is hardly surprising. Then, as now, there were many compelling reasons for *not*

³⁹Suzanne Monnier Voilquin, *Souvenirs d'une Fille du Peuple, ou la Saint-Simonienne en Egypte; 1834 à 1836*, (Paris, 1866), p.43.

Translated by the present author into English, this excerpt from Voilquin's autobiography reads as follows:

"At the moment we (Voilquin, her boyfriend Stanislas, her brother, and her sister) parted (from Voilquin's father), our father urged these two men (Stanislas and Voilquin's brother) to watch over his two daughters; my brother along with Stanislas reassured our father that they would warmly protest (the word "protest" is being used in the opposite sense to mean "comply"). Oh really! This man (Stanislas), who confidently shook the hand of my father that morning, chose that same day for renewing his attack. Towards dusk, when the two of us were alone in my room, he became violent, hot-headed; he indulged himself with a brutal attack on me so that terror took hold..."

It should be noted that the present author had Rob Pretto, a graduate student in S.F.U.'s School of Criminology who is fluent in French, assess the translation. He made a number of suggested changes which were incorporated, but otherwise pronounced the translation to be accurate.

For a partial translation of Voilquin's autobiography into English, see Erna Olafson Hellerstein, Leslie Parker Hume, and Karen M. Offen (eds.), *Victorian Women: A Documentary Account of Women's Lives in Nineteenth-Century England, France, and the United States*, (California: Stanford University Press, 1981), pp.121, 169-172, and 428.

reporting a rape.⁴⁰ Though by no means all-inclusive, these reasons have included (1) the fear of not being believed, (2) not perceiving that one's sexual victimization is a crime, (3) the desire to avoid shame and embarrassment, (4) the fear of publicity, (5) the fear of courtroom proceedings, (6) the desire to forget about the rape and get on with one's life, (7) the fear of retaliation, (8) the desire to protect an offender known to her, and (9) the belief that the criminal justice system would be ineffective- i.e., let the rapist "off the hook".

But let us assume, for the sake of argument, that Voilquin did report her date rape to the police. Let us further assume that she is in a different time and place. It is seventy years later- the year is 1892. The country is Canada rather than France. Would the law in 1892 permit Stanislas (Voilquin's alleged rapist) to be charged with the offence of rape? If yes, how likely would a judge and jury be to convict him of the charge of rape? Because there are so few details in the case law insofar as the relationships between rapists and their victims are concerned, the answers to these questions must remain within the realm of *plausible speculation*.

It would appear possible for Stanislas to be charged under section 266 of the 1892 *Canadian Criminal Code* with the rape of Voilquin. According to that section:

"Rape is the act of a man having carnal knowledge of a woman who is not his wife without her consent, or with consent which has been extorted by threats or fear of bodily harm, or obtained by personating the woman's husband, or by false and fraudulent representations as to the nature and quality of the act."⁴¹

Stanislas could possibly be charged under section 266 with forcible rape because

⁴⁰Ken D. Garley, "The Law of Rape in Canada: A Critical Analysis of Its Shortcomings with Suggestions for Reform" (B.A. Honours Thesis, Simon Fraser University, 1982), p.75.

⁴¹*Canadian Criminal Code*. 1892. s. 266.

he apparently met the legal requirements- he was a male who had carnal knowledge (sexual intercourse) with a woman who was not his wife without her true consent. But *possibly* being charged and *probably* being charged are two different matters altogether. Would Stanislas *likely* be charged under section 266 with forcible rape? Unless there was an abundance of corroborating evidence, probably not.⁴² As Estrich explains:

"It is always easier to find the man when the woman knows who he is. But those are the men who are least likely to be arrested, prosecuted, and convicted. Those are the cases *least likely* to be considered real rapes."⁴³

Clearly, then, it would have been difficult in 1892 for Voilquin to even succeed in convincing the police to arrest Stanislas.

Assuming that Stanislas was charged with forcibly raping Voilquin, the available evidence suggests that he would likely not have been convicted. As the surviving Minute Books of the courts of Criminal Assize and those kept by Ontario's County Court judges for the period 1840 to 1892 show, judges and juries were extremely reluctant to convict in charges of rape. During this period,

⁴²Corroborating evidence is *independent* evidence which tends to show that the evidence of the witness (in this case the rape victim) is true. The legal support for this definition of corroboration is *R. v. Baskerville*, [1916] 2 K.B. 658, 12 Cr. App. R. 81 (C.C.A.). In 1892, under the common law, corroboration was *discretionary* in respect of the offence of forcible rape; the judge essentially decided if corroboration was necessary in order to obtain a conviction. For confirmation that such was the case, see *R. v. Camp* (1977), 36 C.C.C. (2d) 511, 39 C.R.N.S. 164, 17 O.R. (2d) 99 (C.A.); *D.P.P. v. Hester*, [1973] A.C. 296 (H.L.); *D.P.P. v. Kilbourne*, [1973] A.C. 729 (H.L.); c.f. *Thomas v. The Queen*, [1952] 2 S.C.R. 344, 103 C.C.C. 193, 15 C.R. 1 (S.C.C.).

⁴³Susan Estrich, *Real Rape*, (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1987), p.4. Estrich's comments about rapes not being considered "real rapes" when the victim and offender knew one another is illustrated by Clark and Lewis' Vancouver study, which examined the factors police used in classifying rapes as founded or unfounded. In the Vancouver study, it was found that the victim-offender relationship was the most important variable in police classification. Specifically, Clark and Lewis found that "...the greater the degree to which victim and offender are known to each other, the greater the probability of an unfounded classification". See Marilyn G. Stanley, *Sexual Assault Legislation in Canada: An Evaluation (The Experience of the Rape Victim With the Criminal Justice System Prior to Bill C-127, Report No. 1* (Ottawa: Department of Justice, [1987]), p. 32.

228 prosecutions for rape were commenced. Only 49 or 21.5% resulted in rape convictions.⁴⁴ Regarding the remaining prosecutions, 14.5% resulted in convictions on lesser offences, 46.0% resulted in acquittals, and for 18.0% there was no record of the disposition.⁴⁵ Part of the reason for this reluctance to convict was due to the resistance standard. As the cases of *R. v. Fick*,⁴⁶ *The Queen v. Robert Johnson*,⁴⁷ *The Queen v. Antoine Legacy*,⁴⁸ *The Queen v. Henry Waggstaff*,⁴⁹ *R. v. Cardo*,⁵⁰ and *R. v. Francis*⁵¹ clearly show, evidence that the woman resisted her attacker was legally required to support a conviction for rape. Unless Voilquin could prove that she had resisted to the utmost, Stanislas would be acquitted of the rape charge. Even if Voilquin could prove that she had resisted, the fact that her rape had been a date rape or "simple rape" as opposed to a stranger rape or "aggravated rape" would appear to substantially lessen the probability of a rape conviction *if that which is true of present day judge and jury behaviour holds true for 19th century judge and jury behaviour*. In the present century, judges and especially juries appear to use stranger rapes in which there has been extrinsic violence as the standard by which to judge all rapes. The further removed a rape is from this standard (as when the woman knows her attacker and was not beaten by him), the more likely judges and juries are to acquit. With respect to this latter group, Kalven and Zeisel's study

⁴⁴*Supra* note 2 at 222.

⁴⁵*Supra* note 2 at 222.

⁴⁶*R. v. Fick* (1866), 16 UCQB 379.

⁴⁷*The Queen v. Robert Johnson* AO RG22 York County Minute Books, 12 October 1866.

⁴⁸*The Queen v. Antoine Legacy* AO RG22 Renfrew County Minute Books, 4 October 1883.

⁴⁹*The Queen v. Henry Waggstaff* AO RG22 York County Minute Books, 4 October 1887.

⁵⁰*R. v. Cardo* (1888), 17 OR 11, 12-14.

⁵¹*R. v. Francis* (1855), 13 UCQB 116-117.

of American juries supports this conclusion:

"Kalven and Zeisel defined an aggravated rape as one with extrinsic violence (guns, knives, or beatings) or multiple assailants or no prior relationship between the victim and the defendant. A simple rape was a case in which none of these aggravating circumstances was present: a case of a single defendant who knew his victim and neither beat her nor threatened her with a weapon. They found that juries were four times as willing to convict in the aggravated rape as in the simple one. And when there was 'contributory behaviour' on the part of the woman- where she was hitchhiking, or *dating the man*, or met him at a party- juries were willing to go to extremes in their leniency toward the defendant, even in cases where judges considered the evidence sufficient to support a conviction for rape."⁵²

With respect to the judiciary in 1892, they were concerned that women might make false accusations of rape.⁵³ Apparently agreeing with Hale's view that "... (rape) is an accusation easily to be made and hard to be proved, and harder to be defended by the party accused, though never so innocent",⁵⁴ they were "...reluct(ant)...to apply the rape laws except in the clearest of circumstances".⁵⁵ Women of doubtful reputation or unconventional morals,⁵⁶ women who were thought to have the greatest reason to fabricate false rape charges,⁵⁷ and women who were thought to have contributed in some way to their sexual

⁵²Supra note 43 at 4-5.

⁵³Supra note 35 at 220.

⁵⁴Sir Matthew Hale, *Historia Placitorum Coronae: The History of the Pleas of the Crown*, 2 vols. (London 1736, reprinted London 1971), I: 635-636.

⁵⁵Supra note 35 at 220.

⁵⁶Throughout the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, the courts were reluctant to apply the rape laws to women of doubtful reputation or unconventional morals. Such women included those who had multiple sexual partners (*Laliberte v. The Queen*, [1877] 1 S.C.R. 117); those living in common law relationships who kept late hours (AO RG22 York County Minute Books, 6 Jan. 1859, *The Queen v. Robert Gregg et al.*); and those who had been drinking at the time of their alleged sexual victimization (AO RG22 York County Minute Books, 19 Oct. 1865, *The Queen v. Edwin Cudmore*; AO RG22 York County Minute Books, 18 April 1866, *The Queen v. John English*).

⁵⁷Generally speaking, the courts of the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries were reluctant to apply the rape laws in situations where the women were thought to have acted out of malice or to protect themselves when discovered in an act of consensual intercourse. See *R. v. Francis* (1855), 13 UCQB 116-17; AO RG22 York County Minute Books, 11 Oct. 1882, *The Queen v. William Stead*; *Globe*, 12 Oct. 1882.

victimization⁵⁸ were regularly denied the protection of the rape laws of 1892. In Voilquin's case, both judge and jury would have likely considered her rape accusation to be false. After all, she and Stanislas had been dating for five months. At the time of her alleged sexual victimization, they had been alone in her bedroom. He hadn't threatened her with any sort of weapon or physically beaten her. There was an absence of corroborating evidence. Obviously, so the reasoning would proceed, Voilquin is not a credible witness, therefore Stanislas must be acquitted of the charge of forcible rape.

Over the course of the next 91 years, up until January 1983, it would appear that the rules of evidence which developed placed date rape victims in a different category from stranger rape victims- they were legally seen as being less trustworthy and less deserving of legal protection.⁵⁹ Although speaking with reference to the American criminal justice system, Estrich's comments might just as well have been made about the Canadian criminal justice system:

"...one finds...a far more sophisticated discrimination in the distrust of women victims: all women and all rapes are not treated equally. As the doctrines of rape law were developed in the older cases, distinctions were drawn, explicitly and implicitly, between the aggravated, jump-from-the-bushes, stranger rapes and the simple cases of unarmed rape by friends, neighbours, and acquaintances. It was primarily in the latter cases that distrust of women victims was actually incorpo-

⁵⁸Women who had dated their attackers, particularly if they had been *drinking* at the time of their alleged sexual victimization, were regularly denied the protection of the rape laws. According to Backhouse, "By and large the victims in rape charges that came to trial (in the period 1800-92) were either young, unmarried women still living with their fathers, or married women...(the) protection of the rape law...was meant for the virtuous woman, living her life in modesty and above reproach." For the source of this quotation, see Constance B. Backhouse, "Nineteenth-Century Canadian Rape Law: 1800-92," in *Essays in the History of Canadian Law*, Vol. II, ed. David H. Flaherty (Toronto: Osgoode Society, 1983) at 224-225.

⁵⁹The rules of evidence being referred to are those respecting corroboration, recent complaint, the sexual activity of the complainant, and sexual reputation of the complainant. On January 4th 1983, these evidentiary rules were statutorily altered by Bill C-127 insofar as they applied to the newly-created three-tiered offence of sexual assault which replaced the old offence of rape.

rated into the definition of the crime and the rules of proof."⁶⁰

With the sole exception of the phrase "...distrust of women victims was actually incorporated into the definition of the crime...",⁶¹ Estrich's comments are applicable to Canada; they accurately explain how Canada's rules of evidence have operated to make certain women and certain types of rape less equal under the law than others. The corroboration requirement, for example, served to reinforce the myth that women in sexual assault cases were inherently untrustworthy, and that their testimony should be treated differently from that of victims of other crimes.⁶² Victims who knew their sexual attackers were especially suspect of having fabricated false charges of rape.⁶³ The doctrine of recent complaint also served to call into question the truthfulness of women alleging rape. Unless it could be shown that the victim had made a rape complaint at the first reasonable opportunity after being raped, the judge was required to instruct the jury that they could draw an "adverse inference" as to her truthfulness (i.e., they could consider her to be lying).⁶⁴ And yet, it is not at all unusual in rape cases, particularly date rape cases, for the victims to delay reporting the crime for reasons of embarrassment, the fear of not being believed, and so on. Finally, the laws of evidence linked chastity with credibility and non-consent.⁶⁵ Chaste

⁶⁰*Supra* note 43 at 29. It is interesting to note that in five U.S. states—Delaware, Hawaii, Maine, North Dakota, and West Virginia—there exists a *date rape exemption*. If a woman has voluntarily accompanied (i.e., dated) a man or had sexual intercourse with him in the previous year, he *cannot* be charged with first-degree rape. For further information, see Carol L. Mithers, "Date Rape: When 'Nice Guys' Won't Take 'No' for an Answer," *Mademoiselle* 86 (Nov. 1980): 210-211, 269.

⁶¹*Supra* note 43 at 29.

⁶²Marilyn G. Stanley, *Sexual Assault Legislation in Canada: An Evaluation (The Experience of the Rape Victim With the Criminal Justice System Prior to Bill C-127, Report No. 1* (Ottawa: Department of Justice, [1987]), p. 65-69.

⁶³*Id.* at 66.

⁶⁴*Id.* at 43.

⁶⁵*Id.* at 78-79.

women were perceived to be more credible or believable in their allegations of rape than promiscuous women or women of unconventional morals.⁶⁶ It was further presumed that a woman who had consented to sexual intercourse with the accused in the past had probably also consented to the present intercourse, of which she now complained.⁶⁷ Given this evidentiary state of affairs, one can better understand why the police in Clark and Lewis' Vancouver and Toronto studies tended to classify stranger rapes as "founded" and non-stranger rapes as "unfounded"- prosecutability.⁶⁸ Indeed, as the two researchers confirmed, the police tended to designate rape cases as "unfounded" if they did not feel they could be successfully prosecuted.⁶⁹ To its credit, Parliament apparently recognized that Canada's rape law and laws of evidence were in serious need of reform and, in 1982, passed Bill C-127.⁷⁰ This Bill became law on January 4th 1983.⁷¹

1983-Date

When Bill C-127 became law at the beginning of 1983, the *Criminal Code* offence of forcible rape was abolished.⁷² It was replaced by the three-tiered

⁶⁶*Supra* notes 56-58.

⁶⁷Marilyn G. Stanley, *Sexual Assault Legislation in Canada: An Evaluation (The Experience of the Rape Victim With the Criminal Justice System Prior to Bill C-127, Report No. 1)* (Ottawa: Department of Justice, [1987]), p. 78.

⁶⁸*Id.* at 32.

⁶⁹*Id.* at 32.

⁷⁰David Watt, *The New Offences Against the Person: The Provisions of Bill C-127*, (Toronto: Butterworths, 1984), p.4.

⁷¹*Ibid.*

⁷²According to section 143 of the 1982 *Canadian Criminal Code*:

A male person commits rape when he has sexual intercourse with a female person who is not his wife,
(a) without her consent, or

offence of sexual assault, which was meant to emphasize the assaultive, as opposed to the sexual nature, of the crime. Reproduced in their entirety, incorporating the *Revised Statutes of Canada (R.S.C.)* 1985 and subsequent amendments to December 12th 1988, the three tiers or provisions are as follows:

271. (1) Every one who commits a sexual assault is guilty of
- (a) an indictable offence and is liable to imprisonment for a term not exceeding ten years; or
 - (b) an offence punishable on summary conviction.

272. Every one who, in committing a sexual assault,
- (a) carries, uses or threatens to use a weapon or an imitation thereof,
 - (b) threatens to cause bodily harm to a person other than the complainant,
 - (c) causes bodily harm to the complainant, or
 - (d) is a party to the offence with any other person,
- is guilty of an indictable offence and liable to imprisonment for a term not exceeding fourteen years.

273. (1) Every one commits an aggravated sexual assault who, in committing a sexual assault, wounds, maims, disfigures or endangers the life of the complainant.

(2) Every one who commits an aggravated sexual assault is guilty of an indictable offence and liable to imprisonment for life.

It should be noted that the three-tiered offence of sexual assault does *not* discriminate on the basis of gender or marital status as the former offence of rape did. Under the sexual assault provisions, both males and females can be charged with the offence, both males and females can be victims, and husbands can be charged with the sexual assault of their wives (just as wives can be charged

⁷²(cont'd)

- (b) with her consent if the consent
 - (i) is extorted by threats or fear of bodily harm,
 - (ii) is obtained by personating her husband, or
 - (iii) is obtained by false and fraudulent representations as to the nature and quality of the act.

Interestingly, the substance of the 1982 statutory definition of forcible rape is essentially the same as that contained in the original 1892 *Canadian Criminal Code*. Only the specific wording and the format have changed.

with the sexual assault of their husbands). Furthermore, it is not legally necessary that there be sexual intercourse of the penile-vaginal kind to sustain a conviction for sexual assault. Although sexual assault has not been statutorily defined, the courts have held that more than anatomical considerations are important in deciding that a sexual assault has occurred, thus recognizing that other types of forced intercourse (i.e., oral and anal) and other behaviours (such as grabbing a woman's breast or a man's thigh) can constitute sexual assault. With specific reference to sexual assaults involving individuals in dating relationships, it is therefore legally possible for either partner to charge the other with sexual assault if he (or she) forced his (or her) partner to engage in non-consensual sexual behaviour. Whether the charge will be under s. 271, s. 272, or s. 273 depends on whether a weapon was involved, whether threats to cause harm to a third party were made, whether bodily harm was caused, whether more than one offender was involved (i.e., a "gang rape" or "gang sexual assault"), and whether the victim's life was endangered. Generally speaking, the more serious the offence, the more likely the charge is to be brought under s. 272 or s. 273.

As far as possible defences to a sexual assault charge brought by a woman against her boyfriend or date, the defence of honest but mistaken belief *as to consent* (HMB) would appear to have caused the greatest amount of concern, if not outright anger, in various women's organizations across Canada. The defence of HMB is thus: An individual's honest but mistaken belief that another individual is consenting to sexual intercourse (or any other sexual behaviour for that matter), *even if that belief is unreasonable*, is a valid defence to a charge of sexual assault. As section 265(4) of the *Criminal Code* states:

"Where an accused alleges that he believed that the complainant consented to the conduct that is the subject-matter of the (sexual assault)

charge, a judge, if satisfied that there is sufficient evidence and that, if believed by the jury, the evidence would constitute a defence, shall instruct the jury, when reviewing all the evidence relating to the determination of the honesty of the accused's belief, to consider the presence or absence of reasonable grounds for that belief."

A number of points about the defence of HMB should be noted. First, it is clear that the defence may be based on reasonable or unreasonable grounds. In essence, the Supreme Court of Canada is explicitly endorsing the subjective approach to guilt, that is, concerning itself with the mind of the accused, as opposed to what a reasonable person would have done (the objective approach).⁷³ Secondly, the defence of HMB may only be put to the jury if two conditions are satisfied- (1) the accused must allege that he honestly but mistakenly believed that the woman consented to the sexual behaviour in question, and (2) there must be evidence which lends an "air of reality" to the accused's submission.⁷⁴ A mere assertion would not meet this "air of reality" test.⁷⁵ In determining whether the test is satisfied, the judge is to consider all of the evidence as a whole rather than simply isolated pieces of evidence.⁷⁶ Thirdly, the defence of HMB is not available to those individuals who deliberately and willfully blind themselves to reality.⁷⁷ And finally, because sexual assault is a crime of general intent, an HMB brought on or caused by self-induced intoxication is

⁷³See, for example, *Pappajohn v. the Queen*, [1980] 2 S.C.R. 120, 52 C.C.C. (2d) 481, 14 C.R. (3d) 243 (S.C.C.). Also, see *R. v. E.H.B.* (1987), 58 C.R. (3d) 48 (S.C.C.); and *Laybourn, Bulmer and Illingworth v. The Queen*, [1987] 1 S.C.R. 782, 33 C.C.C. (3d) 385, 58 C.R. (3d) 48 (S.C.C.).

⁷⁴See *R. v. Robertson*, [1987] 1 S.C.R. 918 (S.C.C.); *R. v. J.D.R.* (1987), 58 C.R. (3d) 28 (S.C.C.); *R. v. E.H.B.* (1987), 58 C.R. (3d) 48 (S.C.C.), and *Laybourn, Bulmer and Illingworth v. the Queen*, [1987] 1 S.C.R. 782, 33 C.C.C. (3d) 385, 58 C.R. (3d) 48 (S.C.C.).

⁷⁵See *Laybourn, Bulmer and Illingworth v. The Queen*, [1987] 1 S.C.R. 782, 33 C.C.C. (3d) 385, 58 C.R. (3d) 48 (S.C.C.).

⁷⁶See *R. v. Guthrie* (1985), 8 O.A.C. 277 (Ont. C.A.).

⁷⁷See *Sansrégret v. The Queen*, [1985] 3 W.W.R. 701, [1985] 1 S.C.R. 570 (S.C.C.); and *R. v. Moreau* (1986), 51 C.R. (3d) 209, 26 C.C.C. (3d) 359 (Ont. C.A.).

not a defence to sexual assault.⁷⁸ Thus, a man who drinks until he becomes inebriated and then forces his dating partner to have sexual intercourse will find himself in legal quicksand sinking fast should he try to argue that he mistakenly believed she was consenting because he had "had too much to drink".

Bill C-127 also wrought significant changes as far as the evidentiary rules of sexual assault were concerned. As Watt points out, essentially five evidentiary rules were affected:⁷⁹

- (1) corroboration (s. 274);
- (2) recent complaint (s. 275);
- (3) other sexual activity of the complainant (s. 276);
- (4) evidence of sexual reputation (s. 277);
- (5) spousal competence and compellability (ss. 4(2) and 4(4) of the *Canada Evidence Act*).

Only the first four rules need concern us.

Once Bill C-127 came into legal force, corroboration was not required in order to obtain a conviction for sexual assault. Furthermore, judges' discretionary powers were statutorily curtailed insofar as their instructions to juries in sexual assault trials were concerned. According to s. 274 of the *Code*:

"Where an accused is charged with an offence under section...271 (sexual assault), 272 (sexual assault with a weapon, threats to a third party, causing bodily harm, or being a party to the offence) or 273 (aggravated sexual assault), no corroboration is required for a conviction and the judge shall not instruct the jury that it is unsafe to find the accused guilty in the absence of corroboration."

Although corroboration is not required for conviction, this is not to say that s. 274 precludes corroborative evidence from being introduced. The cases of *R. v. Barrett*,⁸⁰ and *R. v. Mohr*,⁸¹ support the proposition that corroborative evidence, although not required for a sexual assault conviction, is admissible evidence in

⁷⁸ See *R. v. R.D.M.* (1986), 31 C.C.C. (3d) 323 (N.S.C.A.).

⁷⁹ *Supra* note 70 at Chapter 5.

⁸⁰ *R. v. Barrett* (1984), 13 W.C.B. 96 (Ont. Prov. Ct.).

⁸¹ *R. v. Mohr*, [1984] B.C.D. Crim. Conv. 1608-02 (B.C.S.C.).

a court of law. As far as the judge's instruction or charge to the jury is concerned, it should be noted that s. 274 sets out what a judge may *not* tell a jury; the section is silent, however, about what a judge may tell a jury.⁸² As at least one legal commentator has suggested, such statutory silence may allow judges to comment on the "frailties" of a victim's evidence in such a way that the jury deems corroboration to be both desirable and necessary.⁸³ Given the paucity of cases interpreting s. 274, especially for adult victims, it is too early to tell if this fear will be borne out.

With respect to recent complaint, Bill C-127 abolished this common law doctrine. As s. 275 of the *Code* succinctly states:

"The rules relating to evidence of recent complaint are hereby abrogated with respect to offences under sections...271, 272, and 273."

It should be noted, however, that the prosecution can introduce evidence of a recent complaint to rebut a defence allegation that the woman fabricated a rape story.⁸⁴ As well, although detailed evidence of a recent complaint is generally inadmissible, the fact of the complaint may be admissible if it forms a necessary part of the case's background (i.e., in order to explain an accused admitting to sexual assault).⁸⁵

As far as the third evidentiary rule is concerned, that of the sexual activity of the complainant, the circumstances under which an alleged victim could

⁸²David Watt, *The New Offences Against the Person: The Provisions of Bill C-127*, (Toronto: Butterworths, 1984), p.176.

⁸³Gisela Ruebsaat, *Sexual Assault Legislation in Canada: An Evaluation (The New Sexual Assault Offences: Emerging Legal Issues, Report No. 2)*, (Ottawa: Department of Justice, 1987), p.47.

⁸⁴*R. v. Colp* (1984), 36 C.R. (3d) 8 (N.S. Cty. Ct.); *R. v. Page* (1984), 40 C.R. (3d) 86 (Ont. H.C.).

⁸⁵*R. v. George* (1985), 23 C.C.C. (3d) 42 (B.C.C.A.).

be questioned about her past sexual activity was legislatively curtailed.⁸⁶ Section 276(1) states:

"In proceedings in respect of an offence under section...271, 272, or 273 (the three sexual assault provisions), no evidence shall be adduced (cited as proof) by or on behalf of the accused concerning the sexual activity of the complainant with any person other than the accused unless

- (a) it is evidence that rebuts evidence of the complainant's sexual activity or absence thereof that was previously adduced by the prosecution;
- (b) it is evidence of specific instances of the complainant's sexual activity tending to establish the identity of the person who had sexual contact with the complainant on the occasion set out in the charge; or
- (c) it is evidence of sexual activity that took place on the same occasion as the sexual activity that forms the subject-matter of the charge, where that evidence relates to the consent that the accused alleges he believed was given by the complainant."

No evidence is admissible under paragraph (1)(c) unless reasonable advance notice in writing has been given (s. 276(2)), an in-camera hearing has been held (s. 276(3)), and the judge is satisfied that the legal requirements of s. 276 have been met (s. 276(3)). It should be noted too that the complainant or alleged victim is *not* legally compelled to attend this hearing by virtue of s. 276(3).

Since section 276 came into force, there has been some speculation that it may violate sections 7 and 11(d) of the *Canadian Charter of Rights and Freedoms*. Section 7 states that "Everyone has the right to life, liberty and security of the person and the right not to be deprived thereof except in accordance with the principles of fundamental justice". Section 11(d) states that "Any

⁸⁶Despite the Law Reform Commission of Canada recommending in 1971 that *all* evidence relating to the character of the victim of a sexual offence be held inadmissible, only some of that evidence has been held inadmissible. For a discussion of how evidence of a rape victim's prior sexual history may affect the jury's perception of the accused's guilt, see Katherine Catton, "Evidence Regarding the Prior Sexual History of an Alleged Rape Victim- Its Effect on the Perceived Guilt of the Accused." *University of Toronto Faculty of Law Review* 33 (1975): 165-180.

person charged with an offence has the right to be presumed innocent until proven guilty according to law in a fair and public hearing by an independent and impartial tribunal". The argument put forth is that s. 276 violates sections 7 and 11(d) of the *Charter* because it denies the accused his right of "full answer and defence" to the sexual assault charge. The B.C. Supreme Court accepted this argument in the case of *R. v. LeGallant*⁸⁷ as did the North West Territories Supreme Court in *R. v. Oquataq*,⁸⁸ the Newfoundland Trial Division Court in *R. v. Coombs*,⁸⁹ and the New Brunswick Queen's Bench Court in *R. v. Brun*.⁹⁰ The B.C. Court of Appeal rejected the argument that s. 276 violated sections 7 or 11(d) of the *Charter*, and reversed the decision of the B.C. Supreme Court in *R. v. LeGallant*.⁹¹ Other courts rejecting the argument include the Manitoba Court of Appeal in *R. v. Bird*,⁹² the Ontario District Court in *R. v. Wiseman*,⁹³ and the Nova Scotia Youth Court in *R. v. J.W.B.*⁹⁴ Perhaps the most interesting case to date, however, is that of *Re Seaboyer and The Queen*.⁹⁵ Noteworthy for its attempt to balance the rights of sexual assault victims not to have their cases prejudiced by evidence of little probative value and the rights of accused individuals to make "full answer and defence", the Ontario Court of Appeal in *Seaboyer*⁹⁶ decided that section 276 of the *Criminal Code* was *not* unconstitutional, but that the provision could be held inoperative in

⁸⁷*R. v. LeGallant* (1985), 47 C.R. (3d) 170 (B.C.S.C.).

⁸⁸*R. v. Oquataq* (1985), 18 C.C.C. (3d) 440 (N.W.T.S.C.).

⁸⁹*R. v. Coombs* (1985), 49 C.R. (3d) 78 (Nfld. T.D.).

⁹⁰*R. v. Brun* (1986), 28 C.C.C. (3d) 396 (N.B.Q.B.).

⁹¹*R. v. LeGallant* (1986), 54 C.R. (3d) 46 (B.C.C.A.).

⁹²*R. v. Bird* (1984), 40 C.R. (3d) 41 (Man. Q.B.); affirmed 41 C.R. (3d) xxix (Man. C.A.).

⁹³*R. v. Wiseman* (1985), 22 C.C.C. (3d) 12 (Ont. Dist. Ct.).

⁹⁴*R. v. J.W.B.* (1986), 72 N.S.R. (2d) 122 (N.S. Youth Ct.).

⁹⁵*Re Seaboyer and The Queen* (1987), 37 C.C.C. (3d) 53 (Ont. C.A.).

⁹⁶*Ibid.*

rare circumstances. In the Court's words:

"Section (276 of the *Canadian Criminal Code*)... does concern the admission of evidence that may go to a legitimate defence; it prohibits any evidence concerning sexual activity of the complainant with any person other than the accused with three exceptions. These exceptions, deliberately chosen, encompass in my view the vast majority of the situations that might give rise to a valid defence... I will concede, however, that there may be instances where evidence of past sexual conduct not encompassed by the paragraphs might further a legitimate defence. If, for example, the defence was that the complainant was a prostitute who sought after the act to obtain a larger fee on threat of exposure or false accusations of assault, evidence of similar acts of that nature in the past would be relevant...in those circumstances the section will be inoperative. In the great majority of cases, however, the section will be valid and operative."⁹⁷

Until the Supreme Court of Canada rules on the constitutionality of s. 276, sexual assault victims and those accused of sexual assault will have to endure not knowing the legal limits of their rights insofar as evidence relating to the sexual activity of the complainant is concerned.

Finally, with respect to the alleged victim's sexual reputation, such evidence is no longer admissible in a court of law for the purpose of either challenging or supporting her credibility. As s. 277 states:

"In proceedings in respect of an offence under section...271, 272 or 273, evidence of sexual reputation, whether general or specific, is not admissible for the purpose of challenging or supporting the credibility of the complainant."

As was the case with s. 276, there has been doubt expressed as to whether s. 277 violates sections 7 and 11(d) of the *Charter of Human Rights and Freedoms*. The North West Territories Supreme Court in *R. v. Oquataq*⁹⁸ and the New Brunswick Court of Queen's Bench in *R. v. Brun*⁹⁹ agreed that s. 277 contravened sections 7 and 11(d) of the *Charter*. The Ontario Court of Appeal in *Re*

⁹⁷*Id.* at 62-63 and 67.

⁹⁸*R. v. Oquataq* (1985), 18 C.C.C. (3d) 440 (N.W.T.S.C.).

⁹⁹*R. v. Brun* (1986), 50 C.R. (3d) 395 (Ont. C.A.).

*Seaboyer and The Queen*¹⁰⁰ came to the opposite conclusion.¹⁰¹ Speaking for the majority, Grange J.A. states:

"I think that (s. 277) which excludes evidence of sexual reputation for the purpose of challenging or supporting credibility is a true reflection of modern standards. Sexual reputation is no more an indicator of credibility in a woman than it is in a man. It should no longer be recognized as relevant to that issue."¹⁰²

Accordingly, the Ontario Court of Appeal in *Seaboyer*¹⁰³ declared s. 277 constitutional. It did suggest, however, that evidence of sexual reputation may be admissible for purposes other than the challenging or supporting of credibility- for example, to establish that there was an honest belief that the victim consented to sexual intercourse.¹⁰⁴ It remains for the Supreme Court of Canada to ultimately settle both issues- the constitutionality of s. 277, and whether evidence of sexual reputation is admissible for the purpose of establishing the defence of honest belief.

Whether legal changes in the laws of evidence and other Bill C-127 changes (such as the replacement of the law of rape with that of sexual and aggravated sexual assault), will be sufficient to encourage a greater number of date rape victims to report their sexual victimization to the police is not known. It is also not known if the legal clarification of these laws through the courts will encourage increased reporting. Much probably depends on how date rape cases fare relative to other types of rape cases (i.e., stranger, acquaintance, and

¹⁰⁰*Re Seaboyer and the Queen* (1987), 37 C.C.C. (3d) 53 (Ont. C.A.).

¹⁰¹Also see the cases of *R. v. Bird* (1984), 40 C.R. (3d) 41 (Man Q.B.), affirmed 41 C.R. (3d) xxix (Man. C.A.); *R. v. Wiseman* (1985), 22 C.C.C. (3d) 12 (Ont. Dist Ct.); and *R. v. J.W.B.* (1986), 72 N.S.R. (2d) 122 (N.S. Youth Ct.). Judges in the three cases came to the conclusion that s. 277 of the *Canadian Criminal Code* does not violate sections 7 or 11(d) of the *Charter of Rights and Freedoms*.

¹⁰²*Id.* at 62.

¹⁰³*Re Seaboyer and The Queen* (1987), 37 C.C.C. (3d) 53 (Ont. C.A.).

¹⁰⁴*Id.* at 62.

marital rape cases) under the sexual assault laws and the laws of evidence. It is to be hoped, however, that Canada's judges do not follow in the footsteps of certain of their brethren.

Chief Justice William McGillivray of the Alberta Court of Appeal appears to believe that date rapes are less serious than stranger rapes, and that women who are raped while on such dates are partially to blame for their sexual victimization. In reducing by half the eight year sentence given a twice-convicted rapist who had raped a physically handicapped woman, the Chief Justice stated in *R. v. Brown*:¹⁰⁵

"When somebody grabs a citizen off the street, we take a dim view of that. But when a lady accompanies a man home at 3 a.m. to drink beer and smoke marijuana, one might not be too surprised if something happened under those circumstances."¹⁰⁶

Evidently, the judge does not take a "dim view" of women who have been sexually assaulted while on dates, particularly if they have been drinking or smoking marijuana. As Boyle explains:

"There are, therefore, at least some judges who think it is less serious sexually to assault someone who is utilising her freedom to drink and visit others late at night. What was also revealed here and in other cases (i.e., *R. v. Simmons*)¹⁰⁷ was the view that it is less serious to assault a friend or acquaintance than a stranger, *in spite of the breach of trust factor* (emphasis my own)."¹⁰⁸

One wonders if Chief Justice McGillivray would have been even less charitable in his remarks had the victim not been a defenceless woman who required leg braces and crutches in order to walk.

¹⁰⁵*R. v. Brown* (1983), 34 C.R. (3d) 191 (Alta. C. A.).

¹⁰⁶"Going Home with Man Invites Rape, Judge Says," *The Montreal Gazette*, 16 March 1983, p.A2.

¹⁰⁷*R. v. Simmons* (1973), 13 C.C.C. (2d) 165 (Ont. C.A.).

¹⁰⁸Christine Boyle, *Sexual Assault* (Toronto: Carswell Co., 1984), 177.

That certain members of Canada's judiciary consider date rapes to be much less serious than stranger rapes, and certain women as less deserving of the law's protection than others, is further illustrated by the case of a stripper who was raped while out on a date with a customer.¹⁰⁹ Justice John Bowlby of the Ontario Supreme Court stated that the victim "belong(ed) to a particular class of women", that she "promot(ed) lust", and that she was not a virgin at the time of her rape.¹¹⁰ He also inferred that it made a difference that she was on a date when she was sexually assaulted.¹¹¹ Similarly, Justice James Southey of the Ontario Supreme Court believes that date rapes are just not as serious as stranger rapes. In sentencing Waskies to two years less a day for sexual assault causing bodily harm (Waskies had punched his 22 year old girlfriend in the face and forced her to perform oral sex on him on the night of February 24th 1984), Justice Southey stated that a previous sexual relationship between victim and attacker "must reduce the gravity of the offence".¹¹² In the coming years, it will hopefully become clearer that the above three cases do not represent how

¹⁰⁹"Judge Angers Raped Stripper," *The Vancouver Sun*, 8 February 1985, p.A17.

¹¹⁰*Ibid.*

¹¹¹*Ibid.*

¹¹²"Judge Weighs Relationship in Sex Assault," *The Vancouver Sun*, 16 May 1985, p.C21. Justice Southey further stated that because the victim and her attacker had an on-going sexual relationship "as a matter of common sense makes the sexual aspect of the assault *less serious* than it would otherwise have been".

To put it bluntly, Justice Southey is not looking at all of the pertinent facts, and is also generalizing about all date rapes where a prior sexual relationship has existed between victim and attacker. If he is going to focus on actual or perceived harm done to the victim in deciding on an appropriate sentence, then he should consider that date rape is a "triple-barreled assault". According to Ann Burgess, a psychiatric nurse at the University of Pennsylvania, "Not only is the woman (who has been sexually assaulted by a boyfriend or date) assaulted physically and emotionally, her sense of trust and integrity in friendship is also destroyed" [*Newsweek*, April 9, 1984 at 91]. In essence, the woman has been betrayed. Furthermore, instead of generalizing that all date rapes where victims and attackers have had prior sexual relationships are less serious than other types of rapes, a better alternative is suggested: judge each sexual assault case on its own merits.

Canada's judiciary is going to approach and judge date rape cases.

With date rape and the law in historical perspective, let us now turn our attention to the next chapter which examines the state of the date rape research from its earliest beginnings to its latest developments.

CHAPTER IV

FROM KANIN ONWARDS: A REVIEW OF THE DATE RAPE RESEARCH

Introduction

Date rape has received minimal attention in the sociological, criminological, and psychological literature despite the fact that research on marital rape has proliferated since the early 1970's. Given too that the available evidence suggests that sexual violence in dating relationships is widespread, it is difficult to understand the reason for such neglect. This apparent lack of academic interest may be due to any number of factors- a lack of funding for such research,¹ the mistaken perception that date rapes are largely trivial compared to stranger and marital rapes, a desire to maintain current dating patterns though they be sexually coercive, the belief that date rape is a "woman's issue" and should therefore only be studied by women,² and a reluctance to examine one's own behavioural patterns lest one discover disquieting truths. Whatever the reasons, there is no denying that date rape is a serious social problem requiring

¹As Gregg, Preston, Geist, and Caplan point out "The investigation of *social* phenomena depends no less on funding or science policy decisions than does research on subatomic particles or cancer". See Gary Gregg, Thomas Preston, Alison Geist, and Nathan Caplan, "The Caravan Rolls on: Forty Years of Social Problem Research," *Knowledge: Creation, Diffusion, Utilization* 1 (September 1979): 34.

²According to Eichler, "...research... should be carried out by members of both sexes". When research is carried out, an androcentric perspective is to be avoided. Briefly, this perspective is most commonly seen "...when women (or females in general) are largely ignored in the research process... (or) considered but only insofar as they pertain to males...". She suggests, and this author concurs, that researchers should strive to go beyond the narrow confines of the androcentric perspective. In her words, "...the primary purpose in trying to go beyond an androcentric perspective is not only to understand men as men, but also to understand women as women, and eventually perhaps, after we have given considerable thought to this question, to understand people as people". For the source of these three quotations, see Margrit Eichler, *Sexism in Research and its Policy Implications* (Ottawa: Canadian Research Institute for the Advancement of Women, Bradda Printing Services, 1983), pp. 5, 17, 21.

further investigation.

This thesis examines the phenomenon of date rape and the response of the Canadian criminal justice system to the reporting of that phenomenon. It attempts to go beyond most of what has been written about the topic prior to January 1st, 1989. Understandably, this prompts the question "What has been written about date rape thus far?" The primary purpose of this chapter is to answer that question and, in so doing, to identify shortcomings in the date rape research. Its secondary purpose is to offer suggestions for overcoming and/or preventing these shortcomings.

The Early Research: 1957-1971

Prior to 1971, Eugene J. Kanin was one of a handful of researchers studying date rape.³ In February 1957, he co-authored his first article on the subject with Clifford Kirkpatrick. The two researchers found that sexually coercive behaviour was anything but rare in dating relationships. Specifically, of 291 female university students responding to a questionnaire, 55.7% reported themselves offended at least once by a boyfriend or date during the period from September 15, 1954 to May 15, 1955 at some level of erotic intimacy.⁴ Nor were the experiences of being offended altogether associated with trivial situations or explainable by the more conservative period in which they occurred, as evidenced by the fact that 20.9% were offended by their dates forcibly attempting intercourse and 6.2% by "aggressively forceful attempts at sex intercourse in

³Prior to 1971, the date rape research field was dominated almost exclusively by male researchers. Kirkpatrick, Kanin, and Amir were the primary researchers in the field.

⁴Clifford Kirkpatrick and Eugene Kanin. "Male Sex Aggression on a University Campus." *American Sociological Review* 22 (February 1957): 53.

the course of which menacing threats or coercive infliction of physical pain were employed".⁵

Kanin continued to research date rape, producing no fewer than ten published articles on the subject over the next three decades. His central thesis, apparently unchanged over the years, appears to be that differential sexual socialization leads to some men becoming hypersexually socialized. These exaggerated aspiration levels, he argues, lead to a high degree of sexual frustration which, in turn, leads men to commit date rape.⁶ Implicit in this theory, it would appear, is the assumption that date rapists are sexually deprived individuals. Kanin's theory, however, is not based on this assumption at all. Rather, his theory is based on *relative deprivation*, not actual sexual deprivation.⁷ It should also be pointed out that his theory is based on date rape being viewed as a sexual rather than as an assaultive act in which power and aggression are expressed.⁸ Whether or not one agrees with Kanin's explanation of the phenomenon, there is no denying that he (and Kirkpatrick to a lesser extent) sowed

⁵*Ibid.*

⁶See generally Eugene Kanin, "An Examination of Sexual Aggression as a Response to Sexual Frustration," *Journal of Marriage and the Family* 29 (August 1967): 428-433; Eugene Kanin, "Rape as a Function of Relative Sexual Frustration," *Psychological Reports* 52 (February 1983): 133-134; and Eugene Kanin, "Date Rapists: Differential Sexual Socialization and Relative Deprivation," *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 14 (June 1985): 219-231.

⁷Relative deprivation is when one perceives that one is deprived (be it sexually or otherwise) whether or not one actually is deprived. Kanin found that date rapists as a group were *not* sexually deprived at all. In fact, they tend to be much more sexually experienced and to avail themselves of legitimate sexual outlets more often than most males. For further information, see Eugene J. Kanin, "Date Rapists: Differential Sexual Socialization and Relative Deprivation," *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 14 (June 1985): 219-231.

⁸Kanin makes it abundantly clear that his theory of date rape is based on a sexual perspective as opposed to a power one. In his words, "...rape is *primarily* being examined from a sexual perspective rather than from one that views it as an expression of power and aggression". See Eugene Kanin, "Date Rapists: Differential Sexual Socialization and Relative Deprivation," *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 14 (June 1985): 220.

the seeds for future sexual assault analyses of the relationship between rapists and their unfortunate victims.

Though Kanin may have sowed the seeds for sexual assault victim-offender relationship studies, the seeds did not immediately sprout. It was not until 1971, when Menachem Amir published *Patterns in Forcible Rape*, that the relationship between rapists and victims finally established itself as a topic worthy of greater academic attention.⁹ Up to that point, scholars had largely neglected studying such relationships. When they had studied them, they tended to use different classification systems of victim-offender relationships (which made comparisons of the studies exceedingly difficult) and often did not examine the ways in which the demographic variables were connected with the behavioural ones. As Amir explains:

"...a lack of data (are) evident; and that which is available poses some major difficulties. First, if relationships are identified at all, they are rarely the same because their classifications are incomparable. Second, most lacking is the connection between the general aspect of victim-offender relationships, their social and personal characteristics, and other dimensions of the crime, (of forcible rape)."¹⁰

Despite these difficulties, or perhaps more accurately because of them, Amir was able to make a significant contribution to the study of the victim-offender relationship (VOR) as it applied to the crime of sexual assault. Before examining some of his findings, however, a few words need to be said about his study.

Amir began his study in 1961. Its purpose was to analyze forcible rapes which had occurred in the Philadelphia area and which had been reported to the Philadelphia police in 1958 and 1960.¹¹ The cases he analyzed were only

⁹See generally Menachem Amir, *Patterns in Forcible Rape* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1971).

¹⁰*Id.* at 249.

¹¹*Id.* at 6.

those crimes the police themselves defined as forcible rape and which appeared in the Uniform Crime Report Code under number 211. Police statistics were chosen because Amir believed they introduced less bias than either court or prison statistics, and because the number of crimes known to the police is the highest number of crimes reported.¹² He chose the years 1958 and 1960 for analysis because the number of rape complaints did not appear to have been influenced by political or economic events. Convenience and other considerations such as being close to the 1960 census also influenced the selection of the years 1958 and 1960. Although Amir sought to test several hypotheses as they applied to rapists in general, we are most interested in those which concern date rapists.

Amir divided the VOR into seven categories on the basis of degrees of social distance, anonymity, degrees of intimacy, and degrees of interaction according to the durability and intensity of the relationship.¹³ The seven categories were stranger, stranger but general knowledge, acquaintance, neighbour, close friend or boyfriend, family friend, and relative.¹⁴ Only the categories of close friend or boyfriend and acquaintance need concern us here. Amir defined a close friend or boyfriend as an "offender (who is) often in victim's home or dated with her, or having close, direct, or frequent relationship with her".¹⁵ He defined an acquaintance as an "offender (who) becomes known to victim just before the offense, or she has some prior knowledge about his residence, place of work, name or nickname, but no specific relationships exist between them".¹⁶ With regards to this latter definition, it would appear to include rapes which

¹²*Id.* at 11.

¹³*Id.* at 232-233.

¹⁴*Id.* at 233.

¹⁵*Id.* at 233.

¹⁶*Id.* at 233.

were committed on a first date. Unfortunately, Amir's definition is not as precise as it could be; therefore, this assumption is pure speculation.

Of 646 victims, the vast majority (80%) were black.¹⁷ Most were in the 15-19 year age bracket (25%) and were single (27%).¹⁸ Amir found that only 6% of his sample had been raped by a close friend or boyfriend.¹⁹ This compares with 14.4% for acquaintances, 19.3% for neighbours, 5.3% for family friends, 2.5% for relatives, 42.3% for strangers, 9.6% for strangers but general knowledge, and 0.6% on whom no information was available.²⁰ Clearly, then, "...girls who trust their boy friends...may not be spared from becoming victims of rape. In (6% of such relationships), gentlemen forfeited their positions of trust and committed the crime of forcible rape".²¹

It is important to realize that Amir's findings, particularly with respect to date rape, must be interpreted in light of three key variables- definitions of rape (both legal and layperson), actual reporting of rape, and actual police handling of rape complaints. For the years 1958 and 1960, the state of Pennsylvania defined rape as "...unlawful carnal knowledge of a woman, forcibly and against her will, or whoever, being of the age of sixteen years and upward, unlawfully and carnally knows and abuses any woman child under the age of 16 years with or without her consent, is guilty of rape...".²² As is apparent from this definition, forcible rape is lumped together with statutory rape, although this is of little or no concern as far as interpreting the data are concerned since the two

¹⁷*Id.* at 43.

¹⁸*Id.* at 52.

¹⁹*Id.* at 234.

²⁰*Id.* at 234.

²¹*Id.* at 235.

²²*Id.* at 17.

types of rapes were separated in the Uniform Crime Reports beginning in 1958. It is crucial to note, however, that Pennsylvania's legal definition of forcible rape required penetration of the vagina by the penis. Thus, women could not be convicted of forcible rape, although they could be convicted as accessories to the crime.²³ Similarly, men who forced women to engage in oral or anal intercourse or who penetrated women's vaginas with objects other than penises could not be convicted of forcible rape.²⁴ As well, under Pennsylvanian law, husbands could not be convicted of raping their wives due to a marital rape exemption.²⁵

Given the state of Pennsylvanian rape law in 1958 and 1960, it is not surprising that only 646 cases were recorded by the police for the two years. The legal definition of rape, in effect, screened out all marital rapes and those sexual assaults such as forced oral and anal sex which did not fit this rigid legal definition. Individual's perceptions of what constituted rape also helped to screen out reported cases. In other words, an individual is unlikely to report a given behaviour to the police unless she defines it as a legally proscribed behaviour *regardless of whether or not the behaviour is, in fact, illegal*. Even if a sexual assault victim does recognize the illegality of the behaviour against her, she is unlikely to report her victimization to the police for a wide variety of reasons.²⁶ Rape is one of the most underreported of all crimes.²⁷ Because Amir's

²³*Id.* at 24.

²⁴*Id.* at 24.

²⁵*Id.* at 24.

²⁶Reasons for not reporting rape/sexual assault include (1) shame and embarrassment, (2) fear of publicity and the subsequent ordeal of courtroom procedures, (3) inconvenience or bother or the wish to just forget about the rape, (4) fear of retaliation, (5) belief that the criminal justice system would be ineffective, (6) fear of identifying the wrong person, (7) for married women, fear of rejection by their husbands, (8) the wish to protect an offender known to them, (9) for parents, the wish to spare their child future trauma, and (10) not realizing or acknowledging that a crime has been committed.

²⁷According to Dianne Kinnon, one rape or sexual assault in ten is reported to

data are based exclusively on official police reports, it is highly likely that the actual number of rapes which occurred in the time period of his study was ten times higher.²⁸ As far as the classification of rapes is concerned, the available evidence indicates that stranger rapes are more likely to be reported to the police than rapes between intimates, friends, or acquaintances.²⁹ Thus, it is not too surprising that stranger rapes outnumbered boyfriend or date rapes by a margin of 7:1 in Amir's study. Finally, the way in which the police initially handle rape complaints will determine whether or not they are recorded as rape complaints or recorded at all. The beliefs of individual officers combined with their acceptance of certain rape myths, for example the belief that certain women cannot be raped (i.e., prostitutes), will most likely influence whether or not such complaints are taken seriously enough to be recorded. Taking all of these factors into account, it is not difficult to appreciate how distorted the actual "rape picture" may become. This is not to say, however, that Amir or other social scientists should avoid using official police statistics in their research- only that they should recognize their inherent limitations, and take steps to supplement them with other statistics or data such as those gathered through victimization surveys. To his credit, Amir did recognize most of the

²⁷(cont'd) the police. See Dianne Kinnon, *Report on Sexual Assault in Canada* (Ottawa: Canadian Advisory Council on the Status of Women, December 1981), p.1-2. For specific types of rape such as date and acquaintance rape, the number of underreported rapes is even higher. One of the most recent studies to date found that only 4.1% of nonromantic acquaintance rape victims, 1.9% of casual date rape victims, and 0% of steady date rape victims reported their victimization to the police. See Mary P. Koss and Susan L. Cox, "Stranger and Acquaintance Rape: Are There Differences in the Victim's Experience?," *Psychology of Women Quarterly* 12 (1988): 18.

²⁸*Ibid.*

²⁹Alan W. McEvoy and Jeff Brookings, *If She is Raped: A Book for Husbands, Fathers, and Male Friends* (Florida: Learning Publications, 1984), p.31; Karen C. Briskin and Juneau M. Gary, "Sexual Assault Programming for College Students," *Journal of Counseling and Development* 65 (December 1986): 208; and Fern H. Mims and Audrey S. Chang, "Unwanted Sexual Experiences of Young Women," *Journal of Psychosocial Nursing and Mental Health* 22 (June 1984): 12.

limitations of the data he was utilizing.³⁰ It is regrettable, however, that he relied *exclusively* on police statistics.

Later Research: 1972-1981

Following Amir's study, two significant events took place in the date rape research- commentators other than Kirkpatrick, Kanin, and Amir entered the picture, and the feminist viewpoint emerged to challenge the prevailing paradigm that sexual frustration was largely responsible for date rape. Diana Russell, for example, wrote the following shortly after attending a rape trial in 1971:

"...I had seen rape as an extremely sadistic and deviant act, which could be performed only by crazy or psychopathic people. I carried around in my head a picture of rape that involved a strange man jumping out of the bushes and attacking and raping a solitary woman on her way home late at night. The notion of rape by a lover or friend or colleague just hadn't occurred to me."³¹

Convinced that the psychopathological explanation of rape only accounted for a tiny minority of all committed rapes and that numerous myths surrounded the crime, Russell and her research assistants interviewed 90 female rape victims living in the Berkeley area of California.³² Their goal in undertaking the study was to "...educate people about rape from the victim's perspective...".³³ They found that husbands, boyfriends, acquaintances, employers, professors, teaching assistants, and other individuals women had trusted had breached that trust by raping them. With respect to date rape, Russell suggests that the socialization process is to blame. As she puts it:

³⁰*Supra* note 9 at 10-11.

³¹Diana E. H. Russell, *The Politics of Rape: The Victim's Perspective*, (New York: Stein and Day, 1975), p.12.

³²*Id.* at 14.

³³*Id.* at 14.

"...men who rape often see themselves as lovers, not as rapists. They believe so strongly that women really want intercourse with them, that they are *unable* (emphasis my own) to hear women's protests to the contrary. Women's physical and verbal resistance is seen as part of the female game of pretending reluctance, or as an expression of a desire to be overcome. For example, one woman reported that her date finally succeeded in raping her after a two-hour struggle, but he could not understand why she was so upset, and he was unable to comprehend why she accused him of raping her. He considered himself a lover in the tradition of forceful males and expected to have a continuing relationship with her."³⁴

While many rapists may not label themselves as rapists, it is highly questionable that they are *unable* to hear women's protests. More likely, they are *unwilling* to hear those protests.

Russell suggests that women have also been adversely affected by the sexual socialization process. Specifically, many who have been raped by someone other than a stranger (such as a boyfriend, date, or spouse) do not realize that they have been raped. They do not tend to label their experience as rape or sexual assault. As Russell explains:

"...many women...do not see themselves as rape victims. For example, it was only several months after a woman had been working on this study that she reevaluated earlier experiences and realized that she had been raped twice...I have come across many such cases, particularly when the woman was not subjected to much violence, or if her rapist was not a stranger."³⁵

It does not take an in-depth understanding of the phenomenon of rape or the intricate workings of the criminal justice system to realize that behaviour which is not labelled "rape" is not going to be reported to the police. Even behaviour which is labelled rape, particularly if the assailant was a boyfriend or date, is not likely to be reported to the police.³⁶ The reasons for this severe underreporting of date rape will be dealt with at a later point in this thesis.

³⁴*Id.* at 258.

³⁵*Id.* at 259.

³⁶*Supra* note 29.

In 1975, Susan Brownmiller published the landmark book, *Against Our Will: Men, Women and Rape*. Her objective in writing the book was to show that "...rape is nothing more or less than a *conscious* process of intimidation by which *all* men keep *all* women in a state of fear."³⁷ Although Brownmiller's thesis is an absolute generalization subject to much debate in the scholarly community, there is no denying that her contribution to the study of sexual assault has been immeasurable. Although she only touched on the subject of date rape, she was one of the first researchers to examine specific types of date rape- the most notable being *gang date rape*.³⁸ In this type of rape, the person is sexually assaulted by two or more individuals, at least one of whom is someone she has dated or is currently dating. A victim of this type of rape tells of her experience:

"I was 19, working in a bar as a waitress. I had a couple of dates with this guy who used to come into the bar. He was okay then, he never tried anything funny. Then he invited me to go out with him, and two other couples on my day off.

There were two fellows already there when I got into the car, and we drove to places where we were supposed to pick up the other girls. But each time the fellows came back alone with some story about how the girls couldn't make it. We were way out in the country by this time. Then my date stopped the car and started messing around. So there I was, out in the middle of nowhere with three guys who all had their minds on one thing.

I kept struggling with my date and finally when he said, "If you don't let me, I'll put it in your mouth," I gave in. Then the other fellows took their turn. I wasn't screaming or fighting anymore. I just wanted to get it over with and not have anything worse happen to me. When they were all through they drove me home.

³⁷Susan Brownmiller, *Against Our Will: Men, Women, and Rape*, (New York: Bantam Books, 1975), p.5.

³⁸*Id.* at 284, 393-394. Also known as "gang acquaintance rape" and "acquaintance gang rape", gang date rape is severely underresearched. For a fascinating look at this little understood crime, see Julie K. Ehrhart and Bernice R. Sandler, *Campus Gang Rape: Party Games?* (Washington: Project on the Status and Education of Women, Association of American Colleges, 1985).

I tried to tell some older men in the bar about it a few days later. They asked me if I was hurt and when I said I wasn't they told me to forget about it."³⁹

Although this young woman may not have been physically hurt, it is highly likely that she was mentally or emotionally hurt by the loss of trust she experienced.⁴⁰ A study completed in 1975, to which Pauline Bart was a major contributor, lends credence to this assertion.

In November 1974, a questionnaire was published in the magazine *Viva*.⁴¹ Readers who had been rape victims were asked to complete the questionnaire and mail it in. Dr. Pauline Bart was then called in to analyze the responses. Altogether, 1,070 females and males completed the questionnaire, the females greatly outnumbering the males.⁴² The mean age of the respondents was 18 years.⁴³ Sixty percent were single.⁴⁴ With respect to date rape, three significant findings emerged. First, "when the attacker was known, he was most likely to be an acquaintance (23%) or a date (12%)".⁴⁵ Second, "women who were attacked by their husbands or lovers experienced the most loss of trust, followed by those attacked by dates, acquaintances, or relatives. Those who were least

³⁹*Id.* at 394.

⁴⁰Date rape has been described as a "triple-barreled assault":

"Not only is the woman assaulted physically and emotionally...her sense of trust and integrity in friendship is also destroyed."

Thus, it is quite likely that the 19 year old waitress who was raped by her date and two other men felt betrayed- betrayed by her date and betrayed by her own judgment (because she could no longer, in her own mind, tell the good guys, from the bad guys). For the source of the triple-barreled assault quotation, see Jean Seligman et al., "The Date Who Rapes," *Newsweek* (April 9, 1984): 91.

⁴¹Pauline B. Bart, "Rape Doesn't End With a Kiss," *Viva* 2 (1975): 39.

⁴²*Id.* at 40.

⁴³*Id.* at 40.

⁴⁴*Id.* at 40.

⁴⁵*Id.* at 40.

likely to experience loss of trust were attacked by strangers".⁴⁶ And finally, "...rape by a *known* person seems more psychologically harmful (than rape by a stranger)".⁴⁷

In evaluating Bart's findings, it is important to keep in mind the specific conditions under which the research was carried out. The fact that the questionnaire was *published*, the fact that it was published in a magazine with a *largely female readership*, and the fact that Dr. Bart was apparently called in *after* the data had already been gathered all affect the study's validity.⁴⁸ Because the questionnaire was published instead of a given number being distributed, it is impossible to determine the questionnaire's refusal rate. Knowing the refusal rate is crucial in not only judging a study's internal and external validity, but also in determining the potential dark figure of a given behaviour or crime. It may very well be the case that a *self-selection bias* is operating. Perhaps non-respondents differ from respondents on certain key variables such as level of victimization, age, or marital status. In Diana Russell's 1982 study of rape in marriage, for example, non-respondents tended to be older than respondents as well as being married.⁴⁹ That the questionnaire was published in a magazine having a largely female readership also influenced the results. Since a much

⁴⁶*Id.* at 42.

⁴⁷*Id.* at 42. Although rape by a known person may seem more psychologically harmful than rape by a stranger, Koss and Harvey report that this may not be so:

"Several studies have failed to find many significant relationships between assault characteristics and victim response (e.g., Frank et al., 1979; Ellis, Atkeson, & Calhoun, 1981). For example, no differential impact was seen on...stranger versus known assailant..."

For the source of this quotation, see Mary P. Koss and Mary R. Harvey, *The Rape Victim: Clinical and Community Approaches to Treatment*, (Massachusetts: The Stephen Greene Press, 1987), p.44.

⁴⁸*Id.* at 39-40.

⁴⁹Diana E. H. Russell, *Rape in Marriage*, (New York: Macmillan Publishing Co., 1982), p.34.

smaller percentage of males than females were exposed to the questionnaire, it is not surprising that few males responded to it. Finally, calling Dr. Bart in *after* the data had already been gathered so that she would analyze such data was short-sighted at best. Her complete lack of control and limited knowledge of the early stages of the research may very well have led her to analyze the data in a way completely different from how she would have analyzed it had her control over and knowledge of the research been greater. All of this is not to say that the *Viva* study is worthless- simply that some of its findings can be explained on the basis of how the research was conducted, and that its findings are much more limited in scope than might, at first, have appeared to be the case.

In 1977, Lorene Clark and Debra Lewis added to the research on sexual assault with their book *Rape: The Price of Coercive Sexuality*.⁵⁰ Although they did not specifically focus on date rape, they did arrive at a conclusion in regards to date rape which cannot go unchallenged. First, however, it is imperative that a few words be said about their study. In the Fall of 1973, Clark and Lewis approached the Metropolitan Toronto Police Department requesting access to all cases of rape reported to them in 1970, along with permission to interview the complainants.⁵¹ Their first request was granted, but their second was denied for reasons of confidentiality.⁵² The data for that year showed that 116 females over the age of 14 reported to the Toronto police that they had been raped.⁵³ Forty-two or 36.2% of these cases were classified by the police as

⁵⁰Lorene M. G. Clark and Debra J. Lewis. *Rape: The Price of Coercive Sexuality*. (Toronto: The Women's Press, 1977).

⁵¹*Id.* at 31.

⁵²*Id.* at 31.

⁵³*Id.* at 34.

founded.⁵⁴ Convinced that the police classification of rape cases as founded or unfounded was inherently biased, Clark and Lewis reclassified the cases into three separate categories- founded, unfounded/possibly founded, and unfounded.⁵⁵ In their view, out of these 116 reported rapes, only 12 or 10.3% were genuinely unfounded as compared with the police figure of 74 or 64%.⁵⁶ The extent to which this reclassification of police data affected Clark and Lewis' conclusions is unclear, but it would appear to have played a major role. In any event, and despite their supposed understanding of the limitations of police statistics, they confidently state "The most conclusive finding supported by our data is that *rape only occasionally occurs between persons very well known to each other*".⁵⁷

Like Amir's study, Clark and Lewis' study relied exclusively on official police statistics. Its "most conclusive finding" is thus suspect because the available evidence indicates that *stranger rapes* are much more likely to be reported to the police than rapes between non-strangers.⁵⁸ Contrary to what one might expect, rape frequently occurs between persons very well known to each other. Directly contradicting Clark and Lewis' "most conclusive finding", Muehlenhard and Linton state:

"Although it might be comforting to think that sexual aggression occurs only between relative strangers on first dates, this is *not* (emphasis my own) the case. The mean length of time that couples involved in sexual aggression had known each other was almost a year".⁵⁹

⁵⁴ *Id.* at 34.

⁵⁵ *Id.* at 35.

⁵⁶ *Id.* at 38.

⁵⁷ *Id.* at 75.

⁵⁸ *Supra* note 29.

⁵⁹ Charlene L. Muehlenhard and Melaney A. Linton. "Date Rape and Sexual Aggression in Dating Situations: Incidence and Risk Factors." *Journal of Counseling Psychology* 34 (April 1987): 194.

Had Clark and Lewis supplemented their research with data obtained from a victimization survey, they might not have been placed in the unenviable position of adding to the myths about rape, of which there are many.

Nineteen-seventy-seven was not only the year that Clark and Lewis added to the rape literature; it also marked the first replication of Kirkpatrick and Kanin's 1957 study of date rape. Kanin and Parcell decided to replicate and extend the earlier study due to growing speculation that the 1957 findings had become "...something of a period piece".⁶⁰ In replicating the earlier study, they distributed questionnaires to females in 23 varied university classes at an undisclosed university. As was the case in 1957, the males were excused from the classes. Of the 358 females who were approached, 76 either refused to participate or returned incomplete questionnaires. The replication showed that there had been little change in either the incidence or frequency of unwanted male sexual aggression between dating partners. Specifically, 50.7% of the 282 females reported experiencing offensive male sexual aggression during the 1971-72 academic year.⁶¹ This percentage was slightly lower than that found by the 1957 study.⁶² As Kanin and Parcell caution, however, the fact that both samples were non-probabilistic ones of the "accidental" or "convenience" variety is cause for concern. In their words, "Although the 1957 sample was of a comparative nature and drawn from a comparable type of institution (as their 1977 study), we feel a *certain reserve* in making time comparisons since both samples were accidental."⁶³ A "certain reserve" is also warranted given the marked differences in

⁶⁰Eugene J. Kanin and Stanley R. Parcell, "Sexual Aggression: A Second Look at the Offended Female." *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 6 (1977): 67.

⁶¹*Id.* at 69.

⁶²The 1957 study found that 55.7% of 291 females reported experiencing offensive male sexual aggression during the 1954-55 academic year.

⁶³*Supra* note 60 at 68.

the refusal rates of the two studies- only 1% in the 1957 study compared with 21% in the 1977 study.⁶⁴

Wilson and Faison's 1979 study of sexual assault in dating is of special significance to academics in that it is one of the earliest (and few) studies to also examine *male* date rape victims.⁶⁵ An examination of the date rape research will reveal that male victims have been largely ignored.⁶⁶ Stereotypical beliefs and the fact that women are sexually victimized as a group while men are not appear to be the main reasons for this state of affairs. As Wilson and Faison explain:

"Male victims of sex aggression have largely been ignored. There are several possible explanations for this blind spot. First, certain cultural beliefs suggest that males cannot be the victims in this area. Men are said to always want sex where ever and whenever the opportunity arises. Because of this high sexual desire, men will always consent either at the outset or at the very least once sex begins they will relax and enjoy it. Further, it is often stated (without proof), it is impossible to force sex on a man since he has to be willing to get an erection. Such beliefs are without empirical support, contradict the experience of men, and seem to closely resemble the sexist beliefs used to legitimate rape against women...

The lack of research on male victims is not totally attributable to stereotypical beliefs. While individual men may be victimized by sex aggression, men as a group are not. Sexual assault influences the lives of women, whether or not they have been a victim. Women feel the need to limit their alternatives to protect themselves against rape, and this helps maintain their subordinate position in society. The importance of this social problem explains much of the initial interest in the female victims of rape and sexual aggression."⁶⁷

⁶⁴See Clifford Kirkpatrick and Eugene J. Kanin, "Male Sex Aggression on a University Campus," *American Sociological Review* 22 (February 1957): 53; and Eugene J. Kanin and Stanley R. Parcell, "Sexual Aggression: A Second Look at the Offended Female," *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 6 (1977): 68.

⁶⁵Kenneth Wilson and Rebecca Faison, "Sexual Assault in Dating: A Profile of the Victims," *Sociological Research Symposium* 9 (1979): 320-326. For a more recent study on male date rape, see Cindy Struckman-Johnson, "Forced Sex on Dates: It Happens to Men, Too," *The Journal of Sex Research* 24 (1988): 234-241.

⁶⁶*Id.* at 323.

⁶⁷*Id.* at 323.

In carrying out their research, Wilson and Faison found (as expected) that females are sexually victimized much more than men are. Of the 174 full-time university undergraduates surveyed and who completed usable questionnaires (91 females, 83 males), 62% of the women and 24% of the men reported an incident where the person they were dating "aggressively attempted to force them to engage in some sexual act".⁶⁸ Fifty-four percent of the women and 12% of the men reported incidents involving petting *above* the waist, while 44% of the women and 16% of the men reported incidents involving petting *below* the waist.⁶⁹ Thirty-four percent of the women and 13% of the men reported aggressive attempts to force sexual intercourse where violence or threats were lacking.⁷⁰ Finally, "...10% of the (91) women report(ed) encountering violence or threats of violence from their male companions who were trying to force sexual intercourse".⁷¹ None of the men reported their female companions using violence or threats of violence to obtain sexual intercourse.⁷² Given the small sample size of participating males and the fact that far fewer men than women have been sexually assaulted, this last finding is not at all surprising. Nevertheless, it is the case that males have been forced by females (be they strangers or dates) to engage in sexual intercourse and other sexual acts against their will.⁷³

⁶⁸*Id.* at 324.

⁶⁹*Id.* at 324.

⁷⁰*Id.* at 324.

⁷¹*Id.* at 324.

⁷²*Id.* at 324.

⁷³Although not as common as males raping females, there are recorded instances where females have raped males. For example, on November 8th 1980, the *Arizona Republic* reported that two females, aged 17 and 24, were being held by police in connection with the sexual assault of two 15-year-old boys. A third woman was being sought in connection with the case. There is also the case of "Tim" who was sexually assaulted by the woman he had been dating, as reported by Philip and Lorna Sarrel, codirectors of the Sex Counseling Program at Yale University, in "Can a Man be Raped by a Woman?," *Redbook* (May 1981): 92 & 94. And, of course, many people still remember the case of the Mormon missionary who was kidnapped by his ex-girlfriend, chained to a bed, and

In 1980, Vogelmann-Sine completed a particularly fascinating study that dealt with sexual assault victims in dating situations.⁷⁴ The study looked at stereotypical attitudes towards sex roles, and how such attitudes affected judgments about whether or not women were perceived to have consented to sexual intercourse. In the Vogelmann-Sine investigation, three separate studies were carried out. Since the bulk of the findings which concern us are based on her third study, its methodology is the one described here. Her third study consisted of two experiments in which undergraduate males and females were asked to judge the degree to which certain female responses to a date's sexual advances implied consent to sexual intercourse. All subjects judged this information in the context of a *rape trial* and a *dating situation*. Experiment one presented information about the woman's responses to less sexually intimate advances (such as her date holding her hand and hugging her). Experiment two, in contrast, presented information about the woman's responses to more sexually intimate advances (such as her date placing his hand on her covered crotch or suggesting that they have sexual intercourse).

Vogelmann-Sine discovered that attitudes about women did influence whether or not, and at what point, they were deemed to have consented to sexual intercourse. Perhaps not surprisingly, she discovered that "Subjects with *more stereotypical attitudes*...generally judged the women's behaviours to the men's

⁷³(cont'd) allegedly forced to engage in sexual intercourse against his will ("Sex-In-Chains Case: Missing Beauty, Could Be Here," *The Vancouver Sun*, 17 April 1978, p. A1. A2; "RCMP Seek Bail Jumpers in Bizarre Sex Kidnap," *The Montreal Star*, 18 April 1978, p. A6.). If there is a lesson to be learned from the preceding cases, it is that cultural beliefs about males and females should not be allowed to hinder research on sexual aggression and sexual assault. As well, it would be advisable for all beliefs about the nature of (sexual assault) victims to be empirically investigated.

⁷⁴Silke Vogelmann-Sine, "Implicit Consent and Rape: An Integration Theory Analysis of Female Responses in a Dating Context." (Ph.D. dissertation, University of Hawaii, 1980).

advances as implying *higher* degrees of implicit consent to intercourse in the rape as well as the nonrape condition".⁷⁵ Attitudes, however, were not the only factors influencing whether the women were deemed to have consented to sexual intercourse² the women's behaviour to *advances of high sexual intimacy* were also crucial in the determination of whether they had consented. As Vogelmann-Sine explains, "For all subjects (irrespective of attitudinal predispositions), the women's behaviour to the advance *highest* on sexual/physical intimacy were of *significantly greater* importance for overall judgments than their behaviour to the advances at relatively lower levels of sexual/physical intimacy".⁷⁶ In other words, the more sexually intimate a man's advances to a woman, the more likely it is that she will be seen as having implicitly consented to sexual intercourse *unless her responses to his advances make it abundantly clear that she does not consent.*

The final study, falling within the period of 1972-1981 and which touched on the topic of date rape, was Bart's 1981 investigation of women who had been raped and who had avoided being raped.⁷⁷ Most revealing and disturbing, at least to women who think they can always trust those closest to them, was Bart's finding that women were *more likely to be raped "...when they were attacked by men they knew,* particularly if they had had a prior sexual relationship with them...".⁷⁸ Conversely, women were *more likely to avoid rape when they were attacked by strangers.*⁷⁹ Although the present author suspects that future studies will confirm this finding, it is his contention that the extremely small sample size upon which it is based (13 females) is far too methodologically

⁷⁵*Id.* at vii.

⁷⁶*Id.* at vii.

⁷⁷Pauline B. Bart, "A Study of Women Who Both Were Raped and Avoided Rape," *Journal of Social Issues* 37 (Fall 1981): 123-137.

⁷⁸*Id.* at 123.

⁷⁹*Id.* at 123.

"shaky" a foundation upon which to base such an assertion. Quite clearly, further research is needed before it can be stated with any degree of confidence that women are more likely to be raped when attacked by men they know than when the attacker is a complete stranger.

The Latest Research: 1982-1988

Since 1982, there appears to have been a modest increase in the number of date rape articles being published. Apparently fueling this increase were a combination of factors- the growing realization among academics and the general public that violence (be it sexual or otherwise) is widespread in the family and in couples,⁸⁰ the growing number of countries around the world changing (or at least considering changing) their rape laws so that husbands would no longer be immune from being charged with the rape of their wives,⁸¹ the publication of the first book in North America to address the issue of rape in marriage,⁸² the discovery that sexual assaults in marital relationships are inextricably linked to sexual assaults in the less formalized relationships of dating and courting,⁸³ and

⁸⁰M. L. Bernard and J. L. Bernard. "Violent Intimacy: The Family as a Model for Love Relationships." *Family Relations* 32 (April 1983): 283.

⁸¹Canada abolished its marital rape exemption in 1983 when it replaced the criminal offence of rape with that of sexual assault. From January 4th of that eventful year, it has been legally possible for either spouse to be charged with the sexual assault of the other (s. 246.8, *Canadian Criminal Code*).

⁸²Diana E. H. Russell, *Rape in Marriage*, (New York: Macmillan Publishing Co., 1982).

⁸³*Infra* note 85 at 246-256 and 261. Diana Russell is not the only researcher to recognize that sexual assaults in marital relationships are inextricably linked to sexual assaults in the less formalized relationships of dating and courting. As Pirog-Good and Stets found:

"...violence in dating is a precursor for violence in marriage and...many of the patterns that have been observed among married couples can be understood by examining violence in dating. Our (research) results confirm this."

For the source of this quotation, see Jan E. Stets and Maureen A. Pirog-Good, *Working Paper 8586-7: Violence in Dating Relationships* (Indiana: Regional Economic Development Institute, Indiana University, 12 August 1986), p. 24.

the willingness of an increasing number of women to recognize and label sexually assaultive behaviour for what it is, regardless of its origin (be it within a relationship or not).⁸⁴ Still, the increased interest can hardly be described as "an opening of the floodgates". In any event, there is no denying that the vast bulk of the date rape research has been published in the period spanning 1982-1988.

Research from 1982

Perhaps the most significant contribution to the body of rape literature published in 1982 was Diana Russell's landmark book *Rape In Marriage*.⁸⁵ In endeavouring to bring to the attention of scholars and non-scholars alike the horrible realization that rape in marriage is quite common, Russell devotes two chapters to date rape and explains how rape in this less-formalized relationship mirrors rape in the more formalized one.⁸⁶ In carrying out her research, she utilized cluster sampling and systematic random sampling to obtain her initial sample of 2,000 households.⁸⁷ From these households, she had hoped to obtain 1,000 interviews with women eighteen years and older. Due to a high incidence of "not-at-homes" and households in which no eligible female resided, a further 1,200 households was later drawn.⁸⁸ The interviews were conducted in the summer of 1978 in the interviewees' homes, all of which were located in the city of San Francisco. The interviewers were 33 trained females of various ethnic backgrounds- seventeen whites, six Asians, five blacks, and five Latinas. A total

⁸⁴ Jean Seligman et al., "The Date Who Rapes," *Newsweek* (April 9, 1984): 91.

⁸⁵ Diana E. H. Russell, *Rape in Marriage*, (New York: Macmillan Publishing Co., 1982).

⁸⁶ *Id.* at 246-269.

⁸⁷ *Id.* at 30-31.

⁸⁸ *Id.* at 31.

of 930 females were interviewed.⁸⁹

Of these 930 females, 71 or 8% had been raped by their husbands or ex-husbands.⁹⁰ The remaining types of assailants, from the highest to the lowest percentage, included acquaintances (5%), lovers or ex-lovers (5%), strangers (3%), dates (3%), friends of the respondent (3%), authority figures (2%), boyfriends (2%), friends of the family (1%), and other relatives (1%).⁹¹ As Russell points out, however, the sexual assault picture changes considerably once *completed and attempted rapes* are combined. When these two rape categories are combined, acquaintances become the most prevalent type of rapists (14%), followed by dates (12%), strangers (11%), husbands or ex-husbands (8%), authority figures (6%), lovers or ex-lovers (6%), friends of the respondent (6%), other relatives (3%), boyfriends (3%), and friends of the family (2%).⁹² The reason the sexual assault picture changes so much when these two rape categories are combined is due to the number of attempted rapes for husbands, boyfriends, dates, and lovers being low when compared to rapes by non-intimates. Expressed another way, Russell's data reveal that "...the more intimate the relationship, the more likely the attempts at rape will succeed...".⁹³

In interpreting this data, the refusal rate of 19% should be kept in mind. Perhaps the one out of every five potential participants who declined to participate in the study differed significantly from participants on certain key variables such as *type and level* of sexual victimization. Certainly, as Russell points out, the non-participants differed from the participants on the variables of age and

⁸⁹*Id.* at 31.

⁹⁰*Id.* at 65.

⁹¹*Id.* at 65.

⁹²*Id.* at 66.

⁹³*Id.* at 64.

marital status- non-participants tended to be older and married.⁹⁴ Census data and the interviewers' impressions would allow for these specific variables to be compared. They would not, regrettably, allow for comparison of either types or levels of sexual victimization. Thus, it is quite possible that the percentage of women attacked by certain types of rapists is misleading, most likely erring on the side of *underestimating* the true extent of such sexual assaults.⁹⁵ Coupled with what is now known about the reportability of sexual assaults (i.e., that the closer the assailant is to the victim, the less likely the sexual assault will be reported to either the police or researchers),⁹⁶ it seems probable that *marital rapes* and *date rapes* are the most likely to have been underestimated. Keeping this probable state of affairs in mind, let us now briefly turn our attention to one of the most neglected topics in the date rape and marital rape literature- why some women have married their rapists.

To her credit, Russell devoted an entire chapter of her book to bridging the gap that existed between the marital rape and the date rape research.⁹⁷ Prior

⁹⁴*Id.* at 34.

⁹⁵*Infra* note 96. Date rapes are especially likely to be underestimated because victims of this crime are even less likely than victims of stranger rape to disclose their victimization to interviewers (assuming of course that such date rape victims recognize that they have been raped).

⁹⁶*Supra* note 29. In an attempt to gauge the accuracy of criminal victimization surveys, the U. S. Bureau of the Census conducted a reverse record check in 1971. Summarizing the highlights of the study, Estrich states:

"...over 80 percent of those raped by strangers disclosed the victimization to the interviewer, while only about half of those raped by someone they knew disclosed the victimization. Rape was both more and less likely to be disclosed than other crimes- depending entirely on the circumstances. Rape committed by a stranger was the crime most likely to be reported to survey interviewers. *Rape committed by a nonstranger, second to aggravated assault, was the crime least likely to be reported to the interviewers* (emphasis my own)."

For the source of this quotation, see Susan Estrich, *Real Rape*, (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1987), p.14.

⁹⁷*Supra* note 85 at 246-256.

to the time her book was published, almost no research existed as to why some women married their sexual assailants.⁹⁸ Undoubtedly, one explanation for the lack of research in this area was the difficulty of obtaining such a select sample of women. Russell herself was only able to come up with a sample of six women who had married their sexually assaultive dates. She found that women have married their date rapists for a number of reasons, among them the belief that they belong to a man they have had sex with, the desire to retain or regain purity, the desire to be rid of certain feelings of guilt, and because the particular date rapist they married was perceived to be less abusive than other men they had dated.⁹⁹ Nevertheless, it is evident that much research remains to be done into why some women marry their rapists. Russell's research is best viewed as the starting point for such research.

In the same year that Russell's research was challenging the way the general public viewed the offenders and victims of rape, two other studies were involved in related challenges of their own. The first, by Antonia Abbey, was challenging the assumption that males can distinguish females' friendly behaviour from their seductive behaviour.¹⁰⁰ Much to the amazement of the two sexes, she found that men are much more likely to misjudge the intentions of women than vice versa. In her words:

"Men do tend to read sexual intent into friendly behaviour. However, this appears to occur because of a general male bias rather than an attitude about females only. Evidently, women are not subject to this

⁹⁸ As Russell points out at page 247, Mildred Pagelow does present the stories of two women who married their rapists in Mildred Pagelow, *Woman-Battering: Victims and Their Experiences*, (Beverly Hills: Sage Publications, 1981). In contrast to the women in Russell's study, these two women had been coerced into marrying their rapists.

⁹⁹ *Supra* note 85 at 246-256.

¹⁰⁰ Antonia Abbey, "Sex Differences in Attributions for Friendly Behaviour: Do Males Misperceive Females' Friendliness?," *Journal of Personality and Social Psychology* 42 (May 1982): 830-838.

bias (at least not under the circumstances of the laboratory experiment which was conducted) and are, therefore, unlikely to misjudge male intentions in the way that men misjudge those of women."¹⁰¹

The implications of this finding for women who desire nothing more than platonic relationships from men are enormous. Assuming that her finding is confirmed and that future studies bridge the gap between reading sexual intent into friendly behaviour and specifically acting upon that intent, women may find themselves on the receiving end (if they are not already) of more unwanted sexual aggression than they imagined possible. On a more positive note, if men realize that they are likely to misjudge females' intentions, perhaps they will exercise greater caution in dating relationships.

In addition to the Russell and Abbey studies, the third significant study of 1982 which challenged how the public thought about rape offenders and their victims was that carried out by Korman and Leslie.¹⁰² The purpose of their study was threefold- "to compare the incidence of sexual aggression reported (in 1982) with reports from previous studies in the area, to determine if adherence to feminist ideology is associated with fewer episodes of sexual aggression on dates, (and) to determine if the sharing of expenses by women on dates is associated with fewer episodes of sexual aggression".¹⁰³ Their research was carried out by distributing 500 questionnaires to female volunteers enrolled in 27 Social Science classes at a large Southeastern University.¹⁰⁴ Of these questionnaires, 400 usable ones were returned for a return rate of 80%.¹⁰⁵

¹⁰¹*Id.* at 838.

¹⁰²Sheila K. Korman and Gerald R. Leslie, "The Relationship of Feminist Ideology and Date Expense Sharing to Perceptions of Sexual Aggression in Dating." *The Journal of Sex Research* 18 (May 1982): 114-129.

¹⁰³*Id.* at 118.

¹⁰⁴*Id.* at 118.

¹⁰⁵*Id.* at 118.

Korman and Leslie found that the incidence of reported sexual aggression had remained about the same over a 20-year period, but that the aggressive advances had become more "coitally-directed".¹⁰⁶ More surprising, particularly to the feminist community, were Korman and Leslie's two other findings. Specifically, "...adherence to feminist ideology and the sharing of dating expenses (were) shown *not* to be associated with fewer reports of offense on dates".¹⁰⁷ The authors offer several possible explanations for these findings. With reference to adherence to feminist ideology, they suggest that more feminists than non-feminists reported offenses because they (the feminists) were more willing to label unwanted behaviour offensive. As well, the authors suggest that the attitudes which were present at the time of data collection may not have adequately reflected past attitudes, and that upholding feminist ideology may connote sexual permissiveness to males who may then act on such beliefs. With reference to the sharing of dating expenses, Korman and Leslie suggest that "attempts by women to break the traditional male-only outlay of cash may provoke sexual advances as an outcome of male sex-role frustration".¹⁰⁸ Another possible explanation they offered is that women who share dating expenses may only perceive there to be more sexual aggression than traditional women, and hence be quicker to label it offensive. In any event, it is patently clear that the relationship of feminist ideology and the sharing of dating expenses to the phenomenon of date rape requires further research before definitive answers can be given to the questions they pose.

¹⁰⁶*Id.* at 121.

¹⁰⁷*Id.* at 114 and 124.

¹⁰⁸*Id.* at 126.

Research from 1983-1986

The years 1983 to 1986 witnessed several major developments in the date rape research, the chief ones being the resurrection/birth, testing, and consolidation of theories believed to hold promise in explaining date rape and date rape attribution. With respect to the etiology of date rape, seven pieces of research are especially noteworthy: Wilson, Faison, and Britton's examination of Power Theory, the Generational Theory of Violence, and Merton's Theory of Anomie;¹⁰⁹ Kanin's re-examination of the Theory of Relative Sexual Frustration;¹¹⁰ Byers and Wilson's examination of Clark and Lewis' Theory of Coercive Sexuality;¹¹¹ Scully and Marolla's examination of the Psychopathological Model and Social Learning Theory;¹¹² Koss, Leonard, Beezley, and Oros' examination of the Psychopathological Model and the Social Control/Social Conflict Model;¹¹³ Shotland's examination of Gender Differences in the Perception of Sexual Intent;¹¹⁴ and Pirog-Good and Stets' examination of a Probit Model.¹¹⁵ With respect to date rape attribution, which is simply the labelling or acknowledgement that a given behaviour constitutes date rape, four studies in the period 1983 to 1986 are of special interest- namely those by Check and Malamuth;¹¹⁶ Shotland and Goodstein;¹¹⁷ Muehlenhard, Friedman, and Thomas;¹¹⁸ and Fischer.¹¹⁹

¹⁰⁹*Infra*, note 128.

¹¹⁰*Infra* note 139.

¹¹¹*Infra* note 148.

¹¹²*Infra* note 154.

¹¹³*Infra* note 166.

¹¹⁴*Infra* note 174.

¹¹⁵*Infra* note 186.

¹¹⁶*Infra* note 208.

¹¹⁷*Infra* note 213.

¹¹⁸*Infra* note 218.

¹¹⁹*Infra* note 223.

Beginning with the etiology of date rape studies, it is abundantly clear that the majority of researchers have now categorically rejected the Psychopathological Model of Date Rape.¹²⁰ This model posited that "...rape is the result of idiosyncratic mental disease and...often includes an uncontrollable sexual impulse".¹²¹ In the psychopathological view, date rapists are "sick" individuals from the "lunatic fringe" of society.¹²² In rejecting the Psychopathological Model, Koss et al. pointed out that "...there is no empirical support for the presence of diagnosable psychopathology among rapists...".¹²³ Similarly, Scully and Marolla state:

"In contradiction to (the Psychopathological) model, empirical research has repeatedly failed to find a consistent pattern of personality type or character disorder that reliably discriminates rapists from other groups of men. Indeed, other research has found that fewer than 5 percent of men were psychotic when they raped."¹²⁴

This lack of empirical support for the Psychopathological Model has led many

¹²⁰ Interestingly, researchers who have focused on convicted stranger rapists or whose training has largely been in psychiatry or medicine seem most likely to predicate their explanations of rape on the Psychopathological Model.

¹²¹ Diana Scully and Joseph Marolla, "Riding the Bull at Gilley's: Convicted Rapists Describe the Rewards of Rape," *Social Problems* 32 (February 1985): 251.

¹²² *Ibid.* As Nicholas Groth, who subscribes to the Pathological Model of Rape, writes "Rape is always a symptom of some psychological dysfunction, either temporary and transient or chronic and repetitive": See Nicholas Groth, *Men Who Rape: The Psychology of the Offender* (New York: Plenum Press, 1979), p. 5.

¹²³ Mary P. Koss, Kenneth E. Leonard, Dana A. Beezley, and Cheryl J. Oros, "Nonstranger Sexual Aggression: A Discriminant Analysis of the Psychological Characteristics of Undetected Offenders," *Sex Roles* 12 (May 1985): 982.

¹²⁴ *Supra* note 121 at 251. Kanin too has rejected the Psychopathological Model as a viable explanation for date rape. As he explains:

"The evidence does not lend to stereotyping these men (71 self-disclosed date rapists) as the sexually deprived..., the sexually inadequate..., or the socially and psychologically maladjusted...It would seem that in these cases individual psychopathology has to give considerable ground to a differential sexual socialization and the almost inevitable relative deprivation as important and viable constructs for understanding the sexually predatory behavior of these rapists."

For the source of this quotation, see Eugene J. Kanin, "Date Rapists: Unofficial Criminals and Victims," *Victimology: An International Journal* 9 (1984): 99.

researchers to look for the causes of date rape elsewhere than in the person; they have begun to look more to the family and one's peers (milieu variables),¹²⁵ and especially to society at large, its organization, and its cultural values (system variables).¹²⁶ All of this is not meant to imply that the Psychopathological Model of date rape is dead or even lying dormant- simply that the Psychopathological Model is no longer the prevailing one.¹²⁷

Wilson, Faison, and Britton tested three noncontradictory explanations for why a substantial number of men were willing to engage in unwanted sexual aggression with women they were dating.¹²⁸ These explanations or theories were (1) Power Theory, (2) the Generational Theory of Violence, and (3) Merton's Theory of Anomie. According to the Power Theory proponents, the primary motivation for date rape is power rather than sex. Date rapists, it is said, use violence "...to establish their power over a woman in a last ditch effort to fulfill the cultural expectation that men dominate women".¹²⁹ In essence, they rape to overcome feelings of powerlessness. The Generational Theory of Violence, in contrast, is based on the notion that those who were sexually abused as children

¹²⁵The term "milieu variables" is borrowed from Gregg et al.'s research. It is one of three types of independent variables, the other two being "person variables" and "system variables". Person variables include hereditary, physiological, individual demographic (sex, race, age), and individual psychological variables. Milieu variables include educational, occupational, dyadic (simple, marital, parent-child), familial, and group variables. System variables include setting/situational, neighbourhood/community, organizational structure, social/economic structure, national demographic, cultural, and economic/political system variables. For further information, see Gary Gregg, Thomas Preston, Alison Geist, and Nathan Caplan, "The Caravan Rolls On: Forty Years of Social Problem Research," *Knowledge: Creation, Diffusion, Utilization* 1 (September 1979): 41.

¹²⁶*Ibid.*

¹²⁷The more recent explanations of date rape seem to emphasize system variables, although no single preferred explanation for the phenomenon has yet emerged.

¹²⁸Kenneth Wilson, Rebecca Faison, and G. M. Britton, "Cultural Aspects of Male Sex Aggression," *Deviant Behavior* 4 (1983): 241-155.

¹²⁹*Id.* at 243.

(or who were witnesses to such abuse) are at high risk of becoming abusers themselves, be it in dating or other relationships.¹³⁰ Date rape, then, is simply a form of learned behaviour. Merton's Theory of Anomie, on the other hand, concerns itself with goals and the means for reaching those goals. According to this explanation, pressure to engage in date rape will develop "...whenever there is a disjunction between the culturally prescribed goals and the socially structured means for reaching the goals".¹³¹

In testing these three explanations, Wilson et al. obtained a random sample of 250 full-time undergraduates from a Southern University.¹³² Their final sample was composed of 123 females and 103 males.¹³³ Only the males were included in their study, 83 or 81% of whom completed questionnaires.¹³⁴ The researchers found that their data supported only the latter two explanations of date rape, specifically the Generational Theory of Violence and Merton's Theory of Anomie.¹³⁵ With respect to the Generational Theory, they state:

"This research...supports the importance of social learning in sex aggression. A history of child abuse has a strong influence on sex aggression which is not mediated by the acceptance of accounts. Abused children grow up to be more aggressive in their adult interaction. Since the aggressive behaviours have been most clearly modeled in the family context, it is not surprising that *when abused boys grow up, they abuse their dates* (emphasis my own)."¹³⁶

Although many abused boys will grow up to abuse their dates both sexually and physically, it is important to realize that such scripts are *not* unalterable, as Wilson et al. seem to suggest. The cycle of violence can, and has, been

¹³⁰ *Id.* at 243.

¹³¹ *Id.* at 244.

¹³² *Id.* at 247.

¹³³ *Id.* at 247.

¹³⁴ *Id.* at 247.

¹³⁵ *Id.* at 251-252.

¹³⁶ *Id.* at 252.

broken.¹³⁷ As far as Merton's Theory of Anomie is concerned, the researchers simply state that "...sexual motivations arising from structural strain is a major factor in sex aggression".¹³⁸ Regrettably, they did not significantly expand upon this finding or explain precisely what it meant.

In a short article published that same year, Kanin appeared to lend some assistance.¹³⁹ In a study of 71 self-disclosed date rapists, Kanin set out to gather support for the hypothesis that "...deviant sexual behaviour (in a dating context) can be attributed to an absence of legitimate sexual outlets".¹⁴⁰ When he compared the self-disclosed date rapists to his control group, he found that not only were they considerably more sexually experienced, but that they had (on average) availed themselves of *legitimate* sexual outlets twice as often.¹⁴¹ In other words, it was the nonrapists who seemed to be the most sexually deprived. Checking the sexual aspiration levels of these two groups, Kanin discovered that the rapists had aspiration levels almost twice those of the nonrapists.¹⁴² This finding led him to conclude that "... *relative* frustration is significant for understanding of these (71) date-rape episodes".¹⁴³

¹³⁷Mary Van Stolk, *The Battered Child in Canada*, (Toronto: McClelland and Stewart, 1982), p.84.

¹³⁸*Supra* note 128 at 251.

¹³⁹Eugene J. Kanin, "Rape as a Function of Relative Sexual Frustration," *Psychological Reports* 52 (February 1983): 133-134.

¹⁴⁰*Id.* at 133.

¹⁴¹*Id.* at 134.

¹⁴²*Id.* at 134.

¹⁴³*Id.* at 134. It would be interesting to know how Kanin's Theory of Relative Sexual Frustration would fare if date rapists who do *not* perceive that they are rapists were studied. Because Kanin relied on "self-disclosed" date rapists, or rapists who perceived that they were rapists, it just may be that his theory is only applicable to those males and *not* to males who do not acknowledge that they are date rapists.

In stark contrast to Kanin's Theory of Relative Sexual Frustration which is based on date rape being viewed as a sexual rather than an assaultive act, Clark and Lewis' Theory of Coercive Sexuality views date rape as being first and foremost an assaultive act.¹⁴⁴ According to Clark and Lewis, there is a continuum of coercive sexuality along which all sexual encounters lie.¹⁴⁵ Date rape and unwanted male sexual aggression are simply points along this continuum.¹⁴⁶ They continue:

"The socialization of both men and women takes coercive sexuality as the normal standard of sexual behaviour. Men are expected to apply a certain amount of pressure to have women submit ("agree") to sexual intercourse, and women are expected to resist such pressure, whatever their own desires might happen to be. Men are expected to be sexually dominant and to initiate sexual activity; women are expected to be somewhat passive and to agree to sex with reluctance. Understandably, those men who most strongly identify masculinity with sexual dominance and aggression, are not likely to see any difference between what they call seduction and women call rape."¹⁴⁷

From the foregoing, Byers and Wilson hypothesized that "...men with a traditional double standard about the rights of men and women would be more reluctant to accept a woman's refusal of further sexual advances in a dating situation than would men with nontraditional attitudes".¹⁴⁸ They also hypothesized that "...traditional males would be especially prone to interpret highly intimate levels of consensual intimacy as indications that the woman was taking risks with her sexuality and was therefore forfeiting her right to say 'No'".¹⁴⁹

¹⁴⁴Lorenne M. G. Clark and Debra J. Lewis, *Rape: The Price of Coercive Sexuality*, (Toronto: The Women's Press, 1977), pp. 161, 166-168.

¹⁴⁵*Id.* at 129.

¹⁴⁶*Id.* at 129-132.

¹⁴⁷*Id.* at 141.

¹⁴⁸E. Sandra Byers and Paula Wilson, "Accuracy of Women's Expectations Regarding Men's Responses to Refusals of Sexual Advances in Dating Situations," *International Journal of Women's Studies* 8 (September-October 1985): 376-387 at 376.

¹⁴⁹*Id.* at 376.

To test their hypotheses, Byers and Wilson divided a group of 50 Introductory Psychology students from the University of New Brunswick (26 males and 24 females) into groups based on their attitudes towards women.¹⁵⁰ The men then roleplayed their responses to women's refusals in nine tape-recorded descriptions of sexual dating situations. These descriptions varied according to the level of sexual involvement and the type of refusal given. The women then roleplayed the response they would expect from most men. As it turned out, the results provided only partial support for the Theory of Coercive Sexuality. Men with liberal attitudes were found to be "...more compliant in stopping their advances than were men with traditional attitudes".¹⁵¹ Level of intimacy, however, did not affect the roleplayed responses of either the men or women. Furthermore, the results "...are not consistent with the view that all or most sexual interactions contain coercive elements, since many of the men's responses did not reflect reluctance to comply".¹⁵² Despite assurances to the contrary, however, the roleplayed responses may not have been representative of *actual behaviour* for either the males or the females, but particularly for the males due to two factors. First, all roleplayed responses were visibly connected to specific individuals- participants could not roleplay their responses and simultaneously maintain their anonymity as, for example, participants could in Zimbardo's famous study of group behaviour.¹⁵³ Second, and this criticism stems from the

¹⁵⁰*Id.* at 378.

¹⁵¹*Id.* at 385.

¹⁵²*Id.* at 385. Also, see E. Sandra Byers and Kim Lewis, "Dating Couples' Disagreements Over the Desired Level of Sexual Intimacy," *The Journal of Sex Research* 24 (1988): 15-29; and E. Sandra Byers, "Effects of Sexual Arousal on Men's and Women's Behavior in Sexual Disagreement Situations," *The Journal of Sex Research* 25 (May 1988): 235-254.

¹⁵³In Zimbardo's study of group behaviour or deindividuation, subjects wore baggy lab coats and hoods over their heads and worked under darkened conditions in order to maintain their anonymity. For a brief overview of this experiment, see Curt R. Bartol and Anne M. Bartol, *Criminal Behaviour: A Psychosocial Approach*, 2nd Edition (New Jersey: Prentice-Hall, 1986), p.195.

first, the participants were probably reluctant to roleplay behaviour which reflected negatively upon themselves even if they would normally respond in such a manner to the given situation. It is to be hoped that any replications of Byers and Wilson's study will control for these two factors, both of which constitute serious threats to the study's internal validity. Masking the faces, and possibly even the voices of the roleplaying subjects, would be a start towards controlling for these factors.

In a departure from the three previous sexual assault studies which relied on student volunteers for their data, Scully and Marolla's study relied on convicted rapists who were still in prison.¹⁵⁴ During 1980 and 1981, the two researchers interviewed 114 convicted rapists using an 89 page interview schedule.¹⁵⁵ Each interview took place inside a Virginia prison and lasted between three to seven hours.¹⁵⁶ Of the 114 rapists they interviewed, 54% were black and 46% were white.¹⁵⁷ The majority were between the ages of 18 and 35.¹⁵⁸ The researchers did not formulate specific hypotheses. Rather, the primary goal of their research was exploratory- to explore rape from the perspective of a group of convicted and imprisoned rapists.¹⁵⁹ The researchers wanted to discover how these men viewed their own sexual violence.

Scully and Marolla found that their sample of 114 convicted rapists had committed a wide variety of rapes- stranger, acquaintance, date, and marital.

¹⁵⁴ Diana Scully and Joseph Marolla, "Riding the Bull at Gilley's: Convicted Rapists Describe the Rewards of Rape." *Social Problems* 32 (February 1985): 251-263.

¹⁵⁵ *Id.* at 254.

¹⁵⁶ *Id.* at 254-255.

¹⁵⁷ *Id.* at 254.

¹⁵⁸ *Id.* at 254.

¹⁵⁹ *Id.* at 254 and 261.

They found that these men had raped for reasons of revenge, punishment (be it of individual women representing themselves or women in general), as a bonus added to burglary or robbery, and in order to dominate and control.¹⁶⁰ As well, they found that most of the rapists in their sample viewed females as sexual commodities to be used, and that these same rapists tended to rely on culturally-derived myths about men, women, and rape as explanations (even justifications) for their criminal behaviour.¹⁶¹ On the basis of these findings, Scully and Marolla concluded:

"...it is not necessary to resort to pathological motives to account for all rape or other acts of sexual violence. Indeed, we find that men who rape have something to teach us about the cultural roots of sexual aggression. They force us to acknowledge that rape is more than an idiosyncratic act committed by a few 'sick' men".¹⁶²

They continue:

"...Our data demonstrates that some men rape because they have learned that in this culture sexual violence is rewarding. Significantly, the overwhelming majority of these rapists indicated they never thought they would go to prison for what they did. Some did not fear imprisonment because they did not define their behaviour as rape. Others knew that women frequently do not report rape and of those cases that are reported, conviction rates are low, and therefore they felt secure. These men perceived rape as a rewarding, low risk act."¹⁶³

While not disputing the conclusion that Social Learning Theory plays a part in explaining why some men rape, it just may be that such theorists (and perhaps the majority of sexual aggression researchers) are asking the wrong question. In the words of Scully and Marolla:

"In view of the apparent rewards and cultural supports for rape, it is important to ask why some men do not rape. Hirschi makes a similar observation about delinquency. He argues that the key question is not 'Why do they do it?' but rather 'Why don't we do it?' (Hirschi, 1969:34). Likewise, we may be seeking an answer to the wrong

¹⁶⁰*Id.* at 254.

¹⁶¹*Id.* at 261.

¹⁶²*Id.* at 262.

¹⁶³*Id.* at 262.

question about sexual assault of women. Instead of asking men who rape "Why?", perhaps we should be asking men who don't "Why not?"¹⁶⁴

Scully and Marolla's point is well taken- men who do not sexually assault women should be asked why they do not. To suggest, however, that researchers ought to confine their questions to non-rapists is short-sighted at best. Both groups ought to be surveyed. As far as rapists are concerned, attention needs to be focused not only on those who come to the attention of the authorities (be they law enforcement, judicial, and/or correctional) but also on those who have managed to elude the stigmatizing label of "rapist".¹⁶⁵

Koss, Leonard, Beezley, and Oros have carried out one of the few studies which has focused on judicially undetected rapists.¹⁶⁶ The purpose of their exploratory study was to determine if three types of undetected sexually aggressive men who had sexually assaulted female acquaintances could be distinguished on the basis of certain psychological characteristics.¹⁶⁷ These researchers recruited their participants through a two-stage sampling procedure.¹⁶⁸ In the first stage, the Sexual Experiences Survey was administered to 1,846 males in randomly selected university classes. These males were then classified as either sexually assaultive, sexually abusive, sexually coercive, or sexually nonaggressive. In the second stage, 143 of these males were interviewed. Of this sample, 17 had been

¹⁶⁴ *Id.* at 262.

¹⁶⁵ Koss, Leonard, Beezley, and Oros echo the author's view that studies are needed of rapists who have managed to avoid judicial attachment of the "rapist" or "sexual offender" label. In their words, "To develop a more complete picture of rape, studies are needed of the undetected as well as the judicially identified rapist". See note 166 at 983.

¹⁶⁶ Mary P. Koss, Kenneth E. Leonard, Dana A. Beezley, and Cheryl J. Oros, "Nonstranger Sexual Aggression: A Discriminant Analysis of the Psychological Characteristics of Undetected Offenders," *Sex Roles* 12 (May 1985): 981-992.

¹⁶⁷ *Id.* at 983.

¹⁶⁸ *Id.* at 983-984.

classified as sexually assaultive, 23 as sexually abusive, 53 as sexually coercive, and 50 as sexually nonaggressive. Stepwise discriminant analysis was then used to identify the most useful psychological characteristics associated with self-reported sexual aggression.¹⁶⁹ It should be noted that these psychological characteristics or variables reflected two major theoretical models of rape: the Psychopathological Model and the Social Control/Social Conflict Model.¹⁷⁰

Koss et al. found that their results supported the Social Control/Social Conflict Model of nonstranger sexual aggression. In their words:

"...men who have threatened or actually used force to gain nonconsensual sexual intercourse with female acquaintances differed from sexually nonaggressive men in their degree of adherence to several rape-supportive attitudes. The more sexually aggressive a man had been, the more likely he was to attribute adversarial qualities to interpersonal relationships, to accept sex-role stereotypes, to believe myths about rape, to feel that rape prevention is the woman's responsibility, and to view as normal an intermingling of aggression and sexuality."¹⁷¹

The researchers add, however, that their conclusions must be viewed with caution because (1) the number of participants did not allow for their classifications to be cross-validated, and (2) there are significant differences between men who do and do not volunteer for sexual aggression research.¹⁷² They suggest that

¹⁶⁹*Id.* at 987.

¹⁷⁰The Psychopathological Model, as was pointed out earlier, maintains that the individual is sick, that he is suffering from a personality disorder (usually psychopathic), and that he is from the "lunatic fringe" of society. The Social Control/Social Conflict Model of sexual assault, in contrast, "...postulates the existence of a sick society in which accepted customs and values foster the occurrence of sexual aggression". See Mary Koss et al., "Nonstranger Sexual Aggression: A Discriminant Analysis of the Psychological Characteristics of Undetected Offenders," *Sex Roles* 12 (May 1985): 990.

¹⁷¹*Supra* note 166 at 989.

¹⁷²*Supra* note 166 at 991. Malamuth and Check found a number of significant differences between sex aggression research volunteers and nonvolunteers. Specifically, they found that such volunteers "...were more oriented towards unconventional sexual activities (such as male homosexual acts, anal intercourse, group sex, and watching lesbian sexual acts) and were more force oriented (i.e., indicated a greater likelihood of raping)" than non-volunteers. See Neil M. Malamuth and James V. P. Check, "Sexual Arousal to Rape Depictions:

future studies concentrate on larger, more generalizable populations, that methods be developed to increase subject participation, and that researchers begin to more fully entertain the idea that "...acquaintance and stranger rape may require different theoretical explanations".¹⁷³

Apparently, taking Koss et al.'s suggestion about different theoretical explanations of rape one step further, Shotland argues that there are different types of date rape, each requiring a different theoretical explanation. In his view, date rapes are of two types- "early date rape" and "relational date rape".¹⁷⁴ He defines the former as rape that "...occurs early in the relationship, after only a few dates..."¹⁷⁵ The latter he defines as "...rape that occurs in the context of an ongoing relationship..."¹⁷⁶ Shotland argues that "early date rape" and "relational date rape" are caused by a different combination of factors. Specifically, he sees early date rape as being primarily due to the male's antisocial and misogynist personality traits (the Psychopathological Model).¹⁷⁷ Relational date rape, in contrast, is seen as being part of a "normal" social process.¹⁷⁸ As he explains:

"Research evidence suggests that men perceive sexual interest when women do not. It is hypothesized that misunderstandings around sex when matched with situational and personality factors of both the male and female lead to relational date rape."¹⁷⁹

— In other words, Shotland's preliminary model of relational date rape combines

¹⁷²(cont'd) Individual Differences." *Journal of Abnormal Psychology* 92 (February 1983): 59.

¹⁷³*Supra* note 166 at 990.

¹⁷⁴Lance R. Shotland. "A Preliminary Model of Some Causes of Date Rape," *Academic Psychology Bulletin* 7 (Summer 1985): 187-200 at 188.

¹⁷⁵*Id.* at 188.

¹⁷⁶*Id.* at 188.

¹⁷⁷*Id.* at 197.

¹⁷⁸*Id.* at 195-197.

¹⁷⁹*Id.* at 187.

gender differences in the perception of sexual intent with two other factors- life style caused chance events and personality. Shotland elaborates:

"Because of the male's own level of interest, he is likely to confuse platonic behaviour as sexually interested behaviour. He is also more likely to have different expectations concerning the appropriate time in the couple's dating history that sex is acceptable... However, the holding by males of different perceptions and views than their dates is not a sufficient cause of date rape. If misperceptions were all that were involved, and the woman made it clear that she has been misunderstood (if she does not, it is hard to call it rape) ordinary males should back off. Males who will engage in date rape will have different characteristics than the ordinary male. Because they place a higher value on sexuality and feel greater sexual deprivation they may be poorer at coping with sexual frustration and impulse control. They also may hold rape supportive beliefs. Therefore, after passing their threshold of sexual frustration, their belief system supports their motivation to take what they want."¹⁸⁰

As far as females are concerned, Shotland states, "Women also appear to contribute to date rape". He singles out women who frequently date and those who are shy or hesitant about expressing their feelings as *higher risk* individuals when it comes to date rape. It should also be pointed out that Shotland has simply suggested one possible explanation for what he labels "relational date rape" based largely on a carefully arranged review of the literature; he has yet to test his preliminary model empirically.

Generally speaking, the main strength of Shotland's model would appear to be its multi-dimensional nature. Past explanations of rape, in general, and date rape, in particular, have tended to rely (as Koss et al. point out) on "unidimensional construct(s)"¹⁸¹ even though sexual assaults are known to differ in violence, context (stranger, date, etc.), form (individual, group), spontaneity (planned, partially planned, unplanned), and public recognition (reported, unreported, acknowledged, unacknowledged).¹⁸² Shotland appears to have

¹⁸⁰*Id.* at 196.

¹⁸¹*Supra* note 166 at 990.

¹⁸²Mary P. Koss and Mary R. Harvey, *The Rape Victim: Clinical and Community*

recognized that a more eclectic approach to theoretical explanations of sexual assault is overdue.

As far as the weaknesses of Shotland's model of date rape are concerned, there are several. First, the terms "early date rape" and "relational date rape" need to be more precisely defined. While it is clear that a woman who had been raped or otherwise sexually assaulted on a first, second, or third date would be classified as an early date rape victim, it is most unclear how a woman would be classified if she were to be sexually assaulted on the sixth date. Operationalizing both terms would thus appear to be in order. Second, Shotland's model of date rape needs to be empirically tested. Lack of empirical testing is, however, not a shortcoming of the model *per se*. Third, Shotland appears too willing to embrace the Psychopathological Model as an explanation for early date rape given that empirical research has *consistently* failed to provide support for the model. Alternative explanations for early date rape ought to be explored. It may even be that the distinction between early date rape and relational date rape will have to give way to a distinction based on a factor(s) other than length of time dating. Fourth, Shotland states "...if the woman (does not make) it clear that she has been misunderstood ...it is hard to call it rape...".¹⁸³ Shortly thereafter, he states:

"...if she has a tendency to be anxious, and is inadequately socially adjusted, she may be hesitant to signal her displeasure. Because this type of person may be less forceful in her communications, her displeasure may not be taken seriously by the male and hence intercourse occurs against her will."¹⁸⁴

Although it was perhaps not his intention, Shotland certainly appears to be

¹⁸²(cont'd) *Approaches to Treatment*. (Massachusetts: Stephen Greene Press, 1987), p.10.

¹⁸³*Supra* note 174 at 196.

¹⁸⁴*Supra* note 174 at 196.

victim-blaming. He also appears to be under the mistaken impression that the onus is on the victim to forcefully resist unwanted sexual advances or to say "No" a certain way before it can be said that a sexual assault has taken place. Nothing could be further from the truth. Legally speaking, the issue is not whether the victim resisted, but whether she consented to the sexual act(s) in question *and whether the accused honestly believed she had given consent*. If the accused honestly believed she had given consent, then a sexual assault has not been committed under Canadian criminal law. The victim's behaviour, while it may assist in determining what the accused's state of mind was at the time of the sexual act, is *not* the sole determinant of that issue. And fifth, throughout his article, Shotland appears to equate the word "normal" with "that which happens frequently in society".¹⁸⁵ Just because a given behaviour is frequent does not make it normal or even desirable. Shotland ought to re-examine his use of this word and consider using another. Even better, he might at least consider the Social Control/Social Conflict perspective of date rape as having some theoretical usefulness in explaining what he refers to as relational date rape.

Like Shotland, Pirog-Good and Stets employ multiple constructs to explain sexual assaults in dating relationships. Focusing on both individual and relationship-specific characteristics, they developed a sex-specific Probit Model to "...predict the presence or absence of sexually abusive behavior by white, heterosexual males and females"¹⁸⁶ Defining sexual abuse as "...(s)exual acts which

¹⁸⁵ *Supra* note 174 at 187, 188, and 196.

¹⁸⁶ Maureen A. Pirog-Good and Jan E. Stets, *Working Paper 8586-9: Sexually Abusive Behavior in Dating Relationships* (Indiana: Regional Economic Development Institute, Indiana University, 12 August 1986), p. 2. The Probit Model is a statistical one, and may also be referred to as a Probability Model. In fact, the word "probit" refers to a "unit of probability based on deviation from (the) mean of (a) standard distribution" (*Concise Oxford Dictionary*).

are clearly initiated against the will of one's partner",¹⁸⁷ these researchers postulate:

"...the propensity to initiate sexual abuse is related to control. Whether...the propensity to initiate sexual abuse passes the threshold depends on whether conflict over sexual behavior arises and how each individual responds to the conflict."¹⁸⁸

Thus, according to the Probit Model, an individual with a *low* propensity to initiate sexual abuse will be unlikely to sexually abuse or sexually assault his dating partner when conflict over sexual behaviour arises because his threshold has not been exceeded. On the other hand, the Model posits that if an individual has a *high* propensity to initiate sexual abuse and if conflict over sexual behaviour arises, then sexually abusive/assaultive behaviour is likely. Whether a given individual has a high or low propensity to initiate sexual abuse, according to Pirog-Good and Stets, depends on a number of factors-¹⁸⁹ whether he has witnessed parental violence as a child, whether he accepts particular acts of violence against women (such as slapping, punching, or beating) as nonviolent, whether he has scored low on instrumentality¹⁹⁰ and high on expressiveness,¹⁹¹ and whether he is between the ages of 25 and 29 years. Characteristics of the dating relationship which the two researchers hypothesize to be positively related to the propensity to initiate sexual violence are frequency of dating, the number of months that a relationship has been maintained, and the number of partners one is dating.¹⁹²

¹⁸⁷*Id.* at 1.

¹⁸⁸*Id.* at 3.

¹⁸⁹*Id.* at 3-6.

¹⁹⁰Pirog-Good and Stets define instrumentality as independence, self-confidence, and holding up well under pressure.

¹⁹¹Pirog-Good and Stets define expressiveness as emotionality and devoting one's self completely to others.

¹⁹²*Supra* note 186 at 5-6.

In order to test their hypotheses and thereby determine the predictive power of their Probit Model, Pirog-Good and Stets obtained a random sample of 56 upper level classes at a Midwestern University.¹⁹³ They then sent letters to the professors of these 56 classes requesting permission to survey the students in them. Twenty-five professors agreed to the request. Questionnaires were then distributed to the students in these 25 classes. The final sample consisted of 505 white, upper level undergraduates (244 males and 351 females).¹⁹⁴

Pirog-Good and Stets found, as expected, that "...violence against women, rather than violence against men, (was) the more serious problem in dating relationships".¹⁹⁵ With specific reference to violence against women in dating relationships, they discovered the following:

1. Males who witness parental violence as children are *less* likely to be sexually abusive in their dating relationships (opposite to that which was hypothesized);¹⁹⁶
2. Males who experience violence as children are more likely to be sexually abusive in their dating relationships (as hypothesized);¹⁹⁷
3. Males who accept particular acts of violence against women (such as slapping, punching, or beating) as nonviolent are more likely to initiate sexual abuse in their dating relationships (as hypothesized);¹⁹⁸
4. Males who score low on instrumentality (i.e., independence, self-confidence, and holding up well under pressure) are less likely to initiate sexual abuse

¹⁹³ *Supra* note 186 at 6.

¹⁹⁴ *Supra* note 186 at 7.

¹⁹⁵ Jan E. Stets and Maureen A. Pirog-Good. *Working Paper 8586-7: Violence in Dating Relationships* (Indiana: Regional Economic Development Institute, Indiana University, 12 August 1986). p. 11.

¹⁹⁶ *Id.* at 13.

¹⁹⁷ *Id.* at 13.

¹⁹⁸ *Id.* at 14.

- in their dating relationships (as hypothesized);¹⁹⁹
5. Males who score high on expressiveness (i.e., emotionality and devoting self completely to others) are more likely to initiate sexual abuse in their dating relationships (as hypothesized);²⁰⁰
 6. The relationship between a male's age and the initiation of sexual abuse in a dating relationship is nonlinear (as hypothesized);²⁰¹ and
 7. Sexual abuse is more likely to occur in more serious relationships, where greater seriousness is defined as frequent dating, many months together, and only one or few dating partners (as hypothesized).²⁰²

Pirog-Good and Stets argue that these results (and those relating to sexual violence against men in dating relationships) are best understood in terms of the issue of control.²⁰³ Furthermore, they suggest that the issue of control requires sex-specific explanations:

"Given that the sexual activity of men and women occurs in the context of different cultural standards, we suggest that men and women are sexually abusive for different reasons. In other words, while the propensity to initiate sexually abusive behavior relates to a desire to control another, the motivation underlying this desire differs for men and women."²⁰⁴

Pirog-Good and Stets suggest that men use sexual abuse "...as a way to impose their will onto their (female) partner (to control) and thus display their manhood".²⁰⁵ Women, on the other hand, are said to use sexual abuse to introduce sexuality into their heterosexual relationships. As the two researchers explain:

¹⁹⁹*Id.* at 13.

²⁰⁰*Id.* at 13-14.

²⁰¹*Id.* at 14.

²⁰²*Id.* at 14.

²⁰³*Id.* at 20.

²⁰⁴*Supra* note 186 at 14.

²⁰⁵*Supra* note 186 at 14.

"...if a woman perceives the relationship as relatively committed but has not yet engaged in sexual activity with her partner, a disjunction between her actual and desired sexual behavior exists. In response to the discrepancy between her actual and desired sexual involvement with her partner, she may become sexually aggressive in order to determine and thus control the outcome, that is, sexual activity. In this way, her feelings about the relationship and sexual activity would be more in line with one another."²⁰⁶

The researchers caution, however, that women distressed with a lack of sexuality in their relationships do not always resort to sexual abuse, and that men do not always resort to sexual abuse to prove their worth as men.²⁰⁷

Although Pirog-Good and Stets convincingly demonstrate the importance of both individual and relationship-specific characteristics in explaining and predicting sexual abuse in dating relationships, the same cannot be said of their claims that men may use sexual abuse to display their manhood or that women may use sexual abuse to introduce sexuality into their heterosexual relationships. Specifically, Pirog-Good and Stets did not directly examine motives for sexual abuse- at most, they only speculated on them. Given this state of affairs and the fact that little research has been carried out in this area, it is apparent that further research needs to be conducted before definitive pronouncements can be made on men's and women's motives for initiating sexual abuse/assault in dating relationships.

Turning from the etiology of date rape studies to the date rape attribution studies, the four major studies for the period 1983 to 1986 unequivocally support the proposition that individuals having traditional attitudes towards women are less likely than those having non-traditional attitudes to label date rape as a "real rape". Prior to being any more specific, however, it is necessary to say a few words about the first of these studies.

²⁰⁶ *Supra* note 186 at 15.

²⁰⁷ *Supra* note 186 at 15.

Check and Malamuth set out to "...examine more closely differences in people's reactions to stranger-versus acquaintance-rape situations".²⁰⁸ They conducted their study in two phases. In phase one, 289 male and female undergraduates enrolled in Introductory Psychology at the University of Manitoba completed questionnaires assessing sex role stereotyping.²⁰⁹ In phase two, they were then randomly assigned to read one of three sexually explicit depictions (mutually consenting intercourse versus stranger rape versus acquaintance rape), and were asked to indicate their sexual arousal, their perception of the depictions, and (for males) their likelihood of behaving as the man in the depiction.²¹⁰ The two researchers found that "...high sex role stereotyping individuals were more aroused to rape and perceived that the rape victim reacted more favorably to the assault than low sex role stereotyping individuals, *particularly in the case of acquaintance rape* (emphasis my own)".²¹¹ Just as fascinating, although disturbing, was their finding that "...44% of the high sex role stereotyping men, as compared to only 12% of the low sex role stereotyping men reported some likelihood of raping".²¹²

Shotland and Goodstein, specifically referring to Check and Malamuth's 1983 study above and Klemmack and Klemmack's 1976 study state:

"...there is empirical support for the contention that acquaintance rape is often not acknowledged as 'real' rape. For example, Klemmack and Klemmack (1976) report that less than 20% of a sample of adult women who read a description of an incident of forced sex on a date labelled it as rape. In addition, Check and Malamuth...found that subjects were sexually aroused to the same extent by written depictions of

²⁰⁸James V. P. Check and Neil M. Malamuth, "Sex Role Stereotyping and Reactions to Depictions of Stranger Versus Acquaintance Rape," *Journal of Personality and Social Psychology* 45 (August 1983): 345.

²⁰⁹*Id.* at 347.

²¹⁰*Id.* at 347.

²¹¹*Id.* at 350.

²¹²*Id.* at 351.

consenting sex and acquaintance rape, whereas a description of stranger rape elicited significantly less arousal."²¹³

Shotland and Goodstein then go on to ask, "What is the source of confusion concerning whether rape has occurred?"²¹⁴ In order to answer this question, and in so doing to test a model of date rape attribution, they administered questionnaires to 287 Introductory Psychology undergraduates (141 males, 146 females).²¹⁵ Each questionnaire contained a detailed description of a date in which the male used low or moderate force to obtain sexual intercourse, after the female began to protest either early, moderately, or late during foreplay. The researchers found that:

"Subjects were more likely to blame the woman and to perceive her as desiring sex with low force and late onset of protest. The man was viewed as more violent and the incident more likely to be viewed as rape when there was more force, more protest, and earlier onset. Attitudes toward women was a significant predictor of all dependent variables."²¹⁶

With regards to this last point (attitudes towards women), Shotland and Goodstein discovered that "...the greater an individual's degree of egalitarianism about women, the greater is his/her tendency to perceive the victim as not blameworthy".²¹⁷

Muehlenhard, Friedman, and Thomas similarly found that traditional men were less likely than nontraditional men to label forced sexual intercourse rape if it occurred within the context of a date, although their results did not al-

²¹³Lance R. Shotland and Lynne Goodstein. "Just Because She Doesn't Want To Doesn't Mean It's Rape: An Experimentally Based Causal Model of the Perception of Rape in a Dating Situation." *Social Psychology Quarterly* 46 (September 1983): 220.

²¹⁴*Id.* at 221.

²¹⁵*Id.* at 222.

²¹⁶*Id.* at 220.

²¹⁷*Id.* at 229.

ways reach statistical significance (i.e., .05 or less).²¹⁸ They also discovered other factors which were related to date rape attribution, but first a few words about their study. The purpose of their study was to determine the "...circumstances (which) increase the justifiability of (date) rape in men's eyes".²¹⁹ Two studies were actually conducted, both of which relied on questionnaires describing dates involving hypothetical characters. Different variables such as the initiator of the date, the payer for the date, and the dating activity were manipulated. Two hundred and sixty-eight male Introductory Psychology students were surveyed in total- 100 from the first study, 168 from the second.²²⁰ The mean age of these students was 19 years.²²¹ Muehlenhard et al. found that "... (date) rape was rated as significantly more justifiable (a) if the couple went to the man's apartment rather than to a religious function, (b) if the woman asked the man out rather than vice versa (significant in Study 1 only), and (c) if the man paid all the dating expenses rather than splitting them with the woman".²²²

In a more recent study, Fischer too found that persons having more traditional attitudes towards women were less likely than those having more liberal attitudes to label forced sexual intercourse rape if it occurred within the context of a date. She also found that those who were less rejecting of the male date rapist's behaviour had more traditional attitudes towards women, were less sure that date rape qualified as "real rape", were more inclined to support the

²¹⁸Charlene L. Muehlenhard, Debra E. Friedman, and Celeste M. Thomas, "Is Date Rape Justifiable?: The Effects of Dating Activity, Who Initiated, Who Paid, and Men's Attitudes Toward Women." *Psychology of Women Quarterly* 9 (September 1985): 297.

²¹⁹*Id.* at 298.

²²⁰*Id.* at 300.

²²¹*Id.* at 300.

²²²*Id.* at 297.

double standard of behaviour for men and women, tended to believe more rape myths, and were more likely to blame society or the situation rather than the date rapist for what happened. In Fischer's words:

"...persons scoring low on a forcible date rape scale (relatively less rejecting of the male's behaviour) are less sure that forcible date rape is really rape, have relatively more traditional attitudes toward women, are more tolerant or self-permissive of socially unapproved of sexual behavior, such as premarital sex with friends or casual acquaintances and extramarital sex (so long as it is not *their* partner), have slightly less accurate sexual knowledge (i.e., believe more common myths) and, though a large majority blame the male, are slightly more inclined than others to blame society or the situation."²²³

It should be noted that the above conclusion is based on the replies of 823 students to questionnaires administered in 1982 and 1983.²²⁴ All 823 students surveyed were enrolled in either an Introductory Psychology or Human Sexuality course.²²⁵

As far as the shortcomings of the preceding four date rape attribution studies are concerned, there are several. First, three of the four studies relied *exclusively* on Introductory Psychology students for their data. The fourth, Fischer's, relied heavily on such students for her data. Because Psychology students are probably more familiar than students in other disciplines with the specifics of survey techniques and the methods used to detect fabricated responses (such as through the use of lie scales), surveying such students may not have been wise. The specific knowledge of these students, in effect, would appear to have made them greater risks to the studies' internal validity. On the other hand: it can also be argued that these Introductory Psychology students had not yet accumulated sufficient knowledge to be able to circumvent the internal

²²³Gloria J. Fischer. "College Students Attitudes Toward Forcible Date Rape: I. Cognitive Predictors." *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 15 (December 1986): 465.

²²⁴*Id.* at 458-459.

²²⁵*Id.* at 458.

validity checks. Still, it would be preferable to not take any chances. If Psychology students must be used, internal validity checks over and above those normally employed should be used. Relying exclusively on Introductory Psychology students may also have limited the generalizability of the research findings. Although there would appear to be little reason to doubt that the results can be generalized beyond those actually participating in the research, it would be wise for future researchers to attempt to replicate the four studies' findings in both non-Psychology student and non-student populations. Second, all four studies relied exclusively on one method alone for their data- questionnaires. Multiple and different methods of data collection (interviews, experiments) and stimulus presentation (videotapes, audiotapes, and printed matter) ought to be considered as viable alternatives or additions to sole reliance on questionnaires. Otherwise, how can it be said that the results were not largely due to the type of data collection employed or stimulus presented than to other factors of interest to the individual researcher? Even if it can be said that the independent variable is associated with the dependent variable, it would be useful to know the extent to which different methods of data collection and stimulus presentation impact on that relationship. And third, not one of the four studies specifically addressed whether the probability of date rape increased as its perceived justifiability increased, although Muehlenhard et al. did suggest that future researchers address this issue. Having examined the date rape literature up to and including 1986, let us now turn our attention to the most recent of this literature- that which was published in 1987 and 1988.

An examination of the date rape literature for 1987 and 1988 reveals that researchers are devoting greater attention to four underresearched areas- date rape and the law, date rape in a national sample, date rape in specific samples such as sorority women, and date rape prevention. Because date rape and the law has been discussed in chapter three of this thesis, it will only be briefly touched on here.

There is a paucity of research on date rape and the law, particularly from an historical perspective.²²⁶ Susan Estrich, in her book *Real Rape*,²²⁷ attempted to remedy this state of affairs. In carrying out her research, she found that all women and all rapes were not being treated equally by the American criminal justice system- that date rape victims were being legally discriminated against without just cause.²²⁸ She suggested that date rape, what she refers to as "simple rape", be legally recognized and condemned. As she puts it:

"Conduct is labelled criminal 'to announce to society that these actions are not to be done and to secure that fewer of them are done'. It is time- long past time- to announce to society our condemnation of simple rape, and to enforce that condemnation 'to secure that fewer of them are done'. The message of the law to men, and to women, should be made clear. Simple rape is real rape."²²⁹

Estrich suggests that negligence liability, apparently of the inadvertent kind, is the legal route to take insofar as "criminalizing" date rape is concerned- that the law should demand that men behave "reasonably" and impose criminal pen-

²²⁶Nazife Bashar, "Rape in England Between 1550 and 1700," in *The Sexual Dynamics of History: Men's Power, Women's Resistance*, ed. London Feminist History Group (Great Britain: Photobooks, 1983), p.28.

²²⁷Susan Estrich, *Real Rape*. (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1987).

²²⁸*Id.* at 29.

²²⁹*Id.* at 104.

alties if they do not.²³⁰ She defends her choice thus: "The injury of sexual violation is sufficiently great, the need to provide that additional incentive pressing enough, to justify negligence liability for rape as for killing".²³¹

Are Estrich's comments about date rape applicable to Canada? Are Canadian date rape victims legally discriminated against by the Canadian criminal justice system? If so, is negligence liability the route to take in order to correct the problem? As previously mentioned in chapter three, the available evidence suggests that such discrimination existed in Canada prior to January 4th 1983- the day Bill C-127 became law.²³² Whether such discrimination continued to exist on a national basis after that date is difficult to say- it is simply too soon to tell and the requisite studies have yet to be carried out. Given the foregoing, it seems premature to address the issue of negligence liability at this point in time. It should be pointed out, however, that the Supreme Court of Canada explicitly rejected the notion that criminal liability for rape (now sexual assault) should be based on what a reasonable person would have done (the objective approach). According to Boyle, the Supreme Court "...decided on a subjective test (i.e., based on the accused's state of mind), *with an acknowledgement of the evidentiary relevance of the reasonableness of the belief* (emphasis my own)".²³³

²³⁰ *Id.* at 97.

²³¹ *Id.* at 98.

²³² Bill C-127 abolished the *Criminal Code* offence of forcible rape and created the three-tiered offence of sexual assault to take its place. It also wrought significant changes as far as the evidentiary rules of sexual assault were concerned. For further information, see Chapter three of this thesis.

²³³ See Christine Boyle, *Sexual Assault* (Toronto: Carswell Co., 1984), p. 78. See also *Pappajohn v. The Queen*, [1980] 2 S.C.R. 120, 52 C.C.C. (2d) 481, 14 C.R. (3d) 243 (S.C.C.). Also, see *R. v. E.H.B.* (1987), 58 C.R. (3d) 48 (S.C.C.); and *Laybourn, Bulmer and Illingworth v. The Queen*, [1987] 1 S.C.R. 782, 33 C.C.C. (3d) 385, 58 C.R. (3d) 48 (S.C.C.).

As far as the second underresearched area is concerned, that of date rape in a national sample, we must again look to the United States since comparable research has not yet been carried out in Canada. In 1984 and 1985, Koss and her team of researchers administered questionnaires to a national sample of 6,159 U.S. students enrolled in 32 institutions of higher learning.²³⁴ Of this sample, 3,187 were females and 2,972 were males.²³⁵ Eighty-five percent were single, 86% were white, and their mean age was 21.4 years.²³⁶ Although this sample overrepresented the proportion of postsecondary students in the Northeast and Southwest and seriously underrepresented those in the West, this difficulty was partially alleviated by weighting the data.²³⁷

Koss et al. found that approximately one in every four females surveyed had been the victim of a completed or attempted rape. In their words:

"...since the age of 14, 27.5% of college women report experiencing and 7.7% of college men reported perpetrating an act that met legal definitions of rape, which includes attempts."²³⁸

Excluding attempts, 489 or 15.3% of the 3,187 females reported an experience which met the legal definition of rape.²³⁹ In terms of victim-offender relationships, 52 of these 489 females were classified as stranger rape victims (10.6%), 416 were classified as acquaintance rape victims (85.1%), and 21 could not be

²³⁴Mary P. Koss, Christine A. Gidycz, and Nadine Wisniewski, "The Scope of Rape: Incidence and Prevalence of Sexual Aggression and Victimization in a National Sample of Higher Education Students," *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology* 55 (April 1987): 163. Shortly after this study was published, a book based on it was also published. See Robin Warshaw, *I Never Called It Rape: The Ms. Report on Recognizing, Fighting and Surviving Date and Acquaintance Rape* (New York: Harper and Row, 1988).

²³⁵*Id.* at 164.

²³⁶*Id.* at 164.

²³⁷*Id.* at 164-165.

²³⁸*Id.* at 168.

²³⁹*Id.* at 168.

classified due to a lack of information on their offenders (4.3%).²⁴⁰ Females who had been classified as acquaintance rape victims were then divided into four groups²⁴¹ - those who had been raped by nonromantic acquaintances such as friends, co-workers, or neighbours (122); those who had been raped by casual dates (103); those who had been raped by steady dates (147); and those who had been raped by family members such as husbands (44).

Comparing the acquaintance rapes to the stranger rapes, Koss et al. discovered that there were significant differences in the two types of crimes:

"Rapes by acquaintances, compared with strangers, were more likely to involve a single offender and multiple episodes, were less likely to be seen as rape or to be revealed to anyone, and were similar in terms of the victim's resistance. In general, acquaintance rapes were rated as less violent than stranger rapes. The exception was rapes by husbands or, other family members which were rated equally violent to stranger rapes..."²⁴²

Despite several significant differences between acquaintance and stranger rapes, no significant differences were found in *psychological symptoms* displayed by victims in the two groups. In the words of Koss et al., "...victims of stranger and acquaintance rape did not differ in their current levels of psychological symptoms which is consistent with the bulk of the literature".²⁴³ It just may be the case, however, that victims of these two groups differed in their *past* levels of psychological symptoms. It may also be the case that the way in which acquaintance rape was defined affected the results. Specifically, marital rapes were lumped together with date rapes, and neighbour rapes under the general

²⁴⁰Mary P. Koss, Thomas E. Dinero, Cynthia A. Seibel, and Susan L. Cox, "Stranger and Acquaintance Rape: Are There Differences in the Victim's Experience?," *Psychology of Women Quarterly* 12 (1988): 7.

²⁴¹*Id.* at 7.

²⁴²*Id.* at 1.

²⁴³*Id.* at 21-22.

heading of "acquaintance rape".²⁴⁴ It would be interesting to know if a narrower definition of acquaintance rape (where marital and neighbour rapes were specifically excluded) would have resulted in a different conclusion. In any event, it is clear that a comparable Canadian study needs to be carried out on a national basis to determine the extent to which the geographically close and culturally similar countries mirror one another insofar as the prevalence, incidence, and characteristics of acquaintance and stranger rape are concerned.

The third underresearched area is at the micro level of analysis. Virtually every study examining the sexual victimization of college and university students has focused on the general student population; few have focused on its subpopulations, a notable example being sorority women. As Rivera and Regoli put it:

"Although the sexual victimization of college students has received some attention, research on subpopulations within the college setting are rare. This is particularly true for sorority women."²⁴⁵

In order to help rectify this situation, Rivera and Regoli mailed out 400 questionnaires to members of 12 sororities from a large university in the southwestern United States. One hundred and seventy-four (43.5%) of these questionnaires were returned. They found that their respondents reported experiencing the following from dates: unwanted sex play with threats of physical force (5%), attempted vaginal intercourse with threats of physical force (13%), completed vaginal intercourse with threats of physical force (2%), and completed oral or anal intercourse with threats of physical force (1%). Because the researchers were conducting an exploratory study, they did not go into much detail regarding their methodology. Their discussion of their findings was similarly sparse—three lines

²⁴⁴*Id.* at 7.

²⁴⁵George F. Rivera and Robert M. Regoli, "Sexual Victimization Experiences of Sorority Women," *Sociology and Social Research* 72 (October 1987): 39.

in total. Given such omissions, it is virtually impossible to evaluate their study properly. It is clear, however, that further research needs to be conducted before the findings of Rivera and Regoli can be accepted or rejected. It is also clear that further date rape research must begin to inquire as to the incidence and prevalence of date sexual assault in specific subpopulations such as sorority women, feminists, non-feminists, first year students, graduate students, Asian women, and non-student groups, if only to better address external validity issues.

The fourth and final underresearched area covered by the date rape research for 1987 and 1988 is that of prevention. Three publications for those years, one book and two journal articles, are of special interest. Beginning with Pritchard's book *Avoiding Rape On and Off Campus*,²⁴⁶ its author is to be commended for not perpetuating the myth (as many earlier rape prevention books have) that women are most likely to be sexually attacked by strangers. Building on the correct premise that date rapes are the more likely threat to college and university students,²⁴⁷ Pritchard offers "practical suggestions" for preventing both date and stranger rapes. With respect to date rape, the prevention measures involve identification of the behavioural characteristics that date rapists are thought to have, coupled with specific self-defence techniques. Although many helpful hints are given, particularly on whether to flee, fight, or submit to a sexual attack, the book's major shortcoming is that its prevention measures are largely unresearched and untested, based, as the author freely admits, on "common sense".²⁴⁸ Without launching into a lengthy discussion of the merits of the

²⁴⁶Carol Pritchard, *Avoiding Rape On and Off Campus*, 2nd Edition (New Jersey: State College Publishing Co., 1988).

²⁴⁷*Id.* at 15.

²⁴⁸*Id.* at 2.

scientific approach, suffice it to say that science has often proved "common sense" wrong.²⁴⁹ Nevertheless, given that so little research has been conducted on date rape prevention, it would appear preferable (and perhaps fairer) to qualify the book's shortcoming as due almost entirely to the time in which the book was written and *not* to the author's lack of academic diligence.

Of the two journal articles, that by Muehlenhard and Linton looked at date rape risk factors (attitudinal and situational) as a necessary prerequisite to discussing prevention measures. In order to determine the specific risk factors for date rape, questionnaires were administered to Introductory Psychology students. Six hundred and thirty-five students were surveyed in total, of which 341 were women.²⁵⁰ The variables that were found to be risk factors were "...the man's initiating the date, paying all the expenses, and driving; miscommunication about sex; heavy alcohol or drug use; 'parking'; and men's acceptance of traditional sex roles, interpersonal violence, adversarial attitudes about relationships, and rape myths".²⁵¹ On the basis of these risk factors, Muehlenhard and Linton suggested that rape prevention programs concentrate on six areas:²⁵²

1. Increasing awareness about sexual assault in dating situations,²⁵³

²⁴⁹For example, we might still believe the myth that any healthy woman can avoid a penis being forced into her vagina if social scientists had not investigated "what everybody knows to be obvious" (that it is virtually impossible to thread a moving needle). It soon became apparent that healthy women could be sexually assaulted vaginally (as needles could be threaded) with the application of force or the belief that it would be applied.

²⁵⁰Charlene L. Muehlenhard and Melaney A. Linton, "Date Rape and Sexual Aggression in Dating Situations: Incidence and Risk Factors," *Journal of Counseling Psychology* 34 (April 1987): 188.

²⁵¹*Id.* at 186.

²⁵²*Id.* at 193-195.

²⁵³An increasing number of colleges and universities in the United States are taking steps to increase the level of their students' understanding about date rape. Date rape workshops, in particular, are beginning to gather momentum. See Diana Pace and John Zaugra, "Model of a Date Rape Workshop for College Campuses," *Journal of College Student Development* 29 (July 1988): 371-372.

2. Encouraging women to take assertiveness training;²⁵⁴
3. Making the attitudinal and situational risk factors known;
4. Encouraging women to take a more active role in dating;
5. Encouraging more direct communication about sex;²⁵⁵ and
6. Changing attitudes in both males and females regarding traditional sex roles, rape myths, violence towards women, and adversarial sexual beliefs.

In a related study focusing solely on attitudinal risk factors, Dull and Giacopassi found that "...attitudes relating to sex, dating, and date rape are strongly related, to *gender*, with males significantly more likely (than females) to hold attitudes condoning aggressive sexual behaviour".²⁵⁶ Like Muehlenhard and Linton, they suggested that rape prevention programs concentrate on changing public attitudes over the long term.²⁵⁷ Furthermore, they suggested that legal changes accompany the attitudinal ones, although they seemed unsure of the direction or form such changes should take.²⁵⁸ Dull and Giacopassi correctly recognized, however, that a great deal of research is required in the area of date rape prevention. It is to be hoped that such research will not be long in coming.

²⁵⁴In a recent study, Byers et al. discovered that "...women may decrease the likelihood of being victims of sexual aggression by being more verbally definite in refusing unwanted sexual advances". As they quite correctly point out, however, other factors (such as the man's acceptance of rape myths and level of sexual intimacy) may also influence whether a sexual assault occurs between dating partners. See E. Sandra Byers, Barbara L. Giles, and Dorothy L. Price, "Definiteness and Effectiveness of Women's Responses to Unwanted Sexual Advances: A Laboratory Investigation," *Basic and Applied Social Psychology* 8 (1987): 321.

²⁵⁵See Beverly Miller, "Date Rape: Time for a New Look at Prevention," *Journal of College Student Development* 29 (November 1988): 553-555.

²⁵⁶Thomas R. Dull and David J. Giacopassi, "Demographic Correlates of Sexual and Dating Activities: A Study of Date Rape," *Criminal Justice and Behavior* 14 (June 1987): 175.

²⁵⁷*Id.* at 190.

²⁵⁸*Id.* at 189-190.

Conclusion

From its earliest beginnings in 1957 to its latest developments in 1988, the date rape research has been examined and critiqued. Numerous suggestions for future studies have been made. Generally speaking, these suggestions have fallen into three categories- suggestions for avoiding past research mistakes (such as not relying on official data exclusively), suggestions for overcoming present and expected research obstacles (such as defining and distinguishing date rape from other types of rape), and suggestions for future research (such as date rape and the law, date rape in national and subnational or micro samples, and date rape prevention).

CHAPTER V

THE PRESENT STUDY

Introduction

The present study, dubbed the Sexual Assault Research Project (S.A.R.P.), began on November 10th, 1986, and ended five months later on April 9th, 1987. That which follows is background information to S.A.R.P.- its purpose, data collection instruments, data collection and analysis procedures, and shortcomings and limitations.

S.A.R.P.'s Purpose

The main purpose of S.A.R.P. was to inquire into the extent and nature of, and official reaction to heterosexual date rape/date sexual assault committed by males against females. Its secondary purpose was to examine the extent to which rape myth acceptance influenced two important factors: the *commission* of date sexual assault and the victim's *reporting* of such a betrayal of trust. As a precursor to making this examination, the relationship of sex role stereotyping, adversarial sexual beliefs, and acceptance of interpersonal violence to rape myth acceptance was examined. Its remaining purpose was to suggest ways in which date sexual assault might be understood, responded to, and ultimately prevented.

The Data Collection Instruments

In order to discover the specific circumstances under which date rape was likely to occur, and in so doing to test the specific relationships between the variables of interest, it was of paramount importance that the survey methods employed guarantee anonymity. Given the nature of the research topic and the fact that sensitive questions needed to be asked, it was felt that maximizing respondent anonymity would yield more open and honest responses than might otherwise be the case. As well, time constraints, ethical concerns, specific non-negotiable requirements of the University Ethics Review Committee, and economic requirements influenced the survey instruments chosen and the manner in which they were utilized. For all these reasons, the questionnaire and the interview schedule were chosen as the most appropriate survey instruments to use.¹

Two types of questionnaires were used in this study- one for females² and the other for males.³ Two questionnaires were needed because (1) the two sexes

¹The writings of Holmes and Williams also influenced the author in his decision to conduct interviews with date rape victims. Looking at pre-1979 studies of rape victims, these two researchers remark:

"...few of these studies have attempted personal interviews with the victims except immediately following the rape (in the hospital setting) or shortly thereafter. This has not only resulted in a considerable gap in knowledge and understanding of the impact of the rape experience over time, but it has provided few--if any--guidelines with regard to the methodology of research involving rape victims."

Not wishing to contribute to this "knowledge gap", the author decided to conduct personal interviews with date rape victims. For the source of the above quotation, see Karen A. Holmes and Joyce E. Williams, "Problems and Pitfalls of Rape Victim Research: An Analysis of Selected Methodological, Ethical, and Pragmatic Concerns." *Victimology: An International Journal* 4 (1979): 17.

²See Appendix B.

³See Appendix C.

were questioned on different aspects of the same topic (level of victimization versus propensity to victimize), (2) the length of the questionnaire needed to be kept down, and (3) it was felt that gender-specific questionnaires would help to avoid response bias.

Both sets of questionnaires were divided into three sections.⁴ Section one dealt with attitudes towards women, section two with attitudes towards sexual aggression, and section three with the respondents' sexual aggression experiences. Sections one and two were identical on both the "female" and "male" questionnaires, thus permitting cross-comparison of results. Section three on the "female" questionnaire asked about sexual victimization generally and with specific reference to boyfriends and dates. Section three on the "male" questionnaire asked about sexual victimization generally and with specific reference to girlfriends and dates. With the exception of a few open-ended questions on each type of questionnaire, the questions were predominantly close-ended. Multiple responses were permitted for many of the questions especially for those dealing with the respondents' sexual aggression experiences. It should also be pointed out that the "female" questionnaire asked respondents who had been sexually victimized by a boyfriend or date if they would be willing to be interviewed. Those who were willing to be interviewed were asked to give only their first names (or pseudonyms) and a phone number where they could be reached or a message left. Both questionnaires concluded by inviting additional comments, thanking respondents for their participation, and letting them know where and when they could obtain a copy of the research results.

⁴There are actually four sections to each of the two types of questionnaires if one counts the demographic section.

Accompanying, but not attached to, the two types of questionnaires were "Information Sheets" and "Subject Consent Forms". In order for potential research subjects to make a truly informed decision as to whether they wished to participate in S.A.R.P., it was felt that the possible risks and benefits of the study needed to be brought to their immediate attention. In addition, it was felt that ethical standards demanded that potential subjects be explicitly informed of their rights- their right freely to refuse to participate in the study, their right to refuse to answer questions they would rather not tackle, their right to anonymity, their right to have replies held in strictest confidence, and their right to withdraw their participation at any time. Lastly, it was felt that there should be some sort of formal procedure by which potential or actual subjects could register complaints about the study, obtain further information on it, and/or find out its results. The "Information Sheets" performed these vital functions since they educated potential subjects about the three "R's"- risks, rights, and recourse. The signed "Subject Consent Forms", of course, simply confirmed that this education had taken place.⁵

The second type of data collection instrument used in this study was the interview schedule. Two types of interview schedules were used- one for female "date rape" victims who had completed a questionnaire;⁶ the other for female "date rape" victims who *had not* completed one.⁷ The interview schedule for this

⁵In order to absolutely ensure that *all* potential subjects had been informed of the study's risks, their rights, the recourse they might take, and that they freely consented to participating in the study, two other precautions were taken. Potential subjects had the contents of the "Information Sheets" explained to them prior to being given a questionnaire. As well, the front page on both the "male" and "female" questionnaires reiterated what had been stated in the "Information Sheets", and specifically asked subjects to indicate whether or not they agreed to participate in the study.

⁶See Appendix D.

⁷See Appendix E. Female date rape victims came to the chief researcher's attention in two ways- either by indicating on the questionnaire that they would be

first group was composed primarily of "open-ended" questions in which respondents were asked to elaborate on their earlier questionnaire responses. As far as the interview schedule for the group which had not completed a questionnaire was concerned, it was identical to section three of the "female" questionnaire which asked about subjects' sexual aggression experiences. Safeguards to ensure that potential interviewees were informed of the three "R's" and that they freely consented to being interviewed differed from the safeguards used for the questionnaires only in one respect- potential interviewees had the above individually explained to them instead of having an "Information Sheet" in front of them. While it would have been desirable for those interviewed to have been furnished with an "Information Sheet", their desire to maintain their anonymity by being interviewed over the phone tended to rule out this possibility. Consent to being interviewed was, of course, orally communicated in such circumstances.

The Data Collection Procedures

Distributing questionnaires and conducting interviews were the means by which the study's data were collected. Consumers of social science research, however, need further information in order to assess properly the quality of this or any other study. They have a right to know not merely the tools which were used in a given study, but *how* those tools were used. Both the social and natural sciences are replete with examples of good research tools being misused from an ethical standpoint and/or poorly utilized from a methodological one. The purpose of this section is, therefore, to outline S.A.R.P.'s data collection procedures. To this end, the questionnaire data collection procedures will be examined

⁷(cont'd) willing to be interviewed, or by responding to a newspaper ad which had been placed in several B.C. newspapers inviting date rape victims to come forward to be interviewed.

first.

Once the study and its research instruments had been formally approved by both the author's Thesis Committee and the University Ethics Review Committee,⁸ the data collection process began. The first part of that process was pre-testing the "female" and "male" questionnaires, information sheets, and consent forms. This pre-test was done in order to identify actual and potential "problem areas" in the two questionnaires and the papers which accompanied them. Its second function was to highlight the non-substantive or *procedural* problem areas. As it turned out, changes needed to be made in both areas, particularly in the procedural area. The problem was not so much that the procedures themselves were flawed, but rather that they could not effectively be carried out by one person. This discovery led to the hiring of one, and later a second, research assistant.

Surveying through the use of the two questionnaires began on November 10th, 1986 and ended five months later on April 9th, 1987. The population surveyed was a student one. Specifically, 524 college and university undergraduates enrolled in social science courses⁹ at Fraser Valley College, Kwantlen College, Douglas College, Simon Fraser University, and the University of British Columbia were surveyed. Admittedly, this is not a representative sample of Canada's population or even the population that is to be found at B.C.'s institutions of higher learning. Even if cost and time had not been significant

⁸The author's Thesis Committee formally approved S.A.R.P. on August 7th, 1986, at which point the study was forwarded to the University Ethics Review Committee for approval. This committee, chaired by Dr. Thomas W. Calvert, formally approved the study on September 15, 1986 with the recommendation that "...an informed consent form (be) signed by all your subjects". A signed consent form was deemed desirable "(b)ecause of the sensitive nature of (the) study...".

⁹Altogether, 18 classes were surveyed. These 18 classes included both daytime and evening classes in the disciplines of Criminology, Sociology, Womens' Studies, and Communication.

barriers to obtaining a representative sample, it is doubtful that a truly representative sample could have been obtained. Time and time again, the author found that (for one reason or another) college and university faculty would not allow their students to be surveyed. This was especially true in the natural sciences. Common excuses given were (1) can't spare the time, (2) not interested in the study, (3) somebody else has already surveyed the class, and one survey is enough, (4) we only allow our faculty and our graduate students to survey our undergraduates, and (5) your study has the potential to do a lot of harm and little good for our institution. Given the above, the author decided that the next best course of action would be to concentrate on those disciplines which seemed most receptive to allowing their students to be surveyed. The limitations and possibly biasing effects of this approach will be discussed later in the "Shortcomings and Limitations of the Data" section of this chapter.

How were the questionnaires distributed in the 18 classes? Generally speaking, the author (and one or two research assistants if class size demanded it) would arrive 10-15 minutes early to survey a given class. Arriving early allowed time to locate the classroom, contact the instructor, and prepare for the task at hand without feeling unduly rushed. When the appointed time arrived, the author was introduced to the class and permitted to say a few words about his study and participation in it. Not wanting to bias the results in any way, the author did not go into specific details- he simply stated that he was doing a study on sexual aggression. He also let students know that their participation in the study was purely voluntary, that some of the questions might cause them discomfort, that they did not have to answer any questions they did not want to, that they could discontinue participation at any time, that their replies would be held in strictest confidence, that the consent forms would be kept

entirely separate from the questionnaires, that there was a number they could call for further information or to register a complaint, and that all participants could have a free copy of the results of the study if they wanted one. While the author was speaking, his research assistant or assistants (depending on class size) would be handing out the "Information Sheets" and "Consent Forms".

The author concluded his brief opening remarks by letting students know that it took approximately 20-30 minutes to complete a questionnaire, and that students who did not wish to participate could take a break for that period of time. After asking if there were any questions, the author and his research assistant(s) divided the two types of questionnaires among themselves. Only those students who signed consent forms received a questionnaire, and then only the one appropriate to his or her gender. After the students had completed their respective questionnaires and turned them in, the author thanked them for their participation (as well as the instructor for allowing him to survey the class), reminded them that they were welcome to a free copy of the results, and then removed the completed questionnaires and consent forms to a secure place for data entry and analysis.¹⁰

¹⁰It should be noted that students in seven of the 18 classes were permitted to complete the questionnaires *outside* of the classroom setting. On such occasions, the questionnaires were imprinted with a mark prior to being distributed that would identify the class they originated from so that the exact response rate could be calculated. Under no circumstances were individual identifying marks used. Students who were permitted to complete the questionnaires outside of class were instructed to return them in one of two ways: either drop them into the School of Criminology's Security Deposit Box, or bring them to class the next week for pick up.

The average or mean questionnaire response rate for these seven classes was 24%, the lowest being 13% and the highest 56%. Broken down by gender, it was discovered that the females returned a greater percentage of questionnaires-28% being their mean compared with one of 18% for the males. These response rates, as would be expected, pale in comparison to those for questionnaires turned in during class. The response rate for questionnaires completed in class was 96%. The implication of (1) allowing students in some of the classes to complete their questionnaires outside of the classroom setting, and (2) the vastly

The interview data collection procedures were similar in many respects to the questionnaire data collection procedures. Just as the two types of questionnaires were pre-tested, so too were the two types of interview schedules. The ethical aspects of the procedures also remained the same for both types of data collection. Specifically, minors were excluded from the study, informed consent was obtained from all subjects, individual responses were held in strictest confidence, and so on. Still, despite these similarities, there were significant procedural differences in the two types of data collection.

The reader may recall that two types of interview schedules were utilized—one for female "date rape" victims who had completed a questionnaire, the other for female "date rape" victims who had *not* completed one. Those who had completed a questionnaire and who were willing to be interviewed were asked to give only their first names (or pseudonyms) and a phone number where they could be reached or a message left. As well, they were asked to specify when it would be best to contact them, and whether they preferred to be interviewed over the phone, in person, or through either medium. Those who had *not* had the opportunity to complete a questionnaire came to the author's attention through the use of classified advertising. More specifically, the following request was placed in the "Information Wanted" sections of twelve B.C. newspapers:

"Have you or a friend experienced any unwanted sexual contact while dating or in a relationship with a boyfriend? We would appreciate being able to talk with you. We are researching this area, and hope to create resources for women in dating relationships. Please call the S.F.U. Criminology Research Centre at 291-4127 between 8:30-4:30 weekdays to set up a TELEPHONE interview with either Karen or Cindy. All interviews will be kept strictly confidential."

This request appeared numerous times on both weekends and weekdays between

¹⁰(cont'd) differing response rates between "in-class questionnaire completion" and "out-of-class questionnaire completion" will be discussed in the "Shortcomings and Limitations of the Data" section of this chapter.

November 10th, 1986 and April 9th, 1987 in the Vancouver Sun, the Province, the West Ender, the East Ender, the Peak, the Ubysey, the Surrey Leader, the North Delta Sentinel, the Buy 'n Sell, the Coquitlam Now, the Westside Week, and the Richmond Review. It should also be noted that one of the two interviewers in the classified request (Cindy) was unable for personal reasons to carry out her duties. She was replaced by Sharlene, but the request continued to mention the name Cindy.¹¹

When women phoned in as a result of seeing or hearing the request in the papers, they were sometimes interviewed immediately. More often, however, they were asked by the secretary in the Criminology Research Centre to leave their first name or a pseudonym, their phone number, and the best time to return their call. This information was immediately recorded in the "Redbook", dated, and (where necessary) commented upon. They were then told that their call would be returned at the time they had suggested. Those in need of support services were referred to the appropriate agencies. These agencies included the Rape Crisis Centre, Vancouver Rape Relief, Battered Women's Support Services, and the Criminal Injuries Compensation branch of the W.C.B.

Karen and Sharlene were thoroughly briefed on the author's research, given a specially-prepared manual (the S.A.R.P. Overview Book) to read, told what their specific tasks would be, informed of their ethical responsibilities, and

¹¹Two reasons account for not changing the name Cindy to Sharlene in the classified request. First, it was felt that changing one of the names in the request would achieve little and that it could possibly cause those who might notice such a change not to respond. And secondly, because women would call the Research Centre and ask to speak with either Karen or Cindy without identifying themselves or saying why they were calling, the names Karen and Cindy became an "instant tipoff" that the caller was responding to the classified request. Changing the name from Cindy to Sharlene would have only created confusion, and perhaps even prompted callers to inquire as to why Cindy was gone, thus using up valuable time that would be better spent interviewing them about their victimization experiences.

trained in how to conduct an interview properly. As well, it was suggested that they make use of the "Pass On Book" to document and communicate any difficulties they encountered in carrying out their research duties. The reason for insisting that they detail any problems they encountered *prior* to speaking with the author was to ensure that an accurate record was available of both S.A.R.P.'s pitfalls and successes. Finally, these two research assistants were supplied with the interview schedules and the necessary information for contacting the women they would interview such as their first names, phone numbers, and the best time to call.

At the start of each interview, whether or not the person had already completed a questionnaire, Karen, Sharlene, or the author would inform the interviewee of her specific rights. These rights included the right to refuse to answer any questions, the right to withdraw her participation at any time, the right to have her answers held in strict confidence, the right to know who the project director was, the right to register a complaint about the study or the interviewer, and the right to have her questions answered in a forthright and honest manner insofar as they related to her participation in the study. Only when the interviewee had been apprised of her rights and given her informed consent to being interviewed could the interview actually begin. For those who had already completed a questionnaire, the interview chiefly consisted of asking the interviewees to *elaborate* on their earlier questionnaire responses. In order to ensure that the earlier responses had not been fabricated, these interviewees were asked several of the same questions they had previously answered. If the responses did not match, the interview was politely terminated. For those who had not already completed a questionnaire (that is, responded because they had seen or heard of the classified request), the interview consisted of asking the

interviewees the same questions which had been asked subjects on section three of the female questionnaire. These questions were all concerned with the unwanted sexual aggression experience itself.

After the interview was substantially complete, the interviewer asked the interviewee if she had any questions and if she wanted to add anything to what she had already said. Many times, the women did have questions and wished to elaborate on what they had said. When there were no further questions or comments, the interviewer thanked the woman for participating and reminded her that she was welcome to a free copy of the results of the study. Once the interviewer hung up the phone or otherwise concluded the interview, she or he then completed the interview schedule's face sheet. This face sheet asked for the date of the interview, the name of the interviewer, the type of interview (phone or face-to-face), the name of the interviewee, the phone number of the interviewee, the time the interview began and ended, the interviewer's impression as to the interviewee's truthfulness, the interviewer's comments, and the signature of the interviewer. The completed interview schedule was then removed to a secure place and delivered as soon as possible to the project director.

How the Data were Processed and Analyzed

In order to process and analyze the 12,551 pages of data that were collected from the 524 completed questionnaires and 46 concluded interviews, it was necessary to first sort out the questionnaires and interview schedules. All the "female" questionnaires were placed in one pile and the "male" questionnaires in another. Beginning with the "female" questionnaires, identification numbers were then assigned to each questionnaire. These numbers went from

001 to 524. The interview schedules were also divided into two separate piles (completed questionnaire, did not complete questionnaire) and, beginning with the former category, were assigned alphanumeric identification symbols. These symbols went from I01 to I46. Complete records were, of course, kept on the specific classes from which the questionnaires originated. Complete records were also kept concerning which interview schedule matched which name or pseudonym. Since these records are confidential, they are not revealed here or elsewhere.

Once the completed questionnaires and interview schedules had been received, recorded, sorted, and assigned identification numbers/symbols, each was sight-edited to ascertain if it was acceptable for processing. Questionnaires or interview schedules lacking large chunks of information or evidencing response irregularities were deemed to be unacceptable for processing. Once this hurdle was overcome, data in the "Other (please specify)" response categories was postcoded. This step necessitated the expanding of the Codebook. The Codebook, of course, simply contained the response categories and the numbers which corresponded to them. For example, male respondents were coded as "01" and female respondents as "02".

Following post-coding, the data from the questionnaires and interview schedules were transferred to four computer "datafiles"- one for the "female" questionnaire data, one for the "male" questionnaire data, one for the type 1 interview schedule data, and one for the type 2 interview schedule data. This data transfer simply consisted of transcribing the appropriate response category codes from the data collection instruments to the correct computer datafile. Fortunately, the author shared this task with his hard-working research assistants. Along with the creation of the four datafiles went the creation of four "command files". These command files defined the data in the data files (such as what certain

numbers meant) and told the computer what to do with the data (calculate frequencies, percentages, and so on).

Prior to processing the data electronically, it was necessary that the data filed in the computer be process-edited. Process-editing, simply means to check the data to ensure that they have been entered correctly. Each separate entry in the computer datafiles was checked at least once. Inconsistencies or ambiguities in either the data or its placement in the datafiles were recorded in the "S.A.R.P. Data Entry Book" for later correction.

Once the data in the four computer datafiles had been process-edited, they were ready to be processed. According to Alreck and Settle, the "...primary purpose of data processing is to *summarize* the data into information".¹² This is accomplished by "...suppress(ing) the detail..." so that "...important and meaningful patterns and relationships contained in the data..." might be revealed.¹³ The data in the four computer files were processed using SPSSx. Some of the arithmetic and statistical operations performed included the calculation of means, medians, modes, frequencies, percentages, crosstabulations, chi-squares, *et cetera*.

In processing data electronically, it is all too easy to become so enmeshed in the numbers that one loses sight of the fact that those numbers represent human beings. In the case of date rape, many of those numbers represent both past and present suffering of human beings. To compensate for this phenomenon and to give the numbers "flavour", data from the open-ended questions are *not* coded. Instead, responses to these questions are reproduced verbatim in the text so that readers may understand better the individuals behind the numbers. This

¹²Pamela L. Alreck and Robert B. Settle. *The Survey Research Handbook* (Illinois: Richard D. Irwin, 1985). p.271.

¹³*Ibid.*

is not meant to imply that uncoded data expressed in a respondent's own words is superior to coded data or vice versa; rather, the two types of data are best seen as *complementing* one another.

Shortcomings and Limitations of the Data

In detailing the shortcomings and limitations of the data, the questionnaire data will be dealt with first followed by the interview data.

The shortcomings and limitations of the questionnaire data can, for the most part, be found in the shortcomings and limitations of the two types of questionnaires and the manner in which they were employed. This is due to the inescapable fact that the questionnaire data are the *product* of these research tools and their actual use. As far as the questionnaires themselves are concerned, the reader will notice that both the "female" and "male" questionnaires invited constructive criticism from their respondents. "In the remaining space you are welcome to add any comments that you wish to make about either this questionnaire..." was the specific form this invitation took. Generally speaking, the comments were quite positive and the criticisms constructive. Content analyzing these criticisms showed that they fell into five distinct categories- those pertaining to the term "unwanted male sexual aggression", those pertaining to the wording of certain questions, those pertaining to the perceived restrictiveness of certain questions, those pertaining to the alleged non-exhaustiveness of certain response categories, and those pertaining to areas not addressed or allegedly poorly addressed by the survey.

With specific reference to the term "unwanted male sexual aggression", three of the 261 female respondents indicated that they found the term

ambiguous. As one respondent explained:

"I found the use of the word 'sexual aggression' quite ambiguous. If it is meant in the context of any forced behaviour upon a female, I would find it difficult to relate my experiences. I do not feel if a male holds hands, hugs or kisses me against my wishes that he is being 'sexually aggressive'. Particularly if I immediately indicate my displeasure in his actions. A female could be just as likely to hold a man's hand or kiss him or hug him when it was not what he really wanted. I think the definition of 'sexual aggression' may be different for other females". (No. *038)

This respondent is correct in her belief that the definition of sexual aggression varies from female to female, indeed from person to person. Behaviour which may qualify as unwanted male sexual aggression for one person may not qualify as such for another. As the author's 1985 pilot study of date rape conclusively demonstrated, it is methodologically unwise to ask about specific forms of behaviour using unclear labels such as rape, sexual assault, and sexual aggression. The reason it is unwise is because similarly victimized individuals may answer questions pertaining to their actual victimization quite differently owing solely to their different definitions of the phenomenon. For example, two married women may have been sexually victimized in an almost identical manner- each husband forced his wife to engage in vaginal intercourse with him. Asking these women "Have you ever been raped?" may produce a "yes" from one and a "no" from the other. It is not that one of the women is lying. It just may be that she believes the marriage contract gives her husband the right to sex from her whenever he wants it. Or, she might consider his conduct "disgusting" but stop short of labelling it rape. After all, who wants to be married to a rapist? Similarly, two females whose boyfriends penetrated them anally against their will may respond differently to the rape question. One may insist that she was raped. The other may just as honestly say that she was not. Again, it is not that the female who denied being raped is lying. She may just happen to define rape as penetration of a specific orifice (the vagina) by a specific instrument

(the penis). Any other combination and it is not rape in her mind. But if the labels "rape", "sexual assault", and "unwanted male sexual aggression" take on different meanings for different respondents, how can a researcher ensure that similarity of sexual victimization will be reflected in similarity of answers? The solution would seem to be simple- just define the term be it "rape", "sexual assault", or "unwanted male sexual aggression".¹⁴ A better solution, however, suggests itself. Instead of defining a label, why not just ask about the *specific forms* of the behaviour that you are interested in? In other words, instead of asking, "Have you ever been raped?", why not ask if the respondent has ever had her boyfriend's penis placed in her vagina against her wishes? In fact, this is exactly the route the author chose to take in his research. He deliberately left the term "unwanted male sexual aggression" undefined in his survey instruments, preferring instead to ask about the specific forms of the behaviour he was interested in.

As far as the wording of certain questions was concerned, specifically that some questions were allegedly poorly worded, the author finds that this was indeed the case. Question 12 on both the "female" and "male" questionnaires should have used a word other than "henpecked" which several respondents did not understand. Other colloquialisms such as "roughed up" (question 20), "loose" (question 21), and "frigid" (question 23) should also not have been used. In his own defence, however, the author would like to point out that it was not he who drafted these specific scale items. Rather, he obtained written permission from Dr. Martha Burt to reproduce her scale items. Still, the author assumes

¹⁴One methodological problem with defining the term used, be it "rape", "sexual assault", or "unwanted male sexual aggression" is that some research participants may not agree with your definition. Consequently, they may refuse to participate. The end result is that one's research results may be seriously biased in favor of those participants who agree with the researcher's definition of the phenomenon in question.

full responsibility for including the scale items he did in his questionnaires.

The third criticism respondents made was that certain questions were too restrictive. Questions three and seven tended to be cited as fitting this description. Both were Likert scale items. The first stated "A woman should be a virgin when she marries" and the second "A man should be a virgin when he marries". As the respondents quite correctly pointed out, the restrictiveness of these statements would almost certainly lead to "forced" responses and/or a high incidence of "Don't Know" responses.

Regarding the alleged non-exhaustiveness of certain unspecified response categories, the author does not feel that this is a valid criticism. Having re-examined every single response category on both sets of questionnaires, he finds them to be both mutually exclusive and exhaustive.

Finally, there were a number of criticisms pertaining to areas not addressed or allegedly poorly addressed by the two types of questionnaires. Instead of focusing exclusively on the phenomenon of date rape among heterosexuals, several respondents thought that the questions should have also delved into incest, stranger rape, and date rape among homosexuals. While these are all topics worthy of greater academic attention, the preferable approach would appear to involve doing an in-depth analysis of a specific type of sexual assault (in this case heterosexual date rape) as opposed to a brief overview of several kinds of sexual assault. Several respondents also felt that the questionnaires should not have been as "explicit" as they were, evidently believing that such explicitness would result in reduced participation. If by explicit these respondents meant describing specific types of sexual behaviour such as forced vaginal intercourse, fellatio, and cunnilingus instead of relying on their labels, then the

author is certainly guilty of being explicit. Contrary to their fears, however, this explicitness does not appear to have had an appreciable influence on those completing the questionnaires *in class* as evidenced by a 96% participation rate. This explicitness may, however, partially account for those completing the questionnaires *outside of class* having a much lower response rate. Nevertheless, it would appear preferable to be explicit if it serves to reduce confusion and thereby increase the quality of responses than to be vague so that the response rate will be higher.

Respondents also had definite ideas about the circumstances under which the questionnaires were distributed. Several seemed to think that the questionnaires should not have been distributed in class since very personal questions were asked. It was suggested instead that the questionnaires should have been mailed. To put it bluntly, the desire to obtain a large sample of students in an efficient, reasonably quick, and relatively inexpensive manner severely limited the author's data gathering options. Mailing out the questionnaires would have been prohibitively expensive and probably would not have been cost-effective. Return rates of 50% for mail-out questionnaires are considered good.¹⁵ Often times, response rates are more like 30% or even less.¹⁶ The end result was that, as problematic as distributing the questionnaires in classes was, it was considered to be the most efficient, quickest, and inexpensive way of collecting the data. Given the fact that students were given the option of non-participation (and in seven of the 18 classes surveyed the option of completing their questionnaires outside of class), the decision to proceed to gather the data in this manner does not appear to have been an unreasonable one.

¹⁵Pamela L. Alreck and Robert B. Settle, *The Survey Research Handbook* (Illinois: Richard D. Irwin, 1985), p.45.

¹⁶*Ibid.*

What of the decision to allow students in seven of the 18 classes to complete their questionnaires outside of class? Was it reasonable? Did it present any methodological difficulties? If so, how were such difficulties resolved? Initially, it had been the author's intention to distribute questionnaires to all 18 classes, remain at those classes until the questionnaires had been completed, and then to collect up the completed questionnaires. Time constraints of certain teaching staff, unfortunately, soon ruled out this possibility. Thus, a major decision had to be made- either replace the seven classes, where the available time simply did not allow for the questionnaires to be completed during class, or allow the questionnaires to be distributed in these seven classes but completed outside of it. Replacing the seven classes would have been the easiest route to take. Certainly, such action would have made analyzing such data a much easier task. So why did the author choose to keep the original seven classes, knowing full well that it would make his task of data analysis that much more difficult? Generally speaking, he wanted to see how the response rates would differ, and by how much, between questionnaires completed in class and those completed outside of class. He wanted to see what similarities might remain in questionnaires returned under these two types of conditions. And finally, he was particularly interested in any differences which might show up in questionnaires returned under these two conditions. For example, would date rape victims be more likely to return their questionnaires given the "in class" or "out of class" condition? Also, would questionnaires completed outside of class and returned tend to be filled with longer responses for the open-ended questions than questionnaires completed in class? The answers to these questions would help enormously in the overall interpretation of the data. As well, they would prove useful to future researchers of date rape by suggesting how such research might be carried out more effectively.

As expected, the response rate for the questionnaires completed outside of class (110 out of a possible 362) was substantially lower than for those completed in class (414 out of a possible 430). The average or mean response rate for the questionnaires completed *outside* of class was 30.4% compared to one of 96.3% for those completed *in* class. At this point, the question arose as to whether to combine the "outside-of-class" data with the "in-class" data or whether to keep such data separate. Deciding that he lacked sufficient information to make an informed decision but feeling uncomfortable with combining "low response rate data" with "high response rate data", he consulted *The Survey Research Handbook*.¹⁷ Its authors, Alreck and Settle, supplied an indirect answer by explaining one of the problems which could result from relying on low response rate data:

"...the most important consequence of a low...response rate is the non-response bias that is likely to result. If respondents *randomly* complete or fail to complete and return the questionnaire, there will be *no* non-response bias, but that is seldom the case. Usually the person's characteristics, attitudes, opinions, and interest in the topic determine, in part, whether or not a questionnaire recipient will complete and return it or discard it. Thus, some groups tend to be *overrepresented* and others *underrepresented* in the sample received, creating biased results."¹⁸

It logically follows, then, that if some groups are overrepresented and others underrepresented in a given sample that adding that sample to another largely lacking such a problem will itself create biased results. However, if a sample is relatively free of non-response bias,¹⁹ then a better argument could be made for combining it with a sample of similar quality. In order to make this determination, however, one must know if there is a non-response bias and, if so, the degree of the bias. The beginning of the following chapter deals with these issues

¹⁷*Infra* note 18.

¹⁸Pamela L. Alreck and Robert B. Settle, *The Survey Research Handbook* (Illinois: Richard D. Irwin, 1985), p.45.

¹⁹The opposite of non-response bias is volunteer bias.

to answer the question, "Should the in-class data be combined with the out-of-class data?"

Prior to detailing the shortcomings and limitations of the interview data, a final issue regarding the questionnaire data must be addressed- that of generalizability. How generalizable are the questionnaire-data-based results? As previously mentioned, 524 college and university undergraduates enrolled in social science courses at Fraser Valley College, Kwantlen College, Douglas College, Simon Fraser University, and the University of British Columbia were surveyed. Admittedly, this is not a representative sample of Canada's population or even the population that is to be found at B.C.'s institutions of higher learning. This lack of representativeness, however, does not mean that the results of the study are therefore low in external validity. As Palys quite correctly points out, "...external validity does *not* depend on the representativeness of the sample per se, but rather on the nature of the phenomenon with which one is dealing, and...on the research objectives to which one subscribes".²⁰ In deciding the extent to which one's study has external validity, one can begin by asking "How are the individuals in my sample different from other individuals and groups I might want to generalize to?"²¹ Though by no means an exhaustive list, it would appear that the variables of age, educational level, and attitude (whether liberal or conservative) are the most important as far as external validity is concerned. University and college students, particularly those in their late teens and early twenties, are in a high frequency dating period of their lives. This higher frequency of dating may well be reflected in the actual victimization rates and/or circumstances under which such victimization takes place. As well, the higher

²⁰Ted Palys, *Criminology 120 Study Guide: Research Methods in Criminology* (Burnaby: Simon Fraser University, 1986), p.78.

²¹Dr. Ted Palys suggested this question in a telephone conversation with the author during the month of April 1988.

educational levels of university and college students may similarly have affected the study's results. As a consequence of their higher education, students might be more sensitized to so-called "women's issues" such as date rape. Such sensitization might have led to increased reporting of the crime. However, it can also be argued that the increased likelihood of students to report their victimization via questionnaire might have been counterbalanced by, for some of the students, having to fill out the questionnaires in the non-private setting of a classroom. Finally; higher education has been shown to have a liberalizing effect on individuals' social and political attitudes.²² Assuming that this relationship holds as true for the 1980's as it did for the 1960's, it may be that these more liberal attitudes might account for some of this study's findings, particularly as they pertain to the propensity of certain males to sexually assault and otherwise mistreat females. Given these and other factors, it would seem wise to err on the side of possibly undergeneralizing than overgeneralizing. For these reasons, the author would caution the reader not to generalize the results flowing from the questionnaire data to groups other than B.C. post-secondary students. Having looked at the shortcomings and limitations of the questionnaire data, let us now focus our attention on the interview data.

The shortcomings and limitations of the interview data can, for the most part, be found in the methods used to recruit the research participants and the methods used to interview them. The reader will remember that only females who had been sexually victimized by *boyfriends or dates* were interviewed. S/he will also remember that they were recruited in two ways- through the questionnaires and through classified advertising. Several points need to be made about each of these "recruitment strategies". The first is that *only students* could be

²²Kenneth A. Feldman and Theodore M. Newcomb, *The Impact of College on Students, Volume II: Summary Tables* (San Francisco: Jossey-Bass, 1969), p.24.

recruited through the questionnaires because they were administered inside classrooms.²³ Secondly, students lacking phones or acceptable places where phone messages could be left would most likely miss being selected for an interview. Thus, as far as the questionnaire recruitment strategy was concerned, it would only represent students, particularly those with regular and predictable access to specific phones. The second recruitment strategy, that of classified advertising, was employed partially to offset the student bias resulting from the first strategy. Unlike the questionnaire strategy, classified advertising allowed a much wider range of sexually victimized females to respond. They did not need to be students in order to respond, nor did they need to reside in the Lower Mainland; each simply needed to have been sexually victimized by a boyfriend or date, 19 years of age or older, and living in B.C. Still, this strategy did have its flaws. Specifically, the use of classified advertising to recruit research participants would underrepresent those lacking basic literacy skills (i.e., those who could not read), immigrants or those unfamiliar with the English language, and those who were legally blind or who had great difficulty reading print. As well, this strategy would underrepresent those of limited means who could not afford to purchase papers or make phone calls. With respect to this latter point, the author neglected to mention in his classified requests that calls to the Criminology Research Centre could be made *collect* from within B.C. In retrospect, this was a serious omission since callers from the Interior of the province tended to be underrepresented in the interview data.

As far as the interviews themselves were concerned, 45 of the 46 were carried out using the telephone. Only one was carried out person-to-person. As

²³It was theoretically possible for the faculty member teaching the particular course to be recruited through the questionnaire, but this event does not appear to have taken place.

Bailey points out in *Methods of Social Research*, one of the primary limitations of using the telephone to conduct interviews is that the interviewer is unable to actually observe the respondent.²⁴ Thus, it was not possible to gather nonverbal data for 98% of the interviews conducted. As well, the interviewers had minimal control over the environment. It would have been helpful if the interviewing environment could have been standardized or even altered. Often times and despite calling when suggested, the interviewers had to call back several times before the interviews could even begin. Babies were either crying, the children were underfoot, or adults were present, some or all of which prevented the women from being interviewed at that time.

As was the case with the questionnaire data, the author had to decide whether to combine the two types of interview data or whether to keep both separate. This decision was a relatively simple one to make. Owing to the fact that only students were recruited in one sample but not the other and that *different* questions were asked of these two groups, the author decided that the logical and best course of action was *not* to combine the data.

Finally, it should be pointed out that neither of the two groups interviewed is a representative sample of females who have been sexually victimized by boyfriends or dates. Furthermore, each of the two samples is rather small. Only 22 females were interviewed after completing questionnaires and only 24 after responding to the classified requests. With reference to this last point, even if the two samples were representative, their small size would present a problem— as sample size decreases, sampling error increases.²⁵ Because neither sample is

²⁴ Kenneth D. Bailey, *Methods of Social Research (Second edition)* (New York: The Free Press, 1982), p.208.

²⁵ William D. Crano and Marilyn B. Brewer, *Principles and Methods of Social Research* (Massachusetts: Allyn and Bacon, 1986), p.195.

representative, however, the issue of sample size need only concern us as it relates to the issue of external validity. Generally speaking, the smaller the sample size, the greater the reluctance should be to generalize to the population at large. For this reason, the author would caution the reader not to generalize the results flowing from the interview data beyond that of the study itself. Having examined the shortcomings and limitations of both the questionnaire and the interview data, let us now turn our attention to the next chapter which details some of the study's major findings.

CHAPTER VI

RESULTS

Introduction

The purpose of this chapter is to present S.A.R.P.'s major findings. The extent, nature, and official reaction to date sexual assault committed by males against females constitute approximately 75% of the findings' subject matter. The remaining 25% deals with two separate issues- the relationship of sex-role stereotyping, adversarial sexual beliefs, and acceptance of interpersonal violence to rape myth acceptance; and the relationship of rape myth acceptance to both the commission and reporting of date sexual assault. Specific examination or detailed discussion of the study's findings will not be found in this chapter- rather, that purpose will be the exclusive preserve of Chapter VII.

This chapter is divided into eight sections- the in-class and out-of-class conditions; the sample; the prevalence and nature of date sexual assault; the offenders; the victims; the criminal justice system response; the relationship of sex-role stereotyping, adversarial sexual beliefs, and acceptance of interpersonal violence to rape myth acceptance; and the relationship of rape myth acceptance to (1) the *commission* of date sexual assault, and (2) the *reporting* of date sexual assault. With respect to the section titled "The Victims", the results for both the "questionnaire completers" and the "interviewees" will be presented.

The In-Class and Out-of-Class Conditions

As the previous chapter pointed out, the questionnaires were completed under two conditions- those completed "in-class" and those completed "outside-of-class". Based on the original sample of 524, questionnaires completed in-class had a response rate of 96.3%.¹ Questionnaires completed outside-of-class had a much poorer response rate, namely that of 30.4%.² Of the 514 respondents in the revised or final sample, 404 or 78.6% completed their questionnaires in-class; the remainder (110 or 21.4%) completed their questionnaires outside-of-class. Broken down by gender, Table 6.1 shows that 184 or 72.4% of the 254 females completed their questionnaires in-class compared with 70 or 27.6% who did not. For the 260 males, 220 or 84.6% completed their questionnaires in-class. Forty or 15.4% completed their questionnaires outside-of-class.

Examining the out-of-class or low response rate data, the author found there to be non-response biases along the lines of both gender and sexual victimization. Specifically, females tended to be overrepresented by the data, 34.0% of them returned their questionnaires compared with only 25.6% of the males.³ As far as sexual victimization is concerned, females who have experienced sexual victimization are also overrepresented by the out-of-class data, particularly when their aggressor was a boyfriend or date. When asked on question 41 if they had ever experienced any "unwanted male sexual aggression", 49 of

¹Four hundred and fourteen out of a possible 430 questionnaires were completed in-class.

²One hundred and ten out of a possible 362 questionnaires were completed outside-of-class.

³Seventy females out of a possible 206 completed questionnaires outside-of-class. Forty males out of a possible 156 also completed questionnaires outside-of-class. This translates into 110 out of a possible 362 questionnaires being completed outside-of-class.

Table 6.1
Crosstabulation of Condition Questionnaires
Completed Under by Sex

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
Condition Completed Under						
In-Class	220	84.6%	184	72.4%	404	78.6%
Out-of-Class	40	15.4%	70	27.6%	110	21.4%
Total	260	100.0%	254	100.0%	514	100.0%

the 70 females who had completed the questionnaire outside-of-class responded affirmatively (70.0%). In contrast, only 126 of the 184 females who had completed the questionnaires in-class responded in the same manner (68.5%). This is a 1.5% difference in the two groups. An even greater difference was obtained for question 43 which asked females if they had experienced "unwanted male sexual aggression from a boyfriend or date?" Thirty-five of the 70 females in the former category responded that they had experienced such form of unwanted sexual aggression (50.0%), whereas only 80 of the 184 females in the second category answered the same (43.5%).⁴ In this case, the difference is 6.5%.

Because non-response biases are evident in the out-of-class data, it can be argued that the out-of-class data should *not* be combined with the in-class data because it would distort the results. The results for question 41 and 43 would be *inflated* by 0.4% and 1.8% respectively.⁵ On the other hand, it can be argued that the out-of-class data should be combined with the in-class data because not all of the results will be distorted, and that distortion (when it occurs) will be minimal.

⁴It should be noted that these frequencies and percentages include boyfriends living with their girlfriends in common-law and marital relationships. Because sexual assaults in these relationships are more accurately seen as "marital rapes/sexual assaults" as opposed to "date rapes/sexual assaults", they are not included in this study's actual analysis of date sexual assault.

⁵*Ibid.*

The approach which the author has decided to take is to present all three types of results- those based on the in-class data, the out-of-class data, and the combined data. By simply glancing at each of the tables, one will be able to see how the in-class data compare to the out-of-class data, and what the outcome would be if the two data sets were combined. In terms of which data set is to be used for the writing up of the results, the author has decided that it would be preferable to rely *exclusively on the in-class data* rather than to combine it with the out-of-class data. As a perusal of the tables will show, combining the two data sets tends unacceptably to distort the present study's findings, unacceptable distortion being defined as inflating or deflating the in-class data by more than 1% in at least one tenth of the tables.

The Sample

If Only the In-Class Data are Used

Five hundred and twenty-four college and university undergraduates enrolled in social science courses at Fraser Valley College, Kwantlen College, Douglas College, Simon Fraser University, and the University of British Columbia were surveyed through the use of gender-specific questionnaires between November 10th, 1986 and April 9th, 1987. Owing to a number of factors such as not giving written consent, incompleteness, and response irregularities, the sample was reduced to 514 (404 in-class, 110 out-of-class).

Of the 404 students who completed their questionnaires in-class, 220 or 54.5% were male and 184 or 45.5% were female (See Table 6.1). They ranged in age from 18 to 43, their mean age being 22.3 years (See Table 6.2). As Tables 6.3, 6.4, and 6.5 show, most were single (83.4%), white (82.2%), and had

a minimum of a high school education (98.8%). Concerning sexual orientation, it can be seen from Table 6.6 that only 80.1% of the in-class sample (mostly males) answered this question.⁶ Of the 326 or 80.7% who answered the sexual orientation, 97.2% were heterosexual, 0.6% were homosexual, 1.8% were bisexual, and 0.3% (one individual) was unsure of her sexual preference.

If Only the Out-of-Class Data are Used

Of the 110 students who completed their questionnaires out-of-class, the females outnumbered the males almost 2:1. Specifically, 70 or 63.6% were female and 40 or 36.4% were male.⁷ They ranged in age from 18 to 57, their mean age being 22.6 years.⁸ As was the case with the in-class sample, the out-of-class sample was predominantly single (87.3%),⁹ white (81.8%),¹⁰ and had at least a high school education (100%).¹¹ Similarly, of the 83 or 75.5% who answered the sexual orientation question, most (92.8%) were heterosexual. The remainder were either homosexual (3.6%) or bisexual (3.6%).¹²

⁶The methodologically unwise placement of the sexual orientation question in the female questionnaire is largely to blame for that question receiving a disappointing response rate, *not* a reluctance on the part of females to answer that question. Had that question not been incorrectly sandwiched in among questions which only pertained to date sexual assault victims, it seems likely that at least 90% of females in the in-class sample would have answered the question (based on the fact that 99.1% of the in-class males and 100% of the out-of-class males answered the question).

⁷See Table 6.1.

⁸See Table 6.2.

⁹See Table 6.3.

¹⁰See Table 6.4.

¹¹See Table 6.5.

¹²See Table 6.6.

Table 6.2
Crosstabulation of Age of Respondents by Sex

Condition Completed
Under
In-Class

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
Age						
18-20 years	106	48.2%	82	44.6%	188	46.5%
21-25 years	72	32.7%	74	40.2%	146	36.1%
26-30 years	23	10.5%	12	6.5%	35	8.7%
31-35 years	9	4.1%	3	1.6%	12	3.0%
36-40 years	5	2.3%	9	4.9%	14	3.5%
41-45 years	4	1.8%	1	.5%	5	1.2%
56-60 years	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
No Response	1	.5%	3	1.6%	4	1.0%
Total	220	100.0%	184	100.0%	404	100.0%

Table 6.2
Crosstabulation of Age of Respondents by Sex

Condition Completed
Under
Out-of-Class

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
Age						
18-20 years	11	27.5%	26	37.1%	37	33.6%
21-25 years	23	57.5%	38	54.3%	61	55.5%
26-30 years	4	10.0%	3	4.3%	7	6.4%
31-35 years	0	.0%	1	1.4%	1	.9%
36-40 years	1	2.5%	1	1.4%	2	1.8%
41-45 years	1	2.5%	0	.0%	1	.9%
56-60 years	0	.0%	1	1.4%	1	.9%
No Response	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
Total	40	100.0%	70	100.0%	110	100.0%

Table 6.2
Crosstabulation of Age of Respondents by Sex

Total

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
Age						
18-20 years	117	45.0%	108	42.5%	225	43.8%
21-25 years	95	36.5%	112	44.1%	207	40.3%
26-30 years	27	10.4%	15	5.9%	42	8.2%
31-35 years	9	3.5%	4	1.6%	13	2.5%
36-40 years	6	2.3%	10	3.9%	16	3.1%
41-45 years	5	1.9%	1	.4%	6	1.2%
56-60 years	0	.0%	1	.4%	1	.2%
No Response	1	.4%	3	1.2%	4	.8%
Total	260	100.0%	254	100.0%	514	100.0%

Table 6.3
Crosstabulation of Marital Status of Respondents by Sex

Condition Completed
Under
In-Class

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
Marital Status						
Married	22	10.0%	24	13.0%	46	11.4%
Single	189	85.9%	148	80.4%	337	83.4%
Widowed	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
Separated	3	1.4%	5	2.7%	8	2.0%
Divorced	5	2.3%	7	3.8%	12	3.0%
No Response	1	.5%	0	.0%	1	.2%
Total	220	100.0%	184	100.0%	404	100.0%

Table 6.3
Crosstabulation of Marital Status of Respondents by Sex

Condition Completed
Under
Out-of-Class

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
Marital Status						
Married	3	7.5%	7	10.0%	10	9.1%
Single	36	90.0%	60	85.7%	96	87.3%
Widowed	0	.0%	1	1.4%	1	.9%
Separated	0	.0%	2	2.9%	2	1.8%
Divorced	1	2.5%	0	.0%	1	.9%
No Response	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
Total	40	100.0%	70	100.0%	110	100.0%

Table 6.3
Crosstabulation of Marital Status of Respondents by Sex

Total

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
Marital Status						
Married	25	9.6%	31	12.2%	56	10.9%
Single	225	86.5%	208	81.9%	433	84.2%
Widowed	0	.0%	1	.4%	1	.2%
Separated	3	1.2%	7	2.8%	10	1.9%
Divorced	6	2.3%	7	2.8%	13	2.5%
No Response	1	.4%	0	.0%	1	.2%
Total	260	100.0%	254	100.0%	514	100.0%

Table 6.4
Crosstabulation of Race of Respondents by Sex

Condition Completed
Under
In-Class

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
Respondent's Race						
White	179	81.4%	153	83.2%	332	82.2%
Black	2	.9%	2	1.1%	4	1.0%
Chinese	13	5.9%	13	7.1%	26	6.4%
Japanese	2	.9%	0	.0%	2	.5%
East Indian	14	6.4%	8	4.3%	22	5.4%
Native Indian	2	.9%	5	2.7%	7	1.7%
Other	6	2.7%	2	1.1%	8	2.0%
No Response	2	.9%	1	.5%	3	.7%
Total	220	100.0%	184	100.0%	404	100.0%

Table 6.4
Crosstabulation of Race of Respondents by Sex

Condition Completed
-Under
Out-of-Class

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
Respondent's Race						
White	33	82.5%	57	81.4%	90	81.8%
Black	0	.0%	1	1.4%	1	.9%
Chinese	3	7.5%	10	14.3%	13	11.8%
Japanese	1	2.5%	0	.0%	1	.9%
East Indian	3	7.5%	1	1.4%	4	3.6%
Native Indian	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
Other	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
No Response	0	.0%	1	1.4%	1	.9%
Total	40	100.0%	70	100.0%	110	100.0%

Table 6.4
Crosstabulation of Race of Respondents by Sex

Total

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
Respondent's Race						
White	212	81.5%	210	82.7%	422	82.1%
Black	2	.8%	3	1.2%	5	1.0%
Chinese	16	6.2%	23	9.1%	39	7.6%
Japanese	3	1.2%	0	.0%	3	.6%
East Indian	17	6.5%	9	3.5%	26	5.1%
Native Indian	2	.8%	5	2.0%	7	1.4%
Other	6	2.3%	2	.8%	8	1.6%
No Response	2	.8%	2	.8%	4	.8%
Total	260	100.0%	254	100.0%	514	100.0%

Table 6.5
Crosstabulation of Educational Level of Respondents by Sex

Condition Completed
Under
In-Class

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
Highest Level of Education Completed						
Some High School	1	.5%	0	.0%	1	.2%
Completed High School	47	21.4%	34	18.5%	81	20.0%
Some Community College, Technical College, or Nursing	54	24.5%	40	21.7%	94	23.3%
Completed Community College, Tech. College, or Nursing	14	6.4%	2	1.1%	16	4.0%
Some University or Teachers College	79	35.9%	94	51.1%	173	42.8%
Completed University or Teachers College	3	1.4%	4	2.2%	7	1.7%
Some Post-Graduate University Studies	16	7.3%	9	4.9%	25	6.2%
Completed Post-Graduate University Studies	3	1.4%	0	.0%	3	.7%
Other Education or Training	2	.9%	1	.5%	3	.7%
No Response	1	.5%	0	.0%	1	.2%
Total	220	100.0%	184	100.0%	404	100.0%

Table 6.5
Crosstabulation of Educational Level of Respondents by Sex

Condition Completed
Under
Out-of-Class

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
Highest Level of Education Completed						
Some High School	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
Completed High School	1	2.5%	5	7.1%	6	5.5%
Some Community College, Technical College, or Nursing	0	.0%	1	1.4%	1	.9%
Completed Community College, Tech. College, or Nursing	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
Some University or Teachers College	31	77.5%	57	81.4%	88	80.0%
Completed University or Teachers College	2	5.0%	1	1.4%	3	2.7%
Some Post-Graduate University Studies	6	15.0%	6	8.6%	12	10.9%
Completed Post-Graduate University Studies	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
Other Education or Training	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
No Response	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
Total	40	100.0%	70	100.0%	110	100.0%

Table 6.5
Crosstabulation of Educational Level of Respondents by Sex

Total

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
Highest Level of Education Completed						
Some High School	1	.4%	0	.0%	1	.2%
Completed High School	48	18.5%	39	15.4%	87	16.9%
Some Community College, Technical College, or Nursing	54	20.8%	41	16.1%	95	18.5%
Completed Community College, Tech. College, or Nursing	14	5.4%	2	.8%	16	3.1%
Some University or Teachers College	110	42.3%	151	59.4%	261	50.8%
Completed University or Teachers College	5	1.9%	5	2.0%	10	1.9%
Some Post-Graduate University Studies	22	8.5%	15	5.9%	37	7.2%
Completed Post-Graduate University Studies	3	1.2%	0	.0%	3	.6%
Other Education or Training	2	.8%	1	.4%	3	.6%
No Response	1	.4%	0	.0%	1	.2%
Total	260	100.0%	254	100.0%	514	100.0%

If the In-Class and Out-of-Class Data are Combined

Of the 514 students, the 260 males just barely outnumbered the 254 females with 50.1% to the females' 49.4%.¹³ As far as their ages are concerned, the range is from 18 to 57 years, the mean or average age being 22.4 years.¹⁴ The vast majority of the sample is single (84.2%). Looking at Table 6.3, it can further be seen that 10.9% of these students are married, 2.5% are divorced, 1.9% are separated, and 0.2% are widowed. Regarding racial composition, Table 6.4 reveals that a sizeable majority of them are White or Caucasian (82.1%). In declining order, 7.6% are Chinese, 5.1% are East Indian, 1.6% are in the Residual Category of Other, 1.4% are Native Indian, 1.0% are Black, 0.8% declined to reveal their race, and 0.6% are Japanese. Not surprisingly, the sample is a highly educated one with 422 or 82.1% having a minimum of some

¹³See Table 6.1.

¹⁴See Table 6.2.

Table 6.6
Crosstabulation of Sexual Orientation of Respondents by Sex

Condition Completed
Under
In-Class

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
Sexual Orientation						
Opposite Sex	213	97.7%	104	96.3%	317	97.2%
Same Sex	1	.5%	1	.9%	2	.6%
Both Sexes	4	1.8%	2	1.9%	6	1.8%
Don't Know	0	.0%	1	.9%	1	.3%
Total	218	100.0%	108	100.0%	326	100.0%

The data for this table is based on those in the sample who actually answered the sexual orientation question. Only 409 or 79.6% of the 514 sample members answered this question.

Table 6.6
Crosstabulation of Sexual Orientation of Respondents by Sex

Condition Completed
Under
Out-of-Class

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
Sexual Orientation						
Opposite Sex	38	95.0%	39	90.7%	77	92.8%
Same Sex	2	5.0%	1	2.3%	3	3.6%
Both Sexes	0	.0%	3	7.0%	3	3.6%
Don't Know	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
Total	40	100.0%	43	100.0%	83	100.0%

The data for this table is based on those in the sample who actually answered the sexual orientation question. Only 409 or 79.6% of the 514 sample members answered this question.

Table 6.6
Crosstabulation of Sexual Orientation of Respondents by Sex

Total

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
Sexual Orientation						
Opposite Sex	251	97.3%	143	94.7%	394	96.3%
Same Sex	3	1.2%	2	1.3%	5	1.2%
Both Sexes	4	1.6%	5	3.3%	9	2.2%
Don't Know	0	.0%	1	.7%	1	.2%
Total	258	100.0%	151	100.0%	409	100.0%

The data for this table is based on those in the sample who actually answered the sexual orientation question. Only 409 or 79.6% of the 514 sample members answered this question.

university or college education. If high school graduates in their first semester of University or College are included, the figure rises to 509 or 99.0% of the sample.¹⁵ Of the 409 or 79.6% who answered the sexual orientation question, 96.3% were heterosexual, 1.2% were homosexual, 2.2% were bisexual, and 0.2% (one individual) was unsure of her sexual preference.¹⁶

The Prevalence and Nature of Date Sexual Assault

How prevalent are sexual assaults in dating relationships? In answering such a question, attention needs to be paid not only to definitions of sexual assault, but also to two other factors: the research procedures employed, and the individual(s) or agency doing the interpreting. This is because statistics, whether official or those obtained through victimization surveys, are social constructions of reality. As Skogan states:

"Every statistic...is shaped by the process which operationally defines it, the procedures which capture it, and the organization which interprets it."¹⁷

This is not to say, however, that statistics are useless bits of information. Rather, the point is that statistics have something to tell us about both the phenomenon they represent (in this case, sexual assault), the means used to access that phenomenon (in this case, self-administered questionnaires), and the person or organization doing the interpreting (in this case, the author). It is only when the means used to access the phenomenon are inadequate (specifically, when they fail to access the phenomenon or misrepresent/distort its frequency or

¹⁵See Table 6.5.

¹⁶See Table 6.6.

¹⁷Quotation by W. G. Skogan cited in Ted Palys, *Criminology 120 Study Guide: Research Methods in Criminology* (Burnaby: Simon Fraser University, 1986), p.214.

nature) and/or its interpreters are at fault (i.e., dishonest, naive, or negligent) that the statistics are unlikely to tell us much, if anything, about a given phenomenon. On the other hand, when one's methodology is sound and one's interpretation motivated by the desire to know the "truth", then one stands a far greater likelihood of one's statistics more adequately reflecting both a given phenomenon and high research standards.

Looking at Table 6.7, it can be seen that 78 or 42.4% of the 184 females who completed questionnaires in-class said that they had experienced unwanted male sexual aggression from a boyfriend or date.¹⁸ This translates into 4 out of every 10 women being sexually victimized by a boyfriend or date. But what is meant by "unwanted male sexual aggression"? What is meant by "boyfriend or date"?

"Unwanted male sexual aggression" is deemed to include any of the following: the holding of a woman's hand against her wishes; the hugging of a woman against her wishes; the kissing of a woman against her wishes; the placing of hands on a woman's breasts against her wishes; the placing of hands on a woman's legs or thighs against her wishes; the removing of a woman's blouse against her wishes; the removing of a woman's bra against her wishes; the removing of a woman's slacks, shorts, or skirt against her wishes; the removing of a woman's panties against her wishes; the forcing apart of a woman's legs against her wishes; a male exposing his penis to a woman against her wishes; a male placing his penis in a woman's vagina against her wishes; a male placing his penis in a woman's anus against her wishes; a male placing his penis in a woman's mouth against her wishes, a male placing his finger or a foreign object in a woman's vagina against her wishes; a male placing his

¹⁸Supra note 4.

Table 6.7
 Crosstabulation of Prevalence of Date Sexual Assault
 Among Female Respondents by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Unwanted Sexual Aggression with Boyfriend or Male Date?						
Yes	78	42.4%	34	48.6%	112	44.1%
No	101	54.9%	36	51.4%	137	53.9%
No Response	5	2.7%	0	0%	5	2.0%
Total	184	100.0%	70	100.0%	254	100.0%

finger or a foreign object in a woman's anus against her wishes; a male placing his finger or a foreign object in a woman's mouth against her wishes; a male placing his mouth on a woman's vagina or anus against her wishes; a male releasing seminal fluid in a woman's vagina, anus, or mouth against her wishes, and any other activity done for a sexual purpose against a woman's wishes (residual response category). "Boyfriend or date" refers to a male who is in a dating-courtship relationship with a female. The relationship may be casual and superficial or relatively involved and committed. For the purposes of this definition, a stranger, a family member, a relative, or a male married to (or living with) the affected female is *not* considered to be a boyfriend or date.

Of the four out of every ten women who did report experiencing unwanted male sexual aggression from boyfriends or dates, what percent experienced each of the forms of unwanted sexual aggression? In other words, are we talking primarily about boyfriends and dates perpetrating the less serious kinds of sexual assaults like unwanted hugging or the more serious kinds like forced vaginal intercourse? Examining Table 6.8, it can be seen that a distinction is made between attempted acts of unwanted sexual aggression and successfully completed ones. Beginning with those acts which were successfully completed, a number of

Table 6.8 (Part 1 of 2)
 Crosstabulation of the Prevalence of SPECIFIC FORMS
 of Date Sexual Assault Among Female Victims by CCU
 (Broken Down into Attempted and Successfully Completed Acts)

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
1. Held Female's Hand w/o Her Consent						
Successful	21	26.9%	10	29.4%	31	27.7%
Attempt Only	5	6.4%	1	2.9%	6	5.4%
2. Hugged Female w/o Her Consent						
Successful	23	29.5%	12	35.3%	35	31.3%
Attempt Only	5	6.4%	1	2.9%	6	5.4%
3. Kissed Female w/o Her Consent						
Successful	31	39.7%	15	44.1%	46	41.1%
Attempt Only	12	15.4%	4	11.8%	16	14.3%
4. Touched Female's Breasts w/o Her Consent						
Successful	32	41.0%	15	44.1%	47	42.0%
Attempt Only	19	24.4%	3	8.8%	22	19.6%
5. Touched Female's Legs or Thighs w/o Her Consent						
Successful	33	42.3%	11	32.4%	44	39.3%
Attempt Only	11	14.1%	2	5.9%	13	11.6%
6. Touched Female's Vagina w/o Her Consent						
Successful	24	30.8%	7	20.6%	31	27.7%
Attempt Only	8	10.3%	5	14.7%	13	11.6%
7. Removed Female's Blouse w/o Her Consent						
Successful	12	15.4%	6	17.6%	18	16.1%
Attempt Only	9	11.5%	5	14.7%	14	12.5%
8. Removed Female's Bra w/o Her Consent						
Successful	14	17.9%	5	14.7%	19	17.0%
Attempt Only	8	10.3%	2	5.9%	10	8.9%
9. Removed Female's Slacks or Dress w/o Her Consent						
Successful	13	16.7%	5	14.7%	18	16.1%
Attempt Only	7	9.0%	6	17.6%	13	11.6%
10. Removed Female's Panties w/o Her Consent						
Successful	15	19.2%	6	17.6%	21	18.8%
Attempt Only	7	9.0%	4	11.8%	11	9.8%
11. Forced Female's Legs Apart w/o Her Consent						
Successful	19	24.4%	6	17.6%	25	22.3%
Attempt Only	3	3.8%	1	2.9%	4	3.6%

The notation "w/o" means "without".
 Total In-Class Responses=412 (308 Successful & 104 Attempts).
 Total Out-Class Responses=174 (129 Successful & 45 Attempts).
 Total Responses=586 (437 Successful & 149 Attempts).
 N=112 Date Sexual Assault Victims (78 In-Class, 34 Out-Class).
 In-Class Mean=5.3 (3.9 for Successful & 1.3 for Attempts).
 Out-Class Mean=5.2 (3.8 for Successful & 1.3 for Attempts).
 Total Mean=5.2 (3.9 for Successful & 1.3 for Attempts).

Table 6.8 (Part 2 of 2)
 Crosstabulation of the Prevalence of SPECIFIC FORMS
 of Date Sexual Assault Among Female Victims by CGU
 (Broken Down into Attempted and Successfully Completed Acts)

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
12. Exposed Penis to Female w/o Her Consent Successful	15	19.2%	8	23.5%	23	20.5%
13. Vaginal Penetration (by Penis) w/o Female's Consent Successful	18	23.1%	7	20.6%	25	22.3%
Attempt Only	5	6.4%	3	8.8%	8	7.1%
14. Anal Penetration (by Penis) w/o Female's Consent Successful	3	3.8%	1	2.9%	4	3.6%
Attempt Only	1	1.3%	2	5.9%	3	2.7%
15. Oral Penetration (by Penis) w/o Female's Consent Successful	4	5.1%	3	8.8%	7	6.3%
Attempt Only	3	3.8%	1	2.9%	4	3.6%
16. Vaginal Penetration (by Finger or Object) w/o Female's Consent Successful	10	12.8%	1	2.9%	11	9.8%
Attempt Only	1	1.3%	0	.0%	1	.9%
17. Anal Penetration (by Finger or Object) w/o Female's Consent Successful	2	2.6%	0	.0%	2	1.8%
Attempt Only	0	.0%	3	8.8%	3	2.7%
18. Oral Penetration (by Finger or Object) w/o Female's Consent Successful	3	3.8%	1	2.9%	4	3.6%
19. Cunnilingus or Analingus w/o Female's Consent Successful	4	5.1%	0	.0%	4	3.6%
Attempt Only	0	.0%	1	2.9%	1	.9%
20. Ejaculation into Female's Vagina, Anus, or Mouth w/o Her Consent Successful	9	11.5%	8	23.5%	17	15.2%
Attempt Only	0	.0%	1	2.9%	1	.9%
21. Other Sexually Assaultive Acts Successful	3	3.8%	2	5.9%	5	4.5%

The notation "w/o" means "without".
 Total In-Class Responses=412 (308 Successful & 104 Attempts).
 Total Out-Class Responses=174 (129 Successful & 45 Attempts).
 Total Responses=586 (437 Successful & 149 Attempts).
 N=112 Date Sexual Assault Victims (78 In-Class, 34 Out-Class).
 In-Class Mean=5.3 (3.9 for Successful & 1.3 for Attempts).
 Out-Class Mean=5.1 (3.8 for Successful & 1.3 for Attempts).
 Total Mean=5.2 (3.9 for Successful & 1.3 for Attempts).

points should be noted. First, it is a myth that boyfriends and dates only perpetrate the less serious kinds of sexual assaults. Although 41.0% of the 78 women reported a boyfriend or date placing his hands on her breasts against her wishes, fully 23.1% (almost one in four) reported him forcing her to engage in

vaginal intercourse against her will. Over one in ten of the 78 women (12.8%) reported her boyfriend or date placed his finger or a foreign object in her vagina against her wishes. Approximately one in 20 of the 78 women (5.1%) reported her boyfriend or date forcing her to perform fellatio against her will. As well, 3.8% were the unwilling recipients of anal intercourse from these individuals. Secondly, almost all of these 78 victims reported various combinations of things which were forced on them against their will. The range of forced indignities ranged from one specific type of unwanted sexual act up to all 21 types listed. And thirdly, as we shall see shortly, not all of these 78 victimized women realized that they had, in fact, been victimized. Or, if they did realize that they had been victimized, they did not label it rape or sexual assault.

Looking at those acts which were attempted but not successfully completed, a number of interesting findings emerge. First, 24.4% of the 78 women reported that a boyfriend or date had attempted to touch her breasts against her wishes. This compares with 6.4% for attempted vaginal intercourse, 3.8% for attempted fellatio, and 1.3% for attempted anal intercourse. Looking at the rest of the data, it would appear that most of the attempts are made at the less serious end of the scale. Secondly, when comparing the percentage of successful completions with attempts, the successful completions are higher for every single one of the 21 types of sexual assault listed. This suggests that when boyfriends or dates do attempt to assault their girlfriends or dates sexually, they succeed more often than not. And finally, were one to combine the successful completions with the attempts, the resulting percentages would prove even more disturbing. For example, combining the successfully completed forced vaginal intercourses with the attempted ones results in a figure of 29.5%. In other words, close to one in every three of the 78 females who reported experiencing unwanted sexual

aggression from a boyfriend or date had such an individual either force or attempt to force her to engage in vaginal intercourse against her will. Clearly, date rapes and date sexual assaults of female college and university students are much more common and of a much more serious nature than the public has been led to believe. In fact, such sexual assaults may even represent the greater threat to such individuals than stranger rape, although further research remains to be done in this area before such definitive pronouncements can be made.

Given that date rape and date sexual assault are common among female post-secondary students, where and when are such attacks most likely to occur? Also, how long are such attacks likely to last? Beginning with the place of attack, a glance at Table 6.9 shows that most date sexual assaults occurred inside a motor vehicle (28.2%). The next most common places were the attacker's residence (20.5%), the victim's residence (16.7%), and a friend's residence (10.3%). Together, these four places accounted for approximately three quarters or 76.0% of all such sexual assaults. In contrast, the street or alley accounted for only

Table 6.9
Crosstabulation of Location of Date Sexual Assaults by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Location						
Victim's Residence	13	16.7%	2	5.9%	15	13.4%
Offender's Residence	16	20.5%	9	26.5%	25	22.3%
Someone Else's Residence	8	10.3%	6	17.6%	14	12.5%
Other Building or Enclosed Structure	4	5.1%	0	.0%	4	3.6%
Motel or Hotel Room	2	2.6%	0	.0%	2	1.8%
Vehicle	22	28.2%	11	32.4%	33	29.5%
Street or Alley	3	3.8%	1	2.9%	4	3.6%
Other Outside Area	5	6.4%	3	8.8%	8	7.1%
Other Area	4	5.1%	2	5.9%	6	5.4%
No Response	1	1.3%	0	.0%	1	.9%
Total	78	100.0%	34	100.0%	112	100.0%

3.8% of the total number of sexual assaults. In general, it would appear that the more private a location is, the greater the likelihood of a date sexual assault taking place there.

As far as the time element is concerned, the overwhelming majority of date rapes/date sexual assaults occurred on Fridays (32.1%) and Saturdays (30.8%) between the hours of 9:00 p.m. to 3:00 a.m. (57.7%). Tables 6.10 and 6.11 also show that Sundays and Mondays between 9:00 a.m. and 12:00 noon had the lowest incidences of such sexual assaults. Presumably, this finding can be explained by the fact that these days and times are not all that popular insofar as dating is concerned. And, of course, less or no interaction with a boyfriend or date on a certain day at a certain time means that the probability of a sexual assault on that day at that time is also minimized. It is important to realize, however, that cultural influences are at work here. In Canadian society, Friday and Saturday evenings are the times when young people traditionally get together for a "night out". Cultures having different "nights out" would probably find those nights having the highest percentage of date sexual assaults.

How long did the unwanted sexual aggression last? Admittedly, the answers to this question were quite subjective. It is difficult, if not impossible, to define start and end times for sexual assault since the process of victimization is not sudden for all victims- in many cases, it is gradual and varied. Also, such victims were not likely looking at their watches timing their victimization. More likely, they were thinking of ways in which they might extricate themselves from situations they did not want to be in. Thus, the results for this question should be viewed as approximations only. Of the 78 victims from the "in-class" sample, almost half (46.2%) said that the sexual assault lasted less than 15 minutes. In fact, if you look to Table 6.12, you can see that there is an

Table 6.10
Crosstabulation of Day of the Week
Date Sexual Assaults Occurred by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Day of the Week						
Monday	2	2.6%	1	2.9%	3	2.7%
Tuesday	5	6.4%	1	2.9%	6	5.4%
Wednesday	3	3.8%	2	5.9%	5	4.5%
Thursday	3	3.8%	1	2.9%	4	3.6%
Friday	25	32.1%	13	38.2%	38	33.9%
Saturday	24	30.8%	6	17.6%	30	26.8%
Sunday	2	2.6%	1	2.9%	3	2.7%
Don't know	5	6.4%	4	11.8%	9	8.0%
No Response	9	11.5%	5	14.7%	14	12.5%
Total	78	100.0%	34	100.0%	112	100.0%

Table 6.11
Crosstabulation of Time of the Day or Evening
Date Sexual Assaults Began by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Time Began						
Midnight-3:00 a.m.	22	28.2%	6	17.6%	28	25.0%
3:00 a.m.-6:00 a.m.	7	9.0%	0	0.0%	7	6.3%
9:00 a.m.-12:00 Noon	2	2.6%	1	2.9%	3	2.7%
12:00 Noon-3:00 p.m.	5	6.4%	3	8.8%	8	7.1%
3:00 p.m.-6:00 p.m.	3	3.8%	1	2.9%	4	3.6%
6:00 p.m.-9:00 p.m.	11	14.1%	1	2.9%	12	10.7%
9:00 p.m.-Midnight	23	29.5%	21	61.8%	44	39.3%
Don't know	1	1.3%	1	2.9%	2	1.8%
No Response	4	5.1%	0	0.0%	4	3.6%
Total	78	100.0%	34	100.0%	112	100.0%

Table 6.12
Crosstabulation of Duration of Date Sexual Assaults by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Duration						
Under 15 Minutes	36	46.2%	19	55.9%	55	49.1%
15-30 Minutes	20	25.6%	9	26.5%	29	25.9%
30-60 Minutes	14	17.9%	3	8.8%	17	15.2%
1-2 Hours	6	7.7%	2	5.9%	8	7.1%
2-3 Hours	1	1.3%	0	0.0%	1	.9%
3-4 Hours	0	0.0%	1	2.9%	1	.9%
No Response	1	1.3%	0	0.0%	1	.9%
Total	78	100.0%	34	100.0%	112	100.0%

inverse relationship between time elapsed and sexual victimization: as the time elapsed increased, the probability that the sexual assault would continue decreased.

The Offenders

Do males who sexually assault their girlfriends or dates tend to be teenagers or older adult males? Are most of them single? Do they tend to be in "white collar" or "blue collar" occupations? Are most of them poorly educated? Is the phenomenon of date rape/date sexual assault only a problem in "the white community"? Do most sexual assaults between dating individuals happen on first dates?

Looking back at Table 6.7, it can be seen that 78 females from the in-class sample had experienced unwanted male sexual aggression from a boyfriend or date. Of these 78 females, exactly half (50.0%) had been sexually assaulted by a boyfriend or date who was between the ages of 20-24 years (See Table 6.13). The next most common responses were 16-19 years (29.5%), 25-34 years (15.4%), 35-49 years (2.6%), and 11-15 years (2.6%). Of course, it must be remembered that individuals tend to date those who are about the same age as they are. Because 51 or 65.4% of these 78 females were between the ages of 16 and 19 years at the time of their sexual victimization,¹⁹ it is not at all unexpected that the age of their assailants should approximate their own. Nevertheless, the data do show that date sexual assault cannot be dismissed as merely a problem of adolescence any more than AIDS can be dismissed as merely a problem of homosexuals, hemophiliacs, Haitians, and intravenous drug

¹⁹See Table 6.24.

Table 6.13
 Crosstabulation of Assailant's Age
 (as Reported by the Victims) by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Assailant's Age						
11-15 Years	2	2.6%	0	0.0%	2	1.8%
16-19 Years	23	29.5%	15	44.1%	38	33.9%
20-24 Years	39	50.0%	16	47.1%	55	49.1%
25-34 Years	12	15.4%	2	5.9%	14	12.5%
35-49 Years	2	2.6%	1	2.9%	3	2.7%
Total	78	100.0%	34	100.0%	112	100.0%

users.

As far as marital status is concerned, Table 6.14 shows that the overwhelming majority of the offenders were single (89.7%). But then, since unattached people tend to date other unattached people, this finding is hardly surprising.

The results for aggressor's occupation were largely what was expected, although there were a couple of surprises. Specifically, almost half (47.4%) of the sexually assaultive male dates were students (See Table 6.15). Since this study's

Table 6.14
 Crosstabulation of Assailant's Marital Status
 (as Reported by the Victims) by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Assailant's Marital Status						
Married (but not to the victim)	1	1.3%	1	2.9%	2	1.8%
Living Common-Law (but not with the victim)	3	3.8%	0	0.0%	3	2.7%
Single (never married)	70	89.7%	31	91.2%	101	90.2%
Separated	2	2.6%	1	2.9%	3	2.7%
Divorced	1	1.3%	0	0.0%	1	.9%
Don't Know	1	1.3%	1	2.9%	2	1.8%
Total	78	100.0%	34	100.0%	112	100.0%

Table 6.15
 Crosstabulation of Assailant's Occupation
 (as Reported by the Victims) by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Assailant's Occupation						
Unemployed or Retired	5	6.4%	3	8.8%	8	7.1%
Student	37	47.4%	16	47.1%	53	47.3%
Labourer	13	16.7%	5	14.7%	18	16.1%
Office Worker	4	5.1%	0	.0%	4	3.6%
Doctor	1	1.3%	0	.0%	1	.9%
Don't Know	2	2.6%	3	8.8%	5	4.5%
Other	16	20.5%	6	17.6%	22	19.6%
No Response	0	.0%	1	2.9%	1	.9%
Total	78	100.0%	34	100.0%	112	100.0%

sample was composed of students, and students tend to date other students, it seemed likely that students would account for a lion's share of the aggressor occupation variable. The biggest surprise, however, came when the in-class and out-of-class responses to the residual or "Other" category, which accounted for 19.6% of the total, were tabulated. One police officer, one lawyer, and two security officers were said to have sexually assaulted their dates.²⁰ Evidently, there are at least a few members of these professions who can not be trusted to uphold the sexual assault provisions of the *Canadian Criminal Code* when it comes to their own behaviour toward their girlfriends or dates.

In terms of level of education, Table 6.16 shows that one in four (26.9%) of offenders had not completed high school. Considering that 29.5% of offenders were between the ages of 16 and 19 years inclusive, this finding is not out of the ordinary. Although some offenders may have withdrawn from high school, those with less than a high school education were likely still in high school working towards that educational milestone. Offenders with at least a high

²⁰ Respondents *050, 259, *069, and *074 said that they had been sexually assaulted, the first by a police officer, the second by a lawyer, and the third and fourth by security officers. All four women had been dating these individuals.

Table 6.16
 Crosstabulation of Assailant's Level of Education
 (as Reported by the Victims) by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Assailant's Educational Level						
Some Elementary	1	1.3%	0	.0%	1	.9%
Completed Elementary	0	.0%	1	2.9%	1	.9%
Some High School	20	25.6%	9	26.5%	29	25.9%
Completed High School	28	35.9%	5	14.7%	33	29.5%
Some Community College, Technical College, or Nursing	8	10.3%	5	14.7%	13	11.6%
Completed Community College, Tech. College, or Nursing	1	1.3%	1	2.9%	2	1.8%
Some University or Teachers College	11	14.1%	5	14.7%	16	14.3%
Completed University or Teachers College	5	6.4%	2	5.9%	7	6.3%
Some Post-Graduate University Studies	1	1.3%	1	2.9%	2	1.8%
Completed Post-Graduate University Studies	1	1.3%	0	.0%	1	.9%
Other Education or Training	2	2.6%	1	2.9%	3	2.7%
Don't Know	0	.0%	4	11.8%	4	3.6%
Total	78	100.0%	34	100.0%	112	100.0%

school education (70.1%) tended to have no more than a high school education (35.9%), some college education (10.3%), or some university education (14.1%). Again, however, it must be emphasized that one must keep this study's sample in mind when interpreting these findings. Since this study's sample was a college and university student one, its findings are probably not generalizable to the population at large.

Regarding the race of those males who sexually assaulted their girlfriends or dates, the overwhelming majority were white (83.3%). Since most of this study's sample is white and dating tends to take place inter-racially rather than intra-racially, this finding was expected. Had the study's sample been predominantly black, it is quite likely that most of the assailants would have been reported black. Looking at Table 6.17, it can be seen that Blacks (9.0%), Chinese (3.8%), Japanese (1.3%), East Indians (1.3%), and other races (1.3%) accounted

Table 6.17
 Crosstabulation of Assailant's Race
 (as Reported by the Victims) by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Assailant's Race						
White	65	83.3%	31	91.2%	96	85.7%
Black	7	9.0%	0	.0%	7	6.3%
Chinese	3	3.8%	1	2.9%	4	3.6%
Japanese	1	1.3%	0	.0%	1	.9%
East Indian	1	1.3%	1	2.9%	2	1.8%
Other	1	1.3%	1	2.9%	2	1.8%
Total	78	100.0%	34	100.0%	112	100.0%

for the remaining assailants.

What about first dates? Were most of the 78 sexually assaulted women victimized the first time they went out with a particular man? In answering this question, it is useful to distinguish between the length of time that the dating partners had *KNOWN* each other and the length of time that they had actually *DATED* each other prior to the sexual assault occurring. Tables 6.18 and 6.19 show that over half of the 78 women (52.6%) had known their attacker less than 6 months, and that one in four (23.1%) had dated him for no more than a single day or evening before he had sexually assaulted them. At the other end of the spectrum, 34.6% had known their attacker for one or more years before he sexually assaulted them. Even more startling is the fact that approximately one in ten or 12.8% of the 78 women were sexually assaulted by a boyfriend or date they had been dating for one or more years. Clearly, then, the length of time that a female has been involved in a relationship is in itself no guarantee that she will not be sexually assaulted by the one she both loves and trusts. Male attitudes toward women and male acceptance of rape myths are probably more powerful indicators than relationship length in predicting whether

Table 6.18
 Crosstabulation of Length of Time Victim and Assailant Had
 Known Each Other Prior to the Date Sexual Assault by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Time Known						
Under 6 Months	41	52.6%	20	58.8%	61	54.5%
6 Months to 1 Year	10	12.8%	7	20.6%	17	15.2%
1-2 Years	11	14.1%	3	8.8%	14	12.5%
2-3 Years	7	9.0%	1	2.9%	8	7.1%
3-4 Years	1	1.3%	0	.0%	1	.9%
4-5 Years	4	5.1%	2	5.9%	6	5.4%
Over 5 Years	4	5.1%	1	2.9%	5	4.5%
Total	78	100.0%	34	100.0%	112	100.0%

Table 6.19
 Crosstabulation of Length of Time Victim and Assailant Had
 Dated Each Other Prior to the Date Sexual Assault by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Time Dated						
Under 2 Days	18	23.1%	10	29.4%	28	25.0%
2-30 Days	24	30.8%	11	32.4%	35	31.3%
1-3 Months	12	15.4%	5	14.7%	17	15.2%
3-6 Months	5	6.4%	3	8.8%	8	7.1%
6 Months to 1 Year	9	11.5%	4	11.8%	13	11.6%
1-2 Years	5	6.4%	0	.0%	5	4.5%
2-3 Years	4	5.1%	1	2.9%	5	4.5%
4-5 Years	1	1.3%	0	.0%	1	.9%
Total	78	100.0%	34	100.0%	112	100.0%

or not a boyfriend or date is likely to sexually assault his girlfriend. Whether this is the case will be determined in the seventh section of this chapter.

The Victims

Who are the victims of date rape and date sexual assault? Have the majority of them been victimized once or many times? If many times, once by several different dates or on numerous occasions by the same person? And what about other types of sexual assault? Have many date rape victims, for example, been sexually assaulted by strangers? By their fathers? By neighbours? What

about the victims' personal characteristics? How old were they? What was their marital status? Their race? And what of their actions before, during, and after their sexual victimization? If actually on a date, whom asked whom out? Who paid for the date? What kinds of pressure or force did boyfriends or dates use to obtain what they wanted sexually? How did the women react to such force? Were the police contacted after the attempted or completed sexual assault? Did any of the victims launch civil suits against their attackers? Was medical attention sought? If so, what kinds of injuries were sustained? What kinds of emotional consequences were suffered? How would the victims, if given the opportunity, describe their victimization? More specifically, how did the unwanted experience make them feel? And finally, what sort of precautions (if any) are these date rape/date sexual assault victims taking to prevent future unwanted sexual attacks? In answering these and related questions, the results for those sexual assault victims who completed questionnaires will be presented followed by the results for those victims who were interviewed.

Victims Who Completed Questionnaires

Examining Table 6.20, it can be seen that boyfriends or dates sexually

Table 6.20.
Crosstabulation of Frequency of Date Sexual Assault
from DIFFERENT Boyfriends and Dates by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Different Boyfriends/Dates						
One Occasion	30	38.5%	8	23.5%	38	33.9%
2-5 Occasions	37	47.4%	21	61.8%	58	51.8%
6-10 Occasions	6	7.7%	3	8.8%	9	8.0%
11-15 Occasions	3	3.8%	0	.0%	3	2.7%
16-20 Occasions	1	1.3%	2	5.9%	3	2.7%
Over 20 Occasions	1	1.3%	0	.0%	1	.9%
Total	78	100.0%	34	100.0%	112	100.0%

assaulted slightly less than half of the 78 victims on two to five separate occasions. Even more disturbing, they sexually assaulted 14.1% of the 78 women on at least six separate occasions. As far as the *same* boyfriend/date sexually assaulting the *same* woman is concerned, the results are illuminating. The same boyfriend/date sexually assaulted the same woman once (and only once) in 57.7% of the cases. In 20.5% of the cases, however, the same boyfriend/date sexually assaulted the same woman on two to five separate occasions. As Table 6.21 shows, the sexual assaults then drop off significantly after two to five separate occasions, presumably because the relationship (and dates) have ceased.

As far as victimization from attackers such as strangers, fathers, neighbours, and "friends" are concerned, the findings are revealing but limited. They are limited due to the unfortunate omission of a question specifically asking whether individuals other than boyfriends or dates had ever sexually assaulted the respondents. Despite this oversight, five of the in-class and six of the out-of-class victims volunteered this unasked-for information. Four said that they had been sexually assaulted by strangers, one by her father, one by both her father and strangers at the same time, one by a neighbour, and four by

Table 6.21
Crosstabulation of Frequency of Date Sexual Assault
from the SAME Boyfriend or Date by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Same Boyfriend/Date						
One Occasion	45	57.7%	16	47.1%	61	54.5%
2 Occasions	15	20.5%	13	38.2%	29	25.9%
6-10 Occasions	5	6.4%	0	0%	5	4.5%
11-15 Occasions	1	1.3%	0	0%	1	.9%
16-20 Occasions	0	0%	1	2.9%	1	.9%
Over 20 Occasions	1	1.3%	0	0%	1	.9%
No Response	10	12.8%	4	11.8%	14	12.5%
Total	78	100.0%	34	100.0%	112	100.0%

acquaintances. Of these 11 sexual assaults, four were perpetrated on girls who were eight years old or less. Three of these assaults were carried out by two or more attackers. As six of the eleven described their victimization:²¹

No. *049 "When I was eight a young man who worked for my family enticed me to a secluded place on a pretext, picked me up and placed me on the ground and immediately lay on top of me. I remember being both furious and terrified; I was crying. I was able to reach his hat, which I crushed with my fist, and as he reached over to save it (and shifted his weight) I was able to wriggle free and run away. All this took place in less time than it takes to describe. I didn't tell anyone about this event until I was an adult."

No. *073 "When I was assaulted by a stranger, the fear of death was indescribable. Unfortunately, this fear of death (as well as rape, mutilation, degradation, etc.) has never gone away."

No. 095 "I was a victim of incest and rape. Anal rape was the worst experience."

No. 097 "(I was) dragged into a room with my hands tied behind my back and 2 of my boyfriend's friends stripped me and began exploring."

No. 258 "(F)ive men took me, when I was eight years old, into a men's public washroom and fondled me and were going to rape me and kill me- one of the men was my father- they were interrupted when another man (not one of the group) came to use the washroom- he saw what they were doing and went nuts. He screamed at them until my father took me out of there."

No. *260 "...When I was about 3 a man about 50-60 placed his fingers in my vagina and tore the skin..."

Although just a sampling, these cases do show us that at least some date sexual assault victims (in this case 10.0%)²² have to deal with different types of sexual assault from different types of offenders at some time prior to or following their sexual victimization at the hands of individuals in whom they have placed a certain amount of trust- their boyfriends and dates. At this stage, one

²¹Cases from the out-of-class sample are identified by a single asterisk next to their case identification numbers.

²²If 10% of date sexual assault victims admit *without being asked* that they have been sexually assaulted by either strangers, their fathers, or other men they have not been dating, it seems quite likely that specifically inquiring about these types of sexual assault will produce a higher admission rate and, along with it, a more accurate reflection of the actual occurrence rate.

Table 6.22
 Crosstabulation of Race of Date Sexual Assault Victims by CCU

Respondent's Race	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
White	66	84.6%	29	85.3%	95	84.8%
Black	2	2.5%	0	0%	2	1.8%
Chinese	6	7.7%	4	11.8%	10	8.9%
East Indian	2	2.6%	0	0%	2	1.8%
Native Indian	1	1.3%	0	0%	1	.9%
Other	1	1.3%	0	0%	1	.9%
No Response	0	0%	1	2.9%	1	.9%
Total	78	100.0%	34	100.0%	112	100.0%

can only speculate how such multiple victimization experiences affect these and other similarly victimized women. Further research is sorely needed in this area.

Turning to the date sexual assault victims' personal characteristics, Table 6.22 shows that the majority (84.6%) were Caucasian with Chinese victims coming in second at 7.7%. Since Caucasians and Chinese females account for 83.2% and 7.1% of the in-class female sample, this finding is about what would be expected. For the record, 43.1% of Caucasian females said that they had been sexually assaulted by a boyfriend or date compared with 46.2% of the Chinese females.²³ The overwhelming majority (96.2%) of the 78 date sexual assault victims were single at the time of their sexual attack.²⁴ Most (65.4%) were between the ages of 16 and 19 years inclusive.²⁵ Again, the findings with respect to marital status and age are similar to what would be expected given the relatively young age of most of the females. With regards to their present sexual

²³Combining the in-class data with the out-of-class data changes the percentages just given to 45.2% for Caucasian females and 43.5% for Chinese females. The small size of the other racial groups makes comparison statistically meaningless at best, statistically misleading at worst.

²⁴See Table 6.23.

²⁵See Table 6.24.

Table 6.23
 Crosstabulation of Marital Status of Date Sexual Assault
 Victims at the Time of Their Sexual Victimization by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Victim's Marital Status						
Married	1	1.3%	0	0.0%	1	.9%
Single	75	96.2%	34	100.0%	109	97.3%
Separated	1	1.3%	0	0.0%	1	.9%
Divorced	1	1.3%	0	0.0%	1	.9%
Total	78	100.0%	34	100.0%	112	100.0%

Table 6.24
 Crosstabulation of Age of Date Sexual Assault Victims
 at the Time of Their Sexual Victimization by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Victim's Age						
10 Years or Under	1	1.3%	0	0.0%	1	.9%
11-15 Years	8	10.3%	6	17.6%	14	12.5%
16-19 Years	51	65.4%	20	58.8%	71	63.4%
20-24 Years	17	21.8%	8	23.5%	25	22.3%
25-34 Years	1	1.3%	0	0.0%	1	.9%
Total	78	100.0%	34	100.0%	112	100.0%

Table 6.25
 Crosstabulation of Sexual Orientation of Date Sexual
 Assault Victims at the Time of the Survey by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Sexual Orientation						
Opposite Sex	74	94.9%	31	91.2%	105	93.8%
Same Sex	1	1.3%	1	2.9%	2	1.8%
Both Sexes	2	2.6%	1	2.9%	3	2.7%
Don't Know	1	1.3%	0	0.0%	1	.9%
No Response	0	0.0%	1	2.9%	1	.9%
Total	78	100.0%	34	100.0%	112	100.0%

orientation, 94.9% of the date sexual assault victims indicated that they were heterosexual, 2.6% indicated that they were bisexual, 1.3% indicated they were homosexual, and the remainder were either unsure or refused to say.²⁶

Focusing on the circumstances leading up to or preceding the sexual attacks, fully one out of every four of the victims was *not* on a date when her boyfriend sexually assaulted her. As Table 6.26 shows, when the two were on a date and sexual assault occurred, the man was usually (but not always) the one who had asked the woman out. Similarly, when they were on a date and sexual assault occurred, the man had usually either paid for the date (50.9%), or it had not cost him anything (28.3%). Paying for part of the date, however, was no guarantee of a sexually-assaultive-free evening as evidenced by 15.1% of females whose "gentleman callers" sexually assaulted them despite their sharing the night's (or day's)-dating expenses.²⁷

Shifting attention to the sexual assaults themselves, Table 6.28 shows that physical intimidation was used in one third of the 78 cases, either alone or in conjunction with other forms of pressure or force. Sexual coercion of the "If you love me you will" or "I'll break up with you if you don't" variety was reported to a lesser extent in approximately one fourth of the cases; it was usually combined with physical intimidation. Pushing or slapping the woman was used in 14.1% of the cases, followed by taking her by surprise (12.8%), getting her drunk (11.5%), verbally threatening to injure her (5.1%), physically beating her (3.8%), choking her (2.6%), getting her "stoned" on drugs (1.3%), and various other strategies (17.9%). These other strategies included refusing to accept "no" for an answer, holding the woman down or otherwise restraining her (such as

²⁶See Table 6.25.

²⁷See Table 6.27.

Table 6.26
Crosstabulation of Who Asked Who Out
on the Sexually Assaultive Date by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Who Asked For Date?						
Victim	1	1.3%	1	2.9%	2	1.8%
Offender	46	59.0%	21	61.8%	67	59.8%
Not on a Date	20	25.6%	9	26.5%	29	25.9%
Don't Know	1	1.3%	1	2.9%	2	1.8%
Other	9	11.5%	2	5.9%	11	9.8%
No Response	1	1.3%	0	.0%	1	.9%
Total	78	100.0%	34	100.0%	112	100.0%

Table 6.27
Crosstabulation of Who Paid
on the Sexually Assaultive Date by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Who Paid For Date?						
Victim	1	1.9%	0	.0%	1	1.3%
Offender	27	50.9%	17	70.8%	44	57.1%
Both Victim & Offender	8	15.1%	2	8.3%	10	13.0%
Date Did Not Cost						
Anything	15	28.3%	5	20.8%	20	26.0%
Don't Know	2	3.8%	0	.0%	2	2.6%
Total	53	100.0%	24	100.0%	77	100.0%

The total number of cases is 77 rather than 112 (a difference of 35) due to 29 victims not being on a date at the time they were sexually assaulted and 6 not answering the question.

Table 6.28
Crosstabulation of Kinds of Pressure or Force
Used on Date Sexual Assault Victims by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total Cases	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Kinds of Pressure or Force						
Verbal Pressure	21	26.9%	12	35.3%	33	29.5%
Verbal Threats of Injury	4	5.1%	1	2.9%	5	4.5%
Physical Intimidation	26	33.3%	14	41.2%	40	35.7%
Plied with Alcohol to the Point of Drunkenness	9	11.5%	6	17.6%	15	13.4%
Drugged with a Substance Other Than Alcohol	1	1.3%	1	2.9%	2	1.8%
Taken by Surprise	10	12.8%	2	5.9%	12	10.7%
Pushed, Slapped, and Treated with Mild Roughness	11	14.1%	4	11.8%	15	13.4%
Threatened with a Weapon	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
Physically Beaten	3	3.8%	0	.0%	3	2.7%
Choked	2	2.6%	0	.0%	2	1.8%
Injured with a Weapon	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
No Pressure or Force Used	15	19.2%	6	17.6%	21	18.8%
Other Pressure or Force Used	14	17.9%	6	17.6%	20	17.9%
No Response	1	1.3%	0	.0%	1	.9%
Total Cases	78	100%	34	100%	112	100%

tying her hands behind her back), using past sexual involvement with the woman to justify the present sexual assault, and employing other individuals to sexually assault the woman. Surprisingly, and somewhat enigmatically, 15 or 19.2% of women in the in-class sample and 6 or 17.6% of women in the out-of-class sample said that their boyfriends/dates had used no pressure or force against them in carrying out (or attempting to carry out) the unwanted sexual behaviour. Checking into this anomaly, the author made an interesting and unexpected finding: the victims' attribution of whether pressure or force was used is heavily influenced by both the seriousness of the sexual act against her, and whether such act(s) were successfully carried out against her. More specifically, the women were likely to say that their boyfriends/dates had not used pressure or force against them if any of the following were true:

1. The sexually assaultive act had been *attempted only*, especially if it did not go beyond attempted non-consensual kissing, touching, or the removal of clothing (38.1% of the 21 women fell into this category);
2. The sexually assaultive act was successfully carried out, but did not go beyond non-consensual kissing or touching (28.6% of the 21 women fell into this category); or
3. Any combination of 1 and 2 (the remaining 33.3% of the 21 women fell into this category).

How did the 78 date sexual assault victims respond when their boyfriends/dates tried to sexually assault them? Did most of them try reasoning with their assailants, running away, or some other strategy to escape being victimized? A glance at Table 6.29 shows that the most popular strategy was to try to reason with the offender (42.3%), followed by becoming angry (35.9%), physically resisting and fighting (33.3%), becoming immobile or "freezing" (19.2%), trying to run

Table 6.29
 Crosstabulation of Victim Response
 to Date Sexual Assault by CCU

	Condition Completed Under		Total Cases
	In-Class	Out-of-Class	
Victim Response			
Tried Reasoning	33 42.3%	16 47.1%	49 43.8%
Used an Excuse	6 7.7%	6 17.6%	12 10.7%
Became Hostile or Angry	28 35.9%	7 20.6%	35 31.3%
Screamed, Yelled, & Made Noise	7 9.0%	2 5.9%	9 8.0%
Physically Resisted & Fought Back	26 33.3%	11 32.4%	37 33.0%
Tried Running Away or Escaping	7 9.0%	3 8.8%	10 8.9%
Froze	15 19.2%	7 20.6%	22 19.6%
Other Victim Responses	15 19.2%	12 35.3%	27 24.1%
No Response	2 2.6%	2 5.9%	4 3.6%
Total Cases	78 100%	34 100%	112 100%

away or otherwise escape (9.0%), trying to attract help by yelling or otherwise making noise (9.0%), and making up an excuse such as "I have a venereal disease" (7.7%). The remainder (19.2%) employed other strategies of escape which included voicing the word "NO!" over and over again, physically pulling away, pleading for him to stop, threatening to vomit, and trickery (such as the woman saying she had to go to the washroom, and then trying to leave by the wash-room window).

After her boyfriend/date sexually assaulted her (or tried to sexually assault her), close to half of the women told no individual or agency what had happened to them. As shown in Table 6.30, when they did confide in someone, most (37.2%) told their closest female friend. Their second most popular choice as confidante, but a distant one, was their closest male friend (6.4%). Parents were third at 3.8%. After that, the women tended to not tell anyone what had happened to them at the hands of their boyfriends or dates. Specifically, only one of the 78 women contacted the police, only one contacted a member of the clergy, and none of them contacted Rape Crisis Centres, social workers, or lawyers (the latter because of the possibility of a civil suit).

Table 6.30
 Crosstabulation of Action Victims Took
 after the Date Sexual Assault by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total Cases	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Action Taken						
Notified the Police	1	1.3%	0	.0%	1	.9%
Called a Rape Crisis Centre	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
Told Parents	3	3.8%	1	2.9%	4	3.6%
Told Closest Female Friend	29	37.2%	11	32.4%	40	35.7%
Told Closest Male Friend	5	6.4%	1	2.9%	6	5.4%
Contacted a Social Worker	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
Contacted a Member of the Clergy	1	1.3%	0	.0%	1	.9%
Contacted No One	35	44.9%	21	61.8%	56	50.0%
Other Action Taken	14	17.9%	6	17.6%	20	17.9%
No Response	2	2.6%	1	2.9%	3	2.7%
Total Cases	78	100%	34	100%	112	100%

Table 6.31
 Crosstabulation of Date Sexual Assault Victims Who
 Sought Medical Attention as a Result of Being Attacked by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Medical Attention Sought?						
Yes	2	2.6%	2	5.9%	4	3.6%
No	63	80.8%	24	70.6%	87	77.7%
No Response	13	16.7%	8	23.5%	21	18.8%
Total	78	100.0%	34	100.0%	112	100.0%

Only two or 2.6% of the 78 victims sought medical attention after being sexually assaulted.²⁸ The first woman was found to have suffered no physical injury, venereal disease, or unwanted pregnancy. The other individual was not quite as fortunate. She suffered bruises, broken bones, and damaged teeth. Looking at the out-of-class sample, two or 5.9% of the 34 women sought medical attention. Both found themselves saddled with unwanted pregnancies.²⁹ In stark contrast to the physical injuries and consequences of date sexual assault are the *emotional* ones. Unlike the physical consequences, the emotional ones affect a

²⁸ See Table 6.31.

²⁹ See Table 6.32.

Table 6.32
 Crosstabulation of Physical Injuries and Consequences
 Attributable to the Date Sexual Assault by CCU

	Condition Completed Under		Total Cases
	In-Class	Out-of-Class	
Physical Injuries & Consequences			
Bruises	1	0	1
Slight to Moderate Cuts	0	0	0
Deep Cuts	0	0	0
Burns	0	0	0
Sprained Bones	0	0	0
Broken Bones	1	0	1
Damaged Teeth	1	0	1
Venereal Disease	0	0	0
Pregnancy	0	2	2
No Physical Injuries, V.D., or Pregnancy	1	0	1
Other Injuries or Consequences	0	0	0
Total Cases	2	2	4

Due to the extremely small sample size of four, percentages are not given, because they would be misleading.

Table 6.33
 Crosstabulation of Emotional Consequences
 Attributable to the Date Sexual Assault By CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total Cases	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Emotional Consequences						
Anxiety and Nervousness	32	41.0%	12	35.3%	44	39.3%
Depression	25	32.1%	10	29.4%	35	31.3%
Sleep Disturbances	15	19.2%	9	26.5%	24	21.4%
Crying Spells	20	25.6%	11	32.4%	31	27.7%
Feelings of Being Alone	17	21.8%	13	38.2%	30	26.8%
Difficulty Concentrating	17	21.8%	8	23.5%	25	22.3%
Difficulty With or Loss of Job	3	3.8%	0	0%	3	2.7%
Difficulty Interacting with Males	22	28.2%	7	20.6%	29	25.9%
Loss of Interest in Sex	14	17.9%	10	29.4%	24	21.4%
Intense Fears	7	9.0%	6	17.6%	13	11.6%
Quick Mood Changes	12	15.4%	3	8.8%	15	13.4%
Thoughts of Suicide	5	6.4%	1	2.9%	6	5.4%
Attempted Suicide	1	1.3%	0	0%	1	.9%
No Emotional Consequences	20	25.6%	4	11.8%	24	21.4%
Other Emotional Consequences	11	14.1%	5	14.7%	16	14.3%
No Response	1	1.3%	2	5.9%	3	2.7%
Total Cases	78	100%	34	100%	112	100%

great many more date sexual assault victims, particularly those who suffer completed sexual assaults as opposed to attempted ones. Of the 78 date sexual assault victims, most suffered several emotional consequences rather than just one. From highest to lowest, Table 6.33 shows that 41.0% suffered anxiety and nervousness, 32.1% suffered depression, 28.2% experienced difficulty interacting with

men, 25.6% suffered from crying spells, 25.6% experienced no emotional consequences, 21.8% suffered from feelings of being alone, 21.8% experienced difficulty in concentrating, 19.2% suffered sleep disturbances, 17.9% lost interest in sex, 15.4% experienced quick mood changes, 9.0% suffered from intense fears, 6.4% had thoughts of suicide, 3.8% experienced difficulty with or loss of their job, and 1.3% (one individual) attempted suicide. As well, 14.1% suffered from emotional consequences not specified, in the questionnaire. These included loss of trust, loss of self-esteem, intense anger, and guilt. Although not emotional consequences *per se*, the women making up this figure of 14.1% also mentioned other consequences flowing from their victimization- alcohol and drug dependency, anorexia nervosa, a drop in their grades, an aversion to all males, and (in one case) an aversion to children where there had previously been but love for children.

As far as the severity of the emotional consequences is concerned, one may be able to partially gauge the severity by examining the persistence over time of the consequences. As Table 6.34 shows, of the 58 in-class females who *did*

Table 6.34
Crosstabulation of Length of Time Emotional Consequences
Attributable to the Date Sexual Assault Persisted by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Persistence of Emotional Consequences						
Less Than One Day	2	3.4%	0	0%	2	2.3%
1 Day-1 Week	10	17.2%	8	26.7%	18	20.5%
1 Week-1 Month	15	25.9%	4	13.3%	19	21.6%
1-6 Months	8	13.8%	4	13.3%	12	13.6%
6 Months-1 Year	5	8.6%	3	10.0%	8	9.1%
1-2 Years	3	5.2%	2	6.7%	5	5.7%
2-5 Years	4	6.9%	2	6.7%	6	6.8%
Over 5 Years	6	10.3%	3	10.0%	9	10.2%
No Response	5	8.6%	4	13.3%	9	10.2%
Total	58	100.0%	30	100.0%	88	100.0%

The total number of cases is 88 rather than 112 due to 24 victims not suffering any emotional consequences.

experience emotional consequences, a high percentage (46.6%) suffered emotional consequences for no more than one month. Still, there were many suffering much longer- 13.8% suffered from one to six months, 8.6% from six months to a year, 5.2% suffered one to two years, 6.9% suffered two to five years, and one in every ten victims or 10.3% suffered for more than five years.

Asked to describe the sexually assaultive experience which upset them the most produced a wide range of responses. Sometimes the date sexual assault victims simply described what their boyfriends/dates did to them without commenting further. Others not only described what had happened to them, but said how such actions made them feel. Generally speaking, victims experienced at least one of the following: helplessness or a loss of control, loss of trust, anger or hate, fear, guilt, and/or amazement. In their own words, here is how 30 of the 112 date sexual assault victims (half from the in-class sample and half from the out-of-class sample) described their experiences:³⁰

No. *037 "I was on a date (a couple of beers in a pub), and after in a parked car, the guy tried to have sex with me because he had bought me two beers!"

No. *050 "When I was forced to watch him (my date) while he masturbated. (Also on a separate occasion when he held me against my will."

No. 056 "When he (my date) put his finger inside my vagina".

No. *065 "Went out with a guy for a burger and drove home from work and he attempted to force himself on me. Took me to a desolate place, forced me out of the car, but eventually drove me home."

No. *066 "Being in the back of a movie theatre unable to make a 'scene' because others around me would know. Also I felt under pressure to do so because he paid for everything."

No. *072 "Forced to have oral sex against my wishes and had semen released in my mouth."

³⁰Cases from the out-of-class sample are identified by a single asterisk next to their case identification numbers.

No. *073 "My first rape occurred when a stranger followed me home from a bar and attacked me. My subsequent rapes were not as violent *per se*, but were committed by male friends and dates. The emotional scars, however, were almost more damaging and lasting- even though the bruises were fewer. The degradation, humiliation, and *guilt* was intense."

No. 091 "The part that upset me the most was the feeling of helplessness, that there wasn't a damn thing I could do about it at the time."

No. 094 "Choking to death (almost)."

No. 106 "...my boyfriend didn't stop having sexual intercourse with me even when I told him to stop..."

No. 111 "Having my boyfriend of two years have intercourse with me despite my saying I didn't want to and communicated it through lack of response (i.e., I just lay there). We were sleeping together and were naked, but I was tired."

No. 125 "The fact that when I said stop he kept going and/or made me feel guilty cause I wouldn't let him do what he wanted to do."

No. 139 "Being forced to have sex because you were too scared to prevent it."

No. 170 "The act of being forced to do something that I seriously did not want to do but felt I had to or I would endure more pain. I did not like not being in control of my fate."

No. 174 "Forcible removal of clothing and penetration- unwanted sexual intercourse."

No. 181 "Because he was a former boyfriend, I was most upset with the fact that he wouldn't listen. The experience that upset me the most was his ignorance of me and my refusals."

No. 194 "He (my date) was unwilling to listen to my request for him to stop."

No. 195 "I broke up with my boyfriend and told him I seriously didn't want to see him again. He forced himself on me (vaginal intercourse) even though I fought, yelled, and spit in his face and told him I hated him. I ended up giving in because we had had sex so often I felt kind of stupid resisting after a while. I was only 17."

No. 196 "The fact the person was so much bigger than me and that I couldn't have stopped what was progressing without someone's help. The fact I had no control."

No. *198 "Disrespect that the action indicated rather than the action itself."

No. *209 "Attempt of anal sex in a long term relationship."

No. *211 "Unwanted sexual contact at a young, naive, inexperienced age. Feelings of guilt, shame, at fault. How he made me feel afterward- he was very cruel; calling me names; Felt dirty."

No. *213 "Had intercourse against my wishes."

No. *221 "His *persistence* to continue- required that I had to break up our date/time together/whatever- couldn't seem to accept no to progressive activities."

No. *243 "When he (my boyfriend) placed his penis in my mouth (against my wishes) I bit him and then got beaten severely."

No. *249 "1st boyfriend- forced penis into my mouth."

No. 251 "Not stopping when asked to. Not having enough respect for me to do so."

No. 259 "Repeated verbal persistence when I clearly said No. Repeated mauling. Removed his clothing (all). Wouldn't leave. Occupation: lawyer."

No. *260 "At 15, I was raped (vaginally) by a male of about 20-25, with implied violence if I didn't agree. He was physically intimidating and I was miles away from a pay phone or an area that I could find my way home. I was also very drunk."

No. *261 "I have had unwanted sexual aggression from dates countless times- most of the time I had known them. They all took place when I was between 13 and 16 years old..."

Countless other instances of boyfriends or dates sexually assaulting women who have vested a certain amount of trust in them could be cited, but the sexual assault picture should by now be clear: Date sexual assault is a painful reality for a great many women; it is *not* something that only happens to a couple of women in a thousand. Indeed, the results of this study suggest that four out of every ten women may experience this form of sexual assault at least once in their lives.

Given that 78 females out of 184 said that a boyfriend or date had sexually assaulted them, it would be interesting to know how they compare with females who have never been sexually assaulted in terms of the precautions they

are taking to prevent future unwanted sexual attacks. Are date sexual assault victims more likely than non-sexual-assault victims to be taking precautions? Also, do the sort of precautions they take tend to significantly differ from those taken by non-victims? And what of the sort of precautions taken by other sexual assault victims? Do they significantly differ from the sort of precautions date sexual assault victims take to prevent sexual attack?

As Tables 6.35, 6.36, and 6.37 show, a substantial number of individuals from the three groups (sexually assaulted by a boyfriend/date, sexually assaulted by others,³¹ and never been sexually assaulted) are *not* taking any measures to prevent sexual assault. One in every four date sexual assault victims are not taking any precautions to prevent re-victimization, a proportion almost equal to that for those who have been sexually assaulted by others. The scenario for those who have never been sexually assaulted is even more depressing- three in every ten is not taking any precautions to prevent sexual victimization. When precautions or preventative measures are taken, it turns out that date sexual assault victims rely on self-defence and assertiveness training about as often as other sexual assault victims. Roughly 13% of date sexual assault victims and 9% of the other sexual assault victims said they were taking self-defence training. For assertiveness training, the respective percentages are 17% for date sexual assault victims and 15% for the other sexual assault victims. The percentages for the non-victims are 9.1% taking self-defence and 5.5% taking assertiveness training. The strategy of relying on a friend for protection was a popular one for all three groups, but especially for those who have been sexually assaulted by others- approximately four out of every ten such victims cited this

³¹Sexual assault by others includes all sexual assaults which are *not* date sexual assaults. This would include stranger sexual assaults, acquaintance sexual assaults, and marital sexual assaults.

Table 6.35
 Crosstabulation of Measures Female Date Sexual Assault
 Victims Taking to Prevent Sexual Assault by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total Cases	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Prevention Measures						
Self-defence Training	10	12.8%	4	11.8%	14	12.5%
Assertiveness Training	13	16.7%	8	23.5%	21	18.8%
Reliance on Friend	24	30.8%	7	20.6%	31	27.7%
Reliance on Security Personnel	2	2.6%	0	.0%	2	1.8%
Carrying a Weapon	4	5.1%	2	5.9%	6	5.4%
Avoiding Males	7	9.0%	2	5.9%	9	8.0%
No Precautions Being Taken	20	25.6%	9	26.5%	29	25.9%
Other Precautions	20	25.6%	12	35.3%	32	28.6%
No Response	8	10.3%	1	2.9%	9	8.0%
Total Cases	78	100.0%	34	100.0%	112	100.0%

Table 6.36
 Crosstabulation of Measures Other Kinds of Female Sexual
 Assault Victims Taking to Prevent Sexual Assault by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total Cases	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Prevention Measures						
Self-defence Training	4	8.5%	3	21.4%	7	11.5%
Assertiveness Training	7	14.9%	3	21.4%	10	16.4%
Reliance on Friend	18	38.3%	2	14.3%	20	32.8%
Reliance on Security Personnel	4	8.5%	1	7.1%	5	8.2%
Carrying a Weapon	4	8.5%	1	7.1%	5	8.2%
Avoiding Males	3	6.4%	0	.0%	3	4.9%
No Precautions Being Taken	12	25.5%	2	14.3%	14	23.0%
Other Precautions	9	19.1%	3	21.4%	12	19.7%
No Response	5	10.6%	2	14.3%	7	11.5%
Total Cases	47	100.0%	14	100.0%	61	100.0%

Table 6.37
 Crosstabulation of Measures Females Who Have Never Been
 Sexually Assaulted are Taking to Prevent Sexual Assault by CCU

	Condition Completed Under				Total Cases	
	In-Class		Out-of-Class			
Prevention Measures						
Self-defence Training	5	9.1%	2	9.5%	7	9.2%
Assertiveness Training	3	5.5%	0	.0%	3	3.9%
Reliance on Friend	10	18.2%	7	33.3%	17	22.4%
Reliance on Security Personnel	2	3.6%	1	4.8%	3	3.9%
Carrying a Weapon	2	3.6%	2	9.5%	4	5.3%
Avoiding Males	2	3.6%	0	.0%	2	2.6%
No Precautions Being Taken	16	29.1%	2	9.5%	18	23.7%
Other Precautions	6	10.9%	3	14.3%	9	11.8%
No Response	22	40.0%	10	47.6%	32	42.1%
Total Cases	55	100.0%	21	100.0%	76	100.0%

strategy. Relying on security personnel or carrying a weapon was also most popular among those who have been sexually assaulted by others- 8.5% of this group rely on security guards and 8.5% admit to carrying a weapon. Interestingly, date sexual assault victims are the least likely of all three groups to rely on security personnel for protection (2.6%). A possible explanation may be that of a lack of trust. Specifically, date sexual assault victims trusted their boyfriends/dates and had that trust broken. The result may be that they now feel they can trust few individuals since those closest (or close) to them betrayed that trust. This explanation may have some merit when one examines the strategy of avoiding males to prevent sexual assault. Date sexual assault victims were the most likely of the three groups to avoid males, suggesting that they feel many males cannot be trusted. Date sexual assault victims were also the most likely of the three groups to rely on measures other than the ones mentioned to prevent sexual assault. These "other" sexual assault prevention measures, all mentioned by date sexual assault victims, included not dating, not trusting men, not going out after dark, more carefully selecting one's dates, dating only in public places, watching the "signals" given off (by one's self and one's date), attending S.A.R.A. (Sexual Assault Recovery Anonymous), getting married, and keeping one's wedding rings on.

Victims Who Were Interviewed

As previously mentioned, a total of 46 date sexual assault victims were interviewed- 22 of whom also completed questionnaires and agreed to be interviewed because of a specific request in them. The remaining 24 had responded to classified requests placed in various B.C. newspapers. Due to incompleteness and response irregularities, this sample of 24 was reduced to a final one of 18. Because the two groups had been differentially induced to participate in

interview sessions, and had been interviewed with different interview schedules, it seemed methodologically perilous to lump them together into one group. On the other hand, if the two groups were not lumped together, much of the data they generated could simply not be used. Their respective sample sizes were just too small, too small being defined here as under 30 cases.³² Not wishing to commit a serious methodological error or to withhold all of the interview data, the author decided on a strategy to reconcile the two competing objectives: keep the two groups separate, focus on the group about which the least has been said (the 18 date sexual assault victims who did *not* complete questionnaires), make it clear how this sample differs from that out of which the 22 other interviewees were drawn, and then simply allow members of the "Group of 18" to describe (in their own words) their sexual victimization and feelings about it. Besides reconciling the two competing objectives discussed earlier, this strategy fills a void in that it allows non-students, older females, and females living outside of the Lower Mainland to describe their sexual victimization and its effects on them. Affording them this opportunity is important for a number of reasons, among them to show that date sexual assault is not a phenomenon confined only to post-secondary students or females under the age of 25 years.

Compared to the 112 date sexual assault victims who completed questionnaires, the 18 victims who were interviewed as a result of the classified request were demographically different. They tended to be older, more often divorced or separated, less highly educated, less racially diverse, and more often attracted exclusively to the opposite sex. Specifically, the 18 victims ranged in age from

³²With regards to sample size, Alreck and Settle state "...the researcher should be aware of the maximum and minimum practical sample sizes that apply to virtually all surveys. Ordinarily, a sample of less than about 30 respondents will provide too little certainty to be practical..." For the source of this quotation, see Alreck and Settle. *The Survey Research Handbook* at 88.

20 to 55 years, their mean age being 34.7 years (versus a mean of 22.4 years for the 112 other victims). Exactly one third were divorced. The remainder were either separated (16.7%), married (11.1%), or were single (38.9%). Approximately one third had a high school education or less. The remaining 66.7% had completed at least some college or university courses. As far as race and sexual orientation are concerned, 94.4% of the 18 date sexual assault victims are Caucasian and heterosexual.

When the interviewer asked them to describe the sexually assaultive experience which upset them the most, the 18 date sexual assault victims related (some with greater difficulty than others) the indignities that had been forced upon them. Particularly striking, especially when compared to the sample of 112, was how often physical assaults preceded or accompanied the sexual ones among the 18 women. Although it is quite possible that many date sexual assaults in non-student populations are accompanied by battering, such would not appear to be the case for the vast majority of date sexual assaults. More than likely, a response bias has resulted along the lines of the 'victims' perceived seriousness of their victimization. In other words, the greater the perceived seriousness of their victimization, the more likely date sexual assault victims were to pick up their phones to contact the interviewers. This latter possibility is suggested not to take away from what the 18 victims have to say, but to place what they have to say in perspective, and to remind readers that each victim's experience is uniquely her own. In their own words, then, here is how 14 of the 18 date sexual assault victims described their experiences:

No. 124 "I was knocked out (by my boyfriend) and punched repeatedly in my abdomen until it was bleeding. I was knocked out because I was fighting him (resisting his sexual advances)". After rendering her unconscious, her boyfriend had sexual intercourse with her.

No. 125 "I'd been dating him for three or four months. I was stroking his shoulder. He said 'Don't touch touch me! I don't like anyone being aggressive with me.' He then raped me in the front seat of the car". When asked by the interviewer why she thought he had raped her, she replied "He wanted to be in charge of the relationship and the situation".

No. 128 "...coming home from a date. He (her boyfriend) had been trying to persuade me to go out of town with him. I said no. He exploded his fist against my face."³³

No. 129 Victim's boyfriend called her into the bathroom under false pretences. Once in the bathroom, he grabbed her, held her down, removed her clothes, and had sexual intercourse with her against her will. She also recounted how she was the victim of an attempted stranger rape when she was 14 years old: "He pulled me into the van (a second male was driving). He was trying to take my clothes off. He started to take his clothes off. I started hitting him and pushing him...I slid open the door and got away."

No. 132 "I was working at a fast food place. He (her assailant) was a regular customer...On the fifth date, we went to Stanley Park. He was accusing me of being a flirt (because she would not go further sexually with him at that point in time). He pulled me onto the bench. Then I was on the ground..." Her date then had sexual intercourse with her against her will.

No. 133 Victim's boyfriend of just a few months had sexual intercourse with her against her will. Because they had previously had intercourse, she feels that he felt she had no right to deny him what he wanted sexually. Victim also recounted how her sister's father-in-law sexually assaulted her when she was 14 years old: "He (the father-in-law) didn't want me to go home alone. I already had a funny feeling. I said no, but everyone said I couldn't go home alone...(they then walked alongside a wooded area to her house). He was telling me dirty jokes. He started talking about my body and touching me. He pulled me in the woods, and threw me on the ground. He started trying to take my panties off..."

No. 135 "It (the forced sexual intercourse) was an unwanted act that took place. It was 21 years ago. There was a feeling of disgust and on top of that feeling sorry for him. It's still clear in my mind." Victim ended up marrying her assailant, whom she had been dating at the time.

No. 137 "He (her boyfriend) drove me to a bush. He pushed me down and said 'Now, do it' (perform fellatio on him)". Victim was forced to perform fellatio.

³³This woman came to the attention of the S.A.R.P. team when she wrote us a letter detailing some of her sexual assault experiences at the hands of men she had dated. She was later interviewed over the phone about her experiences.

No. 138 "Went for a drive with a guy near the U.S. border, and just because I wouldn't give him what he wanted, he left me stranded there. I had to hitch a ride home." Victim also recounted how a past boyfriend had sexual intercourse with her against her will, and how he had also tried to place his penis in her mouth while she was sleeping.

No. 139 "When I had not given any kind of consent at all." [Boyfriend had placed his penis in her vagina while she was sleeping.]

No. 142 "We (her boyfriend, two other men, and herself) were drinking at a bar. We went for a ride. It was a dark night...a dark, deserted road. Some of them started fondling my breasts..." Victim was then forced to engage in sexual intercourse with each of the two men while her boyfriend watched. Her boyfriend, although seeming to encourage the men, did not force himself on her.

No. 143 "I was 17 and I'd been dating him for about six months and I was a virgin. He decided he wanted intercourse and I didn't. He got physically abusive and punched me in the face a couple of times. He forced oral sex and then spread my legs apart..." Victim was then forced to have sexual intercourse against her will.

No. 144 "He (her boyfriend) was physically forcing himself on me. I screamed rape. He was furious. I was told I had sexual problems."

No. 146 "I was introduced to this guy from a friend. During the evening, I said 'I have to go home'. He started touching me, and I said 'No!' He kept going. He had me undressed. He started having sexual intercourse with me..."

In describing their victimization experiences, it became apparent that the 18 women did share some similarities with the 112 other date sexual assault victims. For example, the range of emotions they experienced was quite similar. Generally speaking, the 18 women experienced feelings of loss of control, loss of self-esteem, loss of trust, and anger or hate. Fear, guilt, amazement, and the feeling of being unloved was experienced to a lesser degree in the 18 women, if it was experienced at all.

Clearly, date sexual assault is not a phenomenon confined solely to post-secondary students or females under the age of 25 years, although that may well be the impression that is left since the majority of research that has been carried out in the area relies on student populations. Indeed, a similar

situation exists in the research on male sexual assault victims.³⁴ One of the challenges for future researchers will be to redress this imbalance- to conduct research on different groups or strata within the general population. Until that time, date sexual assault will largely continue to be thought of as the problem of young female students in much the same way that AIDS was (some would argue still is) thought of as largely the problem of male homosexuals.

The Criminal Justice System Response

Only one out of 112 women reported her date sexual assault to the police. This is less than 1%, a reporting rate far below the often-quoted one of 10% given for sexual assaults in general. Clearly, date sexual assault is one of the most under-reported of all crimes, and is perhaps the most under-reported of all the different types of sexual assaults involving teenagers and adults. Because date sexual assaults are rarely reported to the police, it is not surprising that the police rarely respond since they have no knowledge that a crime has been committed. And without a police report, criminal prosecution cannot commence. Without criminal prosecution, there can be no judicial verdict rendered. Without a judicial verdict, legal punishment (be it criminal or civil-based) will not be forthcoming. In short, a lack of reporting prevents the police and other criminal justice bodies from officially responding to date sexual assault.³⁵ Given past

³⁴ Because most of the studies looking at male sexual assault victims have examined the problem in institutionalized settings (i.e., prisons, mental health facilities, and military installations), the impression is given, unwarranted though it may be, that male sexual assault is only a problem for individuals in such settings.

³⁵ For the record, the one woman who reported her date sexual assault to the police labelled them unsupportive and the service they provided as poor. So who did the women tend to tell about their sexual victimization, and how did they rate these confidantes? For the most part, when date sexual assault victims chose to speak with someone about what had happened to them, their first choice was almost always their closest female friend, whom 64.3% deemed to be

police practice, however, even if date sexual assaults were reported, they are highly probable to be classified as "unfounded".³⁶

Besides the victim-offender relationship influencing the police classification of sexual assaults as founded or unfounded, it may also be that specific characteristics of the alleged victims and police officers influence such decisions. Specifically, the victims' race, gender, and age as well as the police officer's gender may influence the decision of individual police officers to classify a given case a certain way. A great deal depends on how closely police decision-making about sexual assault believability is to that of college and university student decision-making.

The present study found that male college and university students tended to be less believing of individuals who said they had been sexually assaulted than female college and university students. From Table 6.38, it can also be seen that both sexes tended to be influenced by the alleged victims' personal characteristics. With specific reference to the in-class sample, almost five times as many respondents said they would rarely or never believe a young boy alleging sexual assault (4.7%) as a young girl (1.0%). Similarly, 18.6% said they would rarely or never believe their best male friend if he said he had been sexually assaulted or raped compared with 0% who said the same of their best female friend. These two findings suggest that a sexual assault victim's gender

³⁵(cont'd) extremely supportive, 17.9% deemed to be moderately supportive, 14.3% deemed to be slightly supportive, and 4.0% deemed to not be supportive.

³⁶In Clark and Lewis' Vancouver study, the victim-offender relationship was found to be the most important variable in whether a sexual assault was classified as unfounded. Specifically, Clark and Lewis found that "...the greater the degree to which victim and offender are known to each other, the greater the probability of an unfounded classification". See Marilyn G. Stanley, *Sexual Assault Legislation in Canada: An Evaluation (The Experience of the Rape Victim With the Criminal Justice System Prior to Bill C-127)*, Report No. 1 (Ottawa: Department of Justice, [1987]), p.32.

Table 6.38
 Crosstabulation of Believability of Sexual Assault
 Victims with Specific Characteristics by Sex

Condition Completed
 Under
 In-Class

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
1. Respondent's Best Female Friend						
Always or Frequently	214	97.3%	182	98.9%	396	98.0%
Sometimes	5	2.3%	2	1.1%	7	1.7%
No Response	1	.5%	0	.0%	1	.2%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
2. Respondent's Best Male Friend						
Always or Frequently	144	65.5%	150	81.5%	294	72.8%
Sometimes	18	8.2%	16	8.7%	34	8.4%
Rarely or Never	57	25.9%	18	9.8%	75	18.6%
No Response	1	.5%	0	.0%	1	.2%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
3. East Indian Woman						
Always or Frequently	144	65.5%	146	79.3%	290	71.8%
Sometimes	46	20.9%	32	17.4%	78	19.3%
Rarely or Never	23	10.5%	3	1.6%	26	6.4%
No Response	7	3.2%	3	1.6%	10	2.5%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
4. Native Indian Woman						
Always or Frequently	119	54.1%	141	76.6%	260	64.4%
Sometimes	56	25.5%	31	16.8%	87	21.5%
Rarely or Never	38	17.3%	9	4.9%	47	11.6%
No Response	7	3.2%	3	1.6%	10	2.5%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
5. Elderly Woman						
Always or Frequently	164	74.5%	161	87.5%	325	80.4%
Sometimes	26	11.8%	14	7.6%	40	9.9%
Rarely or Never	25	11.4%	8	4.3%	33	8.2%
No Response	5	2.3%	1	.5%	6	1.5%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
6. Young Boy						
Always or Frequently	150	68.2%	150	81.5%	300	74.3%
Sometimes	54	24.5%	24	13.0%	78	19.3%
Rarely or Never	10	4.5%	9	4.9%	19	4.7%
No Response	6	2.7%	1	.5%	7	1.7%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
7. Young Girl						
Always or Frequently	175	79.5%	155	84.2%	330	81.7%
Sometimes	40	18.2%	24	13.0%	64	15.8%
Rarely or Never	0	.0%	4	2.2%	4	1.0%
No Response	5	2.3%	1	.5%	6	1.5%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
8. Black Woman						
Always or Frequently	174	79.1%	156	84.8%	330	81.7%
Sometimes	34	15.5%	24	13.0%	58	14.4%
Rarely or Never	5	2.3%	1	.5%	6	1.5%
No Response	7	3.2%	3	1.6%	10	2.5%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
9. White Woman						
Always or Frequently	179	81.4%	159	86.4%	338	83.7%
Sometimes	29	13.2%	21	11.4%	50	12.4%
Rarely or Never	5	2.3%	2	1.1%	7	1.7%
No Response	7	3.2%	2	1.1%	9	2.2%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
10. Chinese woman						
Always or Frequently	172	78.2%	156	84.8%	328	81.2%
Sometimes	30	13.6%	24	13.0%	54	13.4%
Rarely or Never	11	5.0%	1	.5%	12	3.0%
No Response	7	3.2%	3	1.6%	10	2.5%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%

does influence whether his/her story is believed. All other factors being equal, females alleging sexual assault tend to be believed more often than males *particularly when the person receiving or hearing the allegation is female.*

Concerning the age of the victim, 80.4% of respondents said that they would always or frequently believe an elderly woman alleging sexual assault compared with 81.7% who said the same thing about a young girl. The picture changes somewhat, however, when one compares the responses to the "sometimes" and "rarely or never" categories. With respect to the elderly woman, 9.9% of respondents said they would sometimes believe her allegation and 8.2% said they would rarely or never believe her. In contrast, 15.8% said they would sometimes and 1.0% said they would rarely or never believe a young girl who complained of sexual assault. It would thus appear that young girls have a slightly better chance of being believed than elderly women when it comes to allegations of sexual assault. Again, women are more likely to believe such allegations than men, although the difference is more pronounced when the victim is an elderly female (approximately 13% for the always or frequently category) as opposed to a young girl (approximately 5% for the same response category).

Perhaps the most unexpected of this study's findings, however, was that a victim's race did make a difference in whether her allegation of sexual assault was believed. *Native Indian women, in particular, suffered the highest rate of not being believed when they alleged having been sexually assaulted.* This finding held even controlling for the sex of the respondent and the condition under which the questionnaires were completed. Specifically, and with reference to the in-class sample, 11.6% of all respondents (17.3% of the men, 4.9% of the women) said that they would rarely or never believe a Native Indian female complaining of sexual assault. Further, 21.5% of these respondents (25.5% of the men, 16.8% of

the women) said that they would only sometimes believe allegations of sexual assault from Native Indian women. Only 64.4% of the in-class respondents (54.1% of the men, 76.6% of the women) said that they would always or frequently believe these women. East Indian women alleging sexual assault also suffered high rates of not being believed. Specifically, 6.4% of all in-class respondents (10.5% of the men, 1.6% of the women) indicated that they would rarely or never believe such women were they to allege sexual assault. Comparable percentages for Black women are 2.3% and 0.5% respectively. Clearly, East Indian women and especially Native Indian women alleging sexual assault are not believed by a sizeable percentage of college and university students. Whether the same pattern holds true for police officers is not known.³⁷ Even if the pattern only holds true for certain detachments, regions, or types of officers (i.e., Matsqui police officers as opposed to members of the R.C.M.P.), it does not bode well for female date sexual assault victims in such areas who just happen to be Native Indian or East Indian. Further study is required to assess the extent to which specific characteristics of police officers and alleged sexual assault victims affect officers' decisions to classify sexual assaults as founded or unfounded.

The Relationship of Sex Role Stereotyping, Adversarial Sexual Beliefs, and Acceptance of Interpersonal Violence to Rape Myth Acceptance

³⁷As of March 1989, commissions in Manitoba and Quebec have commenced inquiries into the police treatment of racial minorities. It is not known at this time how specific the inquiry will be, or whether the police treatment of racial minorities *alleging sexual assault* will be examined. See "RCMP Admit Racism," *The Province*, 30 March 1989, p. 26; and "B.C. RCMP Rule Out Racism," *The Vancouver Sun*, 31 March 1989, p. B2.

In research conducted in 1977, the results of which were published in 1980, Burt found that Americans believed many rape myths. For example, over half of the 598 adults surveyed agreed with the statement "A woman who goes to the home or apartment of a man on the first date implies that she is willing to have sex". She also found that a positive relationship existed between sex role stereotyping, adversarial sexual beliefs, acceptance of interpersonal violence and rape myth acceptance. Expressed somewhat differently, she found that "...the higher the sex role stereotyping, adversarial sexual beliefs, and acceptance of interpersonal violence, the greater a respondent's acceptance of rape myths". Acceptance of interpersonal violence, in particular, was found to be the strongest predictor of rape myth acceptance. Do a high percentage of non-Americans (in this case B.C. post-secondary students) subscribe to rape or sexual assault myths? Is there truly a positive relationship between each of the three variables (sex role stereotyping, adversarial sexual beliefs, acceptance of interpersonal violence) and rape myth acceptance?

Looking at Table 6:39 which lists Burt's rape myth acceptance scale items, it can be seen that a significant percentage of both men and women subscribe to certain myths. One third of the in-class male respondents and almost one fifth of the in-class female respondents agreed with the statement "A woman who goes to the home or apartment of a man on their first date implies that she is willing to have sex". Similarly, approximately one third of the males and females agreed that "When women go around braless or wearing short skirts and tight tops, they are just asking for trouble". As well, about one fifth of the sexes believe that "If a girl engages in necking or petting and she lets things get out of hand, it is her own fault if her partner forces sex on her." Further examples could be cited, but the point is clear: a significant percentage of both

Table 6.39 (Part 1 of 2)
 Crosstabulation of Burt's Rape Myth Acceptance
 Scale Items by Sex

Condition Completed
 Under
 In-Class

	Sex of Respondent		Total	
	Male	Female		
1. A woman who goes to the home... of a man on their first date implies that she is willing to have sex with him.				
Agree	75 34.1%	33 17.9%	108	26.7%
Disagree	144 65.5%	147 79.9%	291	72.0%
Don't Know	1 .5%	4 2.2%	5	1.2%
Total	220 100%	184 100%	404	100%
2. Any female can get raped.				
Agree	192 87.3%	176 95.7%	368	91.1%
Disagree	22 10.0%	6 3.3%	28	6.9%
Don't Know	6 2.7%	2 1.1%	8	2.0%
Total	220 100%	184 100%	404	100%
3. One reason that women falsely report a rape is that they frequently have a need to call attention to themselves.				
Agree	94 42.7%	71 38.6%	165	40.8%
Disagree	83 37.7%	82 44.6%	165	40.8%
Don't Know	43 19.5%	31 16.8%	74	18.3%
Total	220 100%	184 100%	404	100%
4. If she really wants to, any healthy woman can successfully resist being raped.				
Agree	26 11.8%	23 12.5%	49	12.1%
Disagree	185 84.1%	157 85.3%	342	84.7%
Don't Know	9 4.1%	4 2.2%	13	3.2%
Total	220 100%	184 100%	404	100%
5. When women go around braless or wearing short skirts and tight tops, they are just asking for trouble.				
Agree	90 40.9%	62 33.7%	152	37.6%
Disagree	125 56.8%	120 65.2%	245	60.6%
Don't Know	4 1.8%	2 1.1%	6	1.5%
No Response	1 .5%	0 .0%	1	.2%
Total	220 100%	184 100%	404	100%
6. In the majority of rapes, the victim is promiscuous or has a bad reputation.				
Agree	30 13.6%	18 9.8%	48	11.9%
Disagree	153 69.5%	151 82.1%	304	75.2%
Don't Know	37 16.8%	15 8.2%	52	12.9%
Total	220 100%	184 100%	404	100%
7. If a girl engages in necking or petting... it is her own fault if her partner forces sex on her.				
Agree	48 21.8%	30 16.3%	78	19.3%
Disagree	170 77.3%	153 83.2%	323	80.0%
Don't Know	2 .9%	1 .5%	3	.7%
Total	220 100%	184 100%	404	100%
8. Women who get raped while hitchhiking get what they deserve.				
Agree	25 11.4%	42 22.8%	67	16.6%
Disagree	193 87.7%	141 76.6%	334	82.7%
Don't Know	2 .9%	1 .5%	3	.7%
Total	220 100%	184 100%	404	100%

Table 6.39 (Part 2 of 2)
 Crosstabulation of Burt's Rape Myth Acceptance
 Scale Items by Sex

Condition Completed
 Under
 In-Class

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
9. A woman who is stuck-up and thinks she is too good to talk to guys on the street deserves to be taught a lesson.						
Agree	21	9.5%	6	3.3%	27	6.7%
Disagree	198	90.0%	177	96.2%	375	92.8%
Don't Know	1	.5%	1	.5%	2	.5%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
10. Many women have an unconscious wish to be raped.						
Agree	19	8.6%	14	7.6%	33	8.2%
Disagree	153	69.5%	152	82.6%	305	75.5%
Don't Know	48	21.8%	18	9.8%	66	16.3%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
11. If a woman gets drunk at a party and has sexual intercourse with a man she's just met there, she (is) ... fair game ...						
Agree	10	4.5%	8	4.3%	18	4.5%
Disagree	209	95.0%	174	94.6%	383	94.8%
Don't Know	1	.5%	2	1.1%	3	.7%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
12. What % of women who report a rape would you say are lying because they are angry and want to get back at the man...?						
About 75% or More	1	.5%	2	1.1%	3	.7%
About 50%	20	9.1%	11	6.0%	31	7.7%
About 25% or Less	198	90.0%	170	92.4%	368	91.1%
No Response	1	.5%	1	.5%	2	.5%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
13. What % of reported rapes would you guess were merely invented by women who discovered they were pregnant...?						
About 75% or More	2	.9%	1	.5%	3	.7%
About 50%	15	7.3%	5	2.7%	21	5.2%
About 25% or Less	201	91.4%	177	96.2%	378	93.6%
No Response	1	.5%	1	.5%	2	.5%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%

male and female respondents subscribe to rape myths.

Regarding the relationship of sex role stereotyping, adversarial sexual beliefs, and acceptance of interpersonal violence to rape myth acceptance, it is necessary to say a few words about these three independent variables prior to exploring their individual and collective relationships to rape myth acceptance. The

reason it is necessary is because there are strong indications that the variable, sex, may have to be controlled for.

As far as sex role stereotyping is concerned, Table 6.40 is most illuminating. Male respondents are more likely than female respondents to agree with stereotypical sex role statements. For example, 25.5% of the in-class males but only 7.6% of the in-class females agreed that "There is something wrong with a woman who doesn't want to raise a family". The situation is much the same with the adversarial sexual belief and acceptance of interpersonal violence items insofar as gender differences are concerned. As Tables 6.41 and 6.42 show, the male respondents as a group are more likely to hold adversarial sexual beliefs and to accept interpersonal violence than their female counterparts. Almost twice as many men from the in-class sample (10.5%) as women (6.0%) agreed that "A woman will only respect the man she is dating if he will lay down the law to her". Almost three times as many men (8.6%) as women (3.3%) believe that "In a dating relationship a woman is primarily out to take advantage of a man". But perhaps most disturbing of all, however, is that 25.0% of the in-class males and 15.2% of the in-class females agreed with the statement "Many times a woman will pretend she doesn't want to have sexual intercourse because she doesn't want to seem loose, but she's really hoping the man will force her". One can only speculate on the effect such a belief and others like it have on the commission of date sexual assault.

Given that the males in the present study were more likely than the females to sex role stereotype, hold adversarial sexual beliefs, and accept interpersonal violence, the author decided to control for the sex of the respondents in crosstabulations involving these three variables.³⁸ As will shortly become

³⁸Initially, the present author also controlled for the condition under which the

Table 6.40 (Part 1 of 2)
 Crosstabulation of Burt's Sex Role Stereotyping
 Scale Items by Sex

Condition Completed
 Under
 In-Class

	Sex of Respondent		Total	
	Male	Female		
1. A man should fight when the woman he's with is insulted by another man.				
Agree	141 64.1%	68 37.0%	209	51.7%
Disagree	76 34.5%	116 63.0%	192	47.5%
Don't Know	3 1.4%	0 .0%	3	.7%
Total	220 100%	184 100%	404	100%
2. When a man and woman are on a date, it is acceptable for the woman to pay for the date.				
Agree	178 80.9%	165 89.7%	343	84.9%
Disagree	41 18.6%	18 9.8%	59	14.6%
Don't Know	1 .5%	1 .5%	2	.5%
Total	220 100%	184 100%	404	100%
3. A woman should be a virgin when she marries.				
Agree	65 29.5%	39 21.2%	104	25.7%
Disagree	134 60.9%	135 73.4%	269	66.6%
Don't Know	19 8.6%	10 5.4%	29	7.2%
No Response	2 .9%	0 .0%	2	.5%
Total	220 100%	184 100%	404	100%
4. There is something wrong with a woman who doesn't want to raise a family.				
Agree	56 25.5%	14 7.6%	70	17.3%
Disagree	158 71.8%	169 91.8%	327	80.9%
Don't Know	6 2.7%	1 .5%	7	1.7%
Total	220 100%	184 100%	404	100%
5. A wife should never contradict her husband in public.				
Agree	65 29.5%	34 18.5%	99	24.5%
Disagree	151 68.6%	148 80.4%	299	74.0%
Don't Know	4 1.8%	1 .5%	5	1.2%
No Response	0 .0%	1 .5%	1	.2%
Total	220 100%	184 100%	404	100%
6. It is better for a woman to use her feminine charm to get what she wants rather than ask for it outright.				
Agree	30 13.6%	28 15.2%	58	14.4%
Disagree	185 84.1%	155 84.2%	340	84.2%
Don't Know	5 2.3%	1 .5%	6	1.5%
Total	220 100%	184 100%	404	100%
7. A man should be a virgin when he marries.				
Agree	40 18.2%	26 14.1%	66	16.3%
Disagree	163 74.1%	148 80.4%	311	77.0%
Don't Know	15 6.8%	10 5.4%	25	6.2%
No Response	2 .9%	0 .0%	2	.5%
Total	220 100%	184 100%	404	100%

Table 6.40 (Part 2 of 2)
 Crosstabulation of Burt's Sex Role Stereotyping
 Scale Items by Sex

Condition Completed
 Under
 In-Class

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
8. It looks worse for a woman to be drunk in public than for a man to be drunk in public.						
Agree	130	59.1%	86	46.7%	216	53.5%
Disagree	86	39.1%	96	52.2%	182	45.0%
Don't Know	4	1.8%	2	1.1%	6	1.5%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
9. There is nothing wrong with a woman sitting alone in a bar.						
Agree	173	78.6%	129	70.1%	302	74.8%
Disagree	46	20.9%	53	28.8%	99	24.5%
Don't Know	1	.5%	2	1.1%	3	.7%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%

Table 6.41 (Part 1 of 2)
 Crosstabulation of Burt's Adversarial Sexual Belief
 Scale Items by Sex

Condition Completed
 Under
 In-Class

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
1. A woman will only respect the man she is dating if he will lay down the law to her.						
Agree	23	10.5%	11	6.0%	34	8.4%
Disagree	187	85.0%	167	90.8%	354	87.6%
Don't Know	10	4.5%	6	3.3%	16	4.0%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
2. Many women are so demanding sexually that a man just can't satisfy them.						
Agree	36	16.4%	15	8.2%	51	12.6%
Disagree	159	72.3%	125	67.9%	284	70.3%
Don't Know	25	11.4%	43	23.4%	68	16.8%
No Response	0	0%	1	5%	1	2%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
3. A man must show the woman that he is the boss right from the start or he'll end up henpecked.						
Agree	53	24.1%	14	7.6%	67	16.6%
Disagree	163	74.1%	168	91.3%	331	81.9%
Don't Know	4	1.8%	2	1.1%	6	1.5%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
4. Women are usually sweet until they've caught a man, but then they let their true self show.						
Agree	82	37.3%	32	17.4%	114	28.2%
Disagree	129	58.6%	149	81.0%	278	68.8%
Don't Know	9	4.1%	3	1.6%	12	3.0%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
5. A lot of men talk big, but when it comes down to it, they can't perform well sexually.						
Agree	118	53.6%	78	42.4%	196	48.5%
Disagree	53	24.1%	61	33.2%	114	28.2%
Don't Know	48	21.8%	44	23.9%	92	22.8%
No Response	1	5%	1	5%	2	5%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
6. In a dating relationship a woman is primarily out to take advantage of a man.						
Agree	19	8.6%	6	3.3%	25	6.2%
Disagree	190	86.4%	176	95.7%	366	90.6%
Don't Know	11	5.0%	2	1.1%	13	3.2%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
7. Men are out for only one thing—sex.						
Agree	71	32.3%	59	32.1%	130	32.2%
Disagree	145	65.9%	121	65.8%	266	65.8%
Don't Know	4	1.8%	4	2.2%	8	2.0%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%

Table 6.41 (Part 2 of 2)
 Crosstabulation of Burt's Adversarial Sexual Belief
 Scale Items by Sex

Condition Completed
 Under
 In-Class

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
8. Most women are sly and manipulating when they are out to attract a man.						
Agree	100	45.5%	67	36.4%	167	41.3%
Disagree	106	48.2%	117	63.6%	223	55.2%
Don't Know	14	6.4%	0	.0%	14	3.5%
No Response	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
9. A lot of women seem to get pleasure in putting men down.						
Agree	65	29.5%	54	29.3%	119	29.5%
Disagree	141	64.1%	114	62.0%	255	63.1%
Don't Know	14	6.4%	16	8.7%	30	7.4%
No Response	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%

Table 6.42
Crosstabulation of Burt's Acceptance of Interpersonal Violence
Scale Items by Sex

Condition Completed
Under
In-Class

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
1. People today should not use "an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth" as a rule for living.						
Agree	144	65.5%	125	67.9%	269	66.6%
Disagree	66	30.0%	51	27.7%	117	29.0%
Don't Know	10	4.5%	8	4.3%	18	4.5%
No Response	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
2. Being roughed up is sexually stimulating to many women.						
Agree	32	14.5%	22	12.0%	54	13.4%
Disagree	161	73.2%	141	76.6%	302	74.8%
Don't Know	27	12.3%	21	11.4%	48	11.9%
No Response	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
3. Many times a woman will pretend she doesn't want to have sex...but she's really hoping the man will force her.						
Agree	55	25.0%	28	15.2%	83	20.5%
Disagree	141	64.1%	143	77.7%	284	70.3%
Don't Know	24	10.9%	13	7.1%	37	9.2%
No Response	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
4. A wife should move out of the house if her husband hits her.						
Agree	140	63.6%	143	77.7%	283	70.0%
Disagree	65	29.5%	37	20.1%	102	25.2%
Don't Know	15	6.8%	4	2.2%	19	4.7%
No Response	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
5. Sometimes the only way a man can get a frigid woman turned on is to use force.						
Agree	15	6.8%	6	3.3%	21	5.2%
Disagree	184	83.6%	159	86.4%	343	84.9%
Don't Know	21	9.5%	19	10.3%	40	9.9%
No Response	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%
6. A man is never justified in hitting his wife.						
Agree	179	81.4%	168	91.3%	347	85.9%
Disagree	40	18.2%	15	8.2%	55	13.6%
Don't Know	1	.5%	1	.5%	2	.5%
No Response	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
Total	220	100%	184	100%	404	100%

apparent, it was crucial for respondent gender to be controlled; had it not been, important differences between the males and the females would have been obscured. So what is the relationship, if any, between (1) sex role stereotyping and rape myth acceptance, (2) adversarial sexual beliefs and rape myth acceptance, (3) acceptance of interpersonal violence and rape myth acceptance, and (4) the above three variables combined and rape myth acceptance?

Beginning with sex role stereotyping and rape myth acceptance, Table 6.43 shows that 20.5% of the 258 males but only 8.4% of the 251 females fell into the *Medium-High* category for sex role stereotyping.³⁹ For rape myth acceptance, 5.8% of the males fell into the *Medium-High* category compared to 2.8% of the females. As the crosstabulation further reveals, only a small percentage of males (.02%) and females (.004%) fell into both categories (i.e., *Medium-High* for both sex role stereotyping and rape myth acceptance). Calculation of the chi-square statistic showed there to be *no* statistically significant relationship between sex role stereotyping and rape myth acceptance for either the males or the females.⁴⁰ It is interesting to note, however, that the results for the males were much closer than those for the females to the .05 level of significance.⁴¹

As far as the relationship between adversarial sexual beliefs and rape myth acceptance is concerned, Table 6.44 reveals a number of particularly fascinating findings. First, a much greater percentage of males than females fell into the

³⁸(cont'd) questionnaires were completed (i.e., in-class and out-of-class), but soon found that this "condition" did not need to be controlled for in the required crosstabulations.

³⁹The total number of males is 258 rather than 260 (and 251 females total instead of 254) due to the missing cases being excluded from the analysis.

⁴⁰A chi-square value of 2.5 with 1 degree of freedom and a significance level of 0.1112 was obtained for the males compared with one of 0.0 with 1 degree of freedom and a significance level of 1.0000 for the females.

⁴¹*Ibid.*

Table 6.43
 Crosstabulation of Rape Myth Acceptance by Sex
 Role Stereotyping

Sex of Respondent
 Male

	Sex Role Stereotyping		Row Total
	Low-Medium	Medium-High	
Rape Myth Acceptance Low-Medium	196 95.6%	47 88.7%	243 94.2%
Medium-High	9 4.4%	6 11.3%	15 5.8%
Column Total	205 100.0%	53 20.5%	258 100.0%

Missing Cases= 2 (Males), 3 (Females)

Table 6.43
 Crosstabulation of Rape Myth Acceptance by Sex
 Role Stereotyping

Sex of Respondent
 Female

	Sex Role Stereotyping		Row Total
	Low-Medium	Medium-High	
Rape Myth Acceptance Low-Medium	224 97.4%	20 95.2%	244 97.2%
Medium-High	6 2.6%	1 4.8%	7 2.8%
Column Total	230 100.0%	21 8.4%	251 100.0%

Missing Cases= 2 (Males), 3 (Females)

Medium-High category for adversarial sexual beliefs- 19.2% of the 255 males compared with only 5.2% of the 249 females.⁴² For rape myth acceptance, 5.9% of the males and 2.8% of the females fell into the *Medium-High* category. Second, a greater percentage of the males than the females fell into *both* *Medium-High* categories (i.e., *Medium-High* for both adversarial sexual beliefs and rape myth acceptance)- 3.9% of the 255 males versus 0.4% of the 249 females.

⁴²The total number of males is 255 rather than 260 (and 249 females total instead of 254) due to the missing cases being excluded from the analysis.

Table 6.44
Crosstabulation of Rape Myth Acceptance by
Adversarial Sexual Beliefs

Sex of Respondent
Male

	Adversarial Sexual Beliefs		Row Total
	Low-Medium	Medium-High	
Rape Myth Acceptance Low-Medium	201 97.6%	39 79.6%	240 94.1%
Medium-High	5 2.4%	10 20.4%	15 5.9%
Column Total	206 100.0%	49 100.0%	255 100.0%
	80.8%	19.2%	100.0%

Missing Cases= 5 (Males), 5 (Females)

Table 6.44
Crosstabulation of Rape Myth Acceptance by
Adversarial Sexual Beliefs

Sex of Respondent
Female

	Adversarial Sexual Beliefs		Row Total
	Low-Medium	Medium-High	
Rape Myth Acceptance Low-Medium	230 97.5%	12 92.3%	242 97.2%
Medium-High	6 2.5%	1 7.7%	7 2.8%
Column Total	236 100.0%	13 100.0%	249 100.0%
	94.8%	5.2%	100.0%

Missing Cases= 5 (Males), 5 (Females)

Third, the relationship between adversarial sexual beliefs and rape myth acceptance was found to be *statistically significant for the males, but not for the females*. A chi-square value of 20.0 with 1 degree of freedom and a significance level of 0.00005 was found for the males. In sharp contrast, the chi-square value for the females was 0.1 with 1 degree of freedom and a significance level of 0.8166, which is clearly not statistically significant. And fourth, the relationship between adversarial sexual beliefs and rape myth acceptance *in males* was found

to be *positive*.⁴³ In other words, as adversarial sexual beliefs increased, so did acceptance of rape myths.

Regarding the relationship between the acceptance of interpersonal violence and rape myth acceptance, Table 6.45 is equally as fascinating as the one before it. A greater percentage of males than females fell into the *Medium-High* category for the acceptance of interpersonal violence, although the difference is not as pronounced as it was for the adversarial sexual beliefs. Specifically, 8.6% of the 256 males compared with 3.2% of the 250 females fell into the *Medium-High* category for the acceptance of interpersonal violence.⁴⁴ For rape myth acceptance, 5.9% of the males and 2.8% of the females fell into the *Medium-High* category. Second, a greater percentage of the males than the females fell into *both* *Medium-High* categories (i.e., *Medium-High* for both the acceptance of interpersonal violence and rape myth acceptance)- 2.0% of the 256 males versus 0.4% of the 250 females. Third, the relationship between the acceptance of interpersonal violence and rape myth acceptance was found to be *statistically significant for the males, but not for the females*. Calculation of the chi-square statistic produced a value of 9.3 with 1 degree of freedom and a significance level of 0.0023 for the males. This compares with a statistically non-significant one of 0.4 with 1 degree of freedom and a significance level of 0.5477 for the females. And fourth, the relationship between the acceptance of interpersonal violence and rape myth acceptance *in males* was found to be

⁴³Because the chi-square statistic provides little information regarding the *strength* and *nature* of the relationship between two variables, Goodman and Kruskal's Gamma was calculated to fill this void. A gamma of 0.82313 was obtained for the males in Table 6.44. Since the range for gamma is -1 (which indicates a perfect negative relationship) and +1 (which indicates a perfect positive relationship), it can be concluded that a *positive* relationship exists between adversarial sexual beliefs and rape myth acceptance in males.

⁴⁴The total number of males is 256 rather than 260 (and 250 females total instead of 254) due to the missing cases being excluded from the analysis.

Table 6.45
 Crosstabulation of Rape Myth Acceptance by
 Acceptance of Interpersonal Violence

Sex of Respondent
 Male

	Acceptance of Interpersonal Violence		Row Total
	Low-Medium	Medium-High	
Rape Myth Acceptance			
Low-Medium	224 95.7%	17 77.3%	241 94.1%
Medium-High	10 4.3%	5 22.7%	15 5.9%
Column Total	234 100.0%	22 100.0%	256 100.0%
	91.4%	8.6%	100.0%

Missing Cases= 4 (Males), 4 (Females)

Table 6.45
 Crosstabulation of Rape Myth Acceptance by
 Acceptance of Interpersonal Violence

Sex of Respondent
 Female

	Acceptance of Interpersonal Violence		Row Total
	Low-Medium	Medium-High	
Rape Myth Acceptance			
Low-Medium	236 97.5%	7 87.5%	243 97.2%
Medium-High	6 2.5%	1 12.5%	7 2.8%
Column Total	242 100.0%	8 100.0%	250 100.0%
	96.8%	3.2%	100.0%

Missing Cases= 4 (Males), 4 (Females)

positive.⁴⁵

Crosstabulating the scores obtained from combining sex role stereotyping, adversarial sexual beliefs, and the acceptance of interpersonal violence with rape myth acceptance resulted in considerable insight into their *collective* relationship

⁴⁵Calculating Goodman and Kruskal's Gamma for the "male data" in Table 6.45 yielded a gamma of 0.73643. Since the range for gamma is -1 (which indicates a perfect negative relationship) and +1 (which indicates a perfect positive relationship), it can be concluded that a *positive* relationship exists between the acceptance of interpersonal violence and rape myth acceptance in males.

to the latter variable. As might be surmised from the preceding analysis, and later confirmed by a perusal of Table 6.46, a much greater percentage of men than women fell into the *Medium-High* category for the combined three variables of sex role stereotyping, adversarial sexual beliefs, and the acceptance of interpersonal violence. More precisely, 11.4% of the 254 males compared with a mere 1.6% of the 246 females fell into the *Medium-High* category for the combined three variables.⁴⁶ For rape myth acceptance, 5.9% of the males and 2.8% of the females fell into the *Medium-High* category. Second, and not unexpectedly, a greater percentage of males than females fell into *both* *Medium-High* categories (i.e., *Medium-High* for both the three combined variables and rape myth acceptance)- 2.8% for the 254 males and 0% for the 246 females. Third, calculation of the chi-square statistic revealed that a *statistically significant relationship existed between the three combined variables and rape myth acceptance for the males, but not for the females*. For the record, a chi-square value of 16.1 with 1 degree of freedom and a significance level of 0.0001 was obtained for the males. In sharp contrast, a chi-square value of 0.0 with 1 degree of freedom and a significance level of 1.0000 was obtained for the females which is, of course, not statistically significant. Finally, the relationship between the three combined variables and rape myth acceptance *in males* was found to be *positive*.⁴⁷

⁴⁶The total number of males is 254 rather than 260 (and 246 females total instead of 254) due to the missing cases being excluded from the analysis.

⁴⁷Calculating Goodman and Kruskal's Gamma for the "male data" in Table 6.46 yielded a gamma of 0.79233. Since the range for gamma is -1 (which indicates a perfect negative relationship) and +1 (which indicates a perfect positive relationship), it can be concluded that a *positive* relationship exists between the three combined variables and rape myth acceptance in males.

Table 6.46
 Crosstabulation of Rape Myth Acceptance by
 the Combined Scores of Sex Role Stereotyping,
 Adversarial Sexual Beliefs, & Acceptance of
 Interpersonal Violence

Sex of Respondent
 Male

	Combined 3 Previous Scores		Row Total
	Low-Medium	Medium-High	
Rape Myth Acceptance			
Low-Medium	217 96.4%	22 75.9%	239 94.1%
Medium-High	8 3.6%	7 24.1%	15 5.9%
Column Total	225 100.0%	29 100.0%	254 100.0%
	88.6%	11.4%	100.0%

Missing Cases= 6 (Males) & 8 (Females)

Table 6.46
 Crosstabulation of Rape Myth Acceptance by
 the Combined Scores of Sex Role Stereotyping,
 Adversarial Sexual Beliefs, & Acceptance of
 Interpersonal Violence

Sex of Respondent
 Female

	Combined 3 Previous Scores		Row Total
	Low-Medium	Medium-High	
Rape Myth Acceptance			
Low-Medium	235 97.1%	4 100.0%	239 97.2%
Medium-High	7 2.9%	0 .0%	7 2.8%
Column Total	242 100.0%	4 100.0%	246 100.0%
	98.4%	1.6%	100.0%

Missing Cases= 6 (Males), 8 (Females)

The Relationship of Rape Myth Acceptance to the Commission and Reporting of Date Sexual Assault

Is there a positive relationship between rape myth acceptance and the self-reported commission of date sexual assault? Or to phrase the question somewhat differently, are high rape myth acceptance males more likely than low

rape myth acceptance males to commit date sexual assault? And what of the reporting of the assault? Are female date sexual assault victims who tend to believe in rape myths less likely to report their victimization to the police than victims who tend *not* to believe such myths?

Beginning with the first issue, so few of the males surveyed reported sexually assaulting their girlfriends or dates that the scope of the question had to be broadened to include females in general if any sort of meaningful statistical analyses were to be performed.⁴⁸ The question thus became: Is there a positive relationship between rape myth acceptance and the self-reported commission of *sexual assault*?

As Table 6.47 shows, 22 or 8.8% of the males (19 in-class, 3 out-of-class) responded affirmatively to the question "Have you ever been in a situation where you became so sexually aroused that you couldn't stop yourself from having sexual intercourse even though the female you were with didn't want to continue?" In crosstabulating the replies to this question by levels of rape myth acceptance and comparing the observed frequencies to the expected frequencies, it would appear that a relationship does *not* exist between these two variables. Calculation of the chi-square statistic confirms this suspicion. A chi-square value of 1.2 with 1 degree of freedom and a significance level of 0.2703 was obtained. Of course, it can be argued that different results (perhaps even statistically

⁴⁸ Only 3 or 1.4% of the 220 in-class males surveyed indicated that they had ever sexually assaulted a girlfriend or date. Lest it be thought that this finding is due to a lack of sexual experience on the part of the males, the following statistics (all pertaining to the 220 in-class males) will be of interest:

1. 90.5% said that they had petted a female *above* her waist,
2. 88.6% said they had petted a female *below* her waist,
3. 75.0% said they had experienced penile-vaginal intercourse.
4. 70.0% said they had performed cunnilingus,
5. 73.6% said a female had performed fellatio on them, and
6. 17.7% said they had engaged in anal intercourse with a female.

Table 6.47
 Crosstabulation of the Self-Reported Commission
 of Sexual Assault by Rape Myth Acceptance

Row Total

	Rape Myth Acceptance		Row Total
	Low-Medium	Medium-High	
Committed Sexual Assault?			
Yes	19 8.1%	3 20.0%	22 8.8%
No	215 91.9%	12 80.0%	227 91.2%
Column Total	234 100.0%	15 100.0%	249 100.0%
	94.0%	6.0%	100.0%

Missing Cases= 11

significant ones) would have been obtained had the sexual assault measures not been of the self-report kind. This is a valid criticism. Not all sexual assaults that have been committed are acknowledged to survey researchers or even to self. Future research needs to explore the disparities between self-reported sexually deviant behaviour and actual behaviour to determine just how far apart the two are, and how the gulf between them might be narrowed.

As far as the second issue is concerned, that of rape myth acceptance and its effect on victim reporting of date sexual assault to the police, there is a slight problem. Only one date sexual assault victim out of 112 reported her victimization to the police. Since a sample size of at least twenty is required insofar as the testing of relationships between variables is concerned, the second issue had to be restructured as well. The issue became, "Are female date sexual assault victims who tend to believe in rape myths less likely to report their victimization to *friends, family, or members of the helping professions* than victims who tend not to believe such myths?"

Table 6.48
 Crosstabulation of the Reporting of Date Sexual
 Assault (to Friends, Family, and Members of the
 Helping Professions) by Rape Myth Acceptance

Row Total

	Rape Myth Acceptance		Row Total
	Low-Medium	Medium-High	
Action Taken After Date Sexual Assault Reported D.S.A.	55 50.9%	1 50.0%	56 50.9%
Did Not Report D.S.A.	53 49.1%	1 50.0%	54 49.1%
Column Total	108 100.0%	2 100.0%	110 100.0%
	98.2%	1.8%	100.0%

Missing Cases = 2

From Table 6.48, it can be seen that an almost equal number of respondents having a low to medium acceptance of rape myths reported their victimization to friends, family members, or members of the helping professions (N=55) as those who did not (N=53). Similarly, an equal number of respondents with medium to high rape myth acceptance (N=1) reported their victimization as those who did not (N=1).⁴⁹ Coincidentally, these *observed frequencies* matched the *expected frequencies* exactly. Knowing this information, a statistician asked to comment on the relationship between the two variables would reply that they were independent of one another (i.e., not statistically related).⁵⁰ Calculation of the chi-square statistic would prove the statistician correct. For the record, the obtained chi-square value was 0.0 with 1 degree of freedom and a significance level of 1.0000. Clearly, then, a respondent's level of rape myth acceptance is *not* statistically related to whether or not she reports being sexually assaulted

⁴⁹The total number of date sexual assault victims who reported their victimization is 110 rather than 112 due to the missing cases being excluded from the analysis.

⁵⁰As Norusis states at p. 242 in *The SPSS Guide to Data Analysis*, "If the variables are independent, then the observed and expected frequencies should be close to each other, and the value of the chi-square statistic should be small".

by a boyfriend or date to friends, family, or members of the helping professions.

CHAPTER VII

DISCUSSION

The findings of the present study are many and varied. Only the more significant of these will be discussed in this chapter. Primarily, the "more significant" findings include those from the preceding chapter (i.e., Chapter VI), although selected findings from Chapters III (Date Rape and the Law in Historical Perspective) and IV (From Kanin Onwards: A Review of the Date Rape Research) will be discussed. Findings from these three chapters will be discussed under the following seven headings- the prevalence and nature of date sexual assault; the offenders; the victims; the criminal justice system response; the relationship of sex role stereotyping, adversarial sexual beliefs, and acceptance of interpersonal violence to rape myth acceptance; the relationship of rape myth acceptance to the commission and reporting of date sexual assault; and the study of date sexual assault.¹

Beginning with the prevalence and nature of date sexual assault, the findings of the present study provide strong support for the assertion that sexual assaults in dating/courting relations are widespread among female college and university students. The results of this study suggest that one in every four post-secondary female students will be sexually assaulted by a boyfriend or date at some point in her life. Of those who are sexually assaulted, 23% will be forced to engage in vaginal intercourse, 13% will be forced to endure digital penetration, and 5% will be forced to perform fellatio. If attempts are included, these percentages will be even higher. And yet, the image many post-secondary students have of a rapist is a stranger jumping out from behind the bushes

¹Although findings from Chapters III, IV, and VI will be discussed under seven headings, these headings will *not* be printed.

late at night wielding a weapon. All too often this image is reinforced by the media (as in the coverage it gave the "Paperbag Rapist" and other stranger rapists), and by well-meaning but misinformed individuals and law enforcement agencies (who counsel women on how to prevent stranger sexual assault at the total exclusion of the other types of sexual assault). While not denying that strangers do sexually assault women, the *more likely* threat to female college and university students are *men they know*, not strangers. Once this reality is recognized, society and individual women will be better prepared to deal with date sexual assault in terms of prevention and remedial measures.

As far as date sexual assault *offenders* are concerned, there were two particularly significant findings- (1) the majority of offenders do not appear to be "psychopaths", and (2) the males in the present study did not admit enough victimizing to account for the number of victimizations reported by the females. With respect to the first of these findings, if so-called "normal" men commit the majority of date sexual assaults rather than "psychopaths", what does this tell us about the etiology of the behaviour? Does it not suggest a "sick" society, a society which does little to discourage and much to promote sexual assault in dating relationships? If so, if the problem of date sexual assault is to be effectively dealt with over the long term, then the societal ideology which supports the continued occurrence of the behaviour must be vigorously and openly challenged just as slavery itself was challenged. For clearly, sexual assault in a relationship, though it may be labelled "normal" behaviour by some, is still sexual assault. As such, it should attract no less legal attention or sanction than any other form of sexual assault. Regarding the second finding, that of far fewer men than women reporting involvement in date sexual assault, it is interesting to note that Koss et al. in their national study of rape, found the same

anomaly. In their words:

"The findings of the present study demonstrate that men do not admit enough sexual aggression to account for the number of victimizations reported by women. Specifically, 54% of college women claimed to be sexually victimized, but only 25% of college men admitted any degree of sexually aggressive behaviour."²

After ruling out the explanation of a few extremely sexually active men victimizing a sizeable number of women, Koss et al. concluded that "...some of the victimizations reported by college women occurred in earlier years and were not perpetrated by the men who were surveyed".³ As for more recent victimizations, they concluded that such victimizations may have included community members not attending college or university. A third explanation also comes to mind. Perhaps some males were unwilling to admit (even anonymously or to themselves) to having engaged in a disreputable act. In any event, it remains for future researchers to determine which of these explanations, if any, account for the difference in rates between disclosures of sexual victimizing and disclosures of sexual victimization.

As far as the *victims* of date sexual assault are concerned, three findings are of special interest- (1) not all victims of this crime see themselves as being sexual assault victims, (2) most date sexual assaults are *not* reported to the police, and (3) date sexual assault is much more likely to result in mental, as opposed to physical, trauma. The first finding, in particular, seems hard to believe. Can individuals, in this case women, actually be victims of *crimes against the person* and not know it? If they have been socialized to believe that most men engage in sexually assaultive behaviour with their girlfriends or dates and

²Mary P. Koss, Christine A. Gidycz, and Nadine Wisniewski. "The Scope of Rape: Incidence and Prevalence of Sexual Aggression and Victimization in a National Sample of Higher Education Students." *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology* 55 (April 1987): 169.

³*Ibid.*

that such behaviour is "normal", then is it any wonder that such women do *not* see themselves as victims? Time and time again, women who took part in the present author's study questioned whether sexual assault could even occur between two individuals who were dating and, if it could, whether it should be labelled as such. Still others came to realize that they had been sexually assaulted by dates in the past, but had not labelled their experiences sexual assaults at the time. The tendency of some date sexual assault victims to not acknowledge their victimization relates to the second finding. If date sexual assault is *not* acknowledged as sexual assault, is it surprising that the behaviour is not reported to the police? Of course not. Why, after all, would anyone report a behaviour they defined as being "normal" and or legal to the police? But even women who realize that they have been date raped or otherwise sexually assaulted in a dating relationship often do not report their victimization to the police. Why? According to Warshaw, such women think that the police will not believe them, will blame them, or simply not consider the incident sexual assault. In her words, "...they (victims of date sexual assault) expect the police to react the way much of society will react- with disbelief and recriminations".⁴ Sadly, these fears are not unfounded. In many date sexual assaults, there is an absence of physical evidence (i.e., a lack of torn clothing or physical injuries) to indicate lack of consent to the sexual activity in question. Add to this the fact that the victim may have consented to some of the sexual activity or willingly gone with her date to the location of the attack, and it becomes easier to understand the basis for such fear. And if this fear of not being believed or even blamed were not bad enough, victims of date sexual assault (for the most part) will also have to contend with mental trauma from the attack itself. The

⁴Robin Warshaw, *I Never Called It Rape: The Ms. Report on Recognizing, Fighting and Surviving Date and Acquaintance Rape* (New York: Harper and Row, 1988), p. 62.

consequences of such mental trauma may include anxiety and nervousness, depression, crying, feelings of being alone, difficulty interacting with men, difficulty concentrating, sleep disturbances, loss of interest in sex, sudden mood changes, intense fears, job or school difficulties, loss of trust in men, extreme anger at the offender, feelings of helplessness, feelings of guilt, self-doubt, loss of self-esteem, thoughts of suicide, and even attempts at suicide. Clearly, the consequences of date sexual assault, with its attendant betrayal of trust, can be enormous and overwhelming.

The findings of the present study with regards to the Canadian criminal justice system's treatment of date sexual assault are as illuminating as they are shocking and shameful. Historically, date sexual assault has been treated as a second class or even third class crime, if it has been treated as a crime at all. It has been seen as less deserving or worthy of attention (or sanctions) than stranger sexual assault by both the law enforcement community and the judiciary. Given this fact, is it any wonder that date sexual assault is one of the most underreported (if not the most underreported) of all crimes? Contributing to this severe underreporting of date sexual assault, it would appear, are the strained relations between the police and members of *visible minorities* in parts of Canada. In Ontario, for example, a committee created by the provincial Solicitor-General to investigate alleged police racism concluded that "(r)elations between police and visible minorities in the province of Ontario are at a depressingly low level".⁵ Further, this committee found that members of visible minorities (Native Indians included) did not perceive that they were policed fairly in Ontario. With circumstances like these, it seems probable that date sexual assault is even less likely to be reported to the police by visible minority group

⁵"Ontario Police Attacks on Minorities Feared," *The Vancouver Sun*, 12 April 1989, p. A8.

members. Improving relations between the police and citizens (especially minority group members) must accompany change in the criminal justice system handling of date sexual assault complaints *at all levels* if a greater number of such victims are to be encouraged to come forward. Until that time, date sexual assaults will largely continue to go unreported, undetected, unprosecuted, and unpunished.

The present study's finding that male post-secondary students are more likely than their female counterparts to sex role stereotype, hold adversarial sexual beliefs, accept interpersonal violence, and subscribe to rape myths is deeply disturbing. That statistically significant positive relationships were found for (1) males holding adversarial sexual beliefs and believing rape myths, and (2) males accepting interpersonal violence and believing rape myths provides further cause for concern. Although such beliefs, in and of themselves, may not trigger the actual commission of date sexual assault, it nevertheless seems reasonable to suggest that such beliefs (especially of rape myths) do *not* provide an atmosphere conducive to either positive social change or one which even supports date sexual assault victims in their hour of greatest need. As such, these beliefs need to be challenged. Because many of these beliefs are formed prior to and during one's "early dating years" (usually the "teen years"), education or the de-bunking of rape myths, dating myths, and myths about females and males needs to begin early. Ideally, such education should begin in the elementary schools and be continued in the junior and senior secondary schools and post-secondary institutions.

With respect to the relationship of rape myth acceptance to the commission and reporting of date sexual assault, no statistically significant relationships were found. Why? In the case of rape myth acceptance and the reporting of

date sexual assault (to friends, family, or members of the helping professions), it would appear that a statistically significant relationship between the two variables simply does not exist. The possibility of an intervening third variable accounting for the finding seems unlikely. In the case of rape myth acceptance and the commission of date sexual assault, however, two explanations for the finding seem both possible and plausible- a statistically significant relationship between the two variables does not exist, or a statistically significant relationship does exist but is masked. If the reader will recall, the measure of the commission of date sexual assault was *not* the actual commission of all such sexual assaults, but merely the *self-reported* commission of such acts. Perhaps those who have committed date sexual assault *but not admitted it* differ as a group in some way from those who have both committed date sexual assault *and admitted it*. Perhaps the "non-admitters" or "deniers" are more likely than the "admitters" to sex role stereotype, hold adversarial sexual beliefs, and accept interpersonal violence. Whether the addition of the "deniers", however large or small a group they may be, to the "admitters" followed by the recalculation of the tests of independence would result in a different finding (i.e., that a statistically significant relationship does exist between the two variables in question) is difficult to say. Much research remains to be conducted into the differences between "deniers" and "admitters" of date sexual assault before this issue can be satisfactorily addressed.

Given that date sexual assault is widespread among female college and university students, and that the phenomena has tended, until about the last six years, to be ignored by much of the academic community prompts the question, "Why has the academic community, for the most part, neglected the topic of date sexual assault for so long?" Did they not know of the topic or research on

it? Possibly, although the topic of date sexual assault and research on it has been around from at least 1958 (i.e., for 30 years). Was the topic of date sexual assault too difficult to study? Very unlikely. College and university researchers are well known for relying on student populations in their research so access to potential subjects would not present a problem. Nor would ethical constraints pose much of a problem as long as informed consent of the subjects was obtained. Why then the lack of interest? Although purely speculative, the present researcher would suggest that the lack of academic interest was due to essentially five factors- funding for such research was scarce; the interest in doing such research was low; date sexual assault was seen as trivial compared to stranger sexual assault; dating patterns were not seen as sexually coercive, or if they were, there was resistance to changing such patterns; and date rape/date sexual assault was seen as being a "woman's issue", and it was believed that only women should study such an issue (but because the ratio of female to male faculty was so low, there were proportionately fewer females available to study the phenomenon). Clearly, future research must not only be conducted on date sexual assault, but also on the social control of researchers and the social control (and definition) of knowledge.

CHAPTER VIII

RECOMMENDATIONS.

The problem of date rape/date sexual assault is not a new one, but it is one that has only recently come to the attention of the public. How can this problem be further highlighted, and the myths surrounding it put to rest? How can society encourage increased reporting of date sexual assault to the police, rape crisis centres, and other social agencies? How can we better prevent date sexual assault? How can we better assist the victims of such crimes as members of the public, criminal justice system, or helping professions? And finally, how can we encourage further research into date sexual assault?

There are no quick, easy, or cheap solutions to the above questions. Nevertheless, there are social policy decisions which can be implemented and research courses charted which can significantly improve society's chances of accomplishing the objectives suggested by these questions. It is with the desire to see such objectives accomplished that the following recommendations are made. Specifically, it is recommended that:

1. *A national resource and referral centre be established, whose mandate shall be (i) to collect and summarize published and unpublished research on the four main types of sexual assault (i.e., date, marital, acquaintance, and stranger) and to keep copies of such research in its library, (ii) to collect audio-visual materials on these four main types of sexual assault and to keep copies of these materials in its library, (iii) to collect educational and lobbying materials for work on the four main types of sexual assault, and to keep copies of these materials in its library, (iv) to provide public access to its library, (v) to undertake historical, cross-cultural, and comparative research on*

the four main types of sexual assault, and (vi) to undertake legal research regarding the criminal and civil prosecution of the four main types of sexual assault. Besides increasing the visibility of the problem of date sexual assault (as well as the other types of sexual assault), a national resource and referral centre would facilitate and encourage needed research. Such research, in turn, could be used for educational and other purposes (i.e., sexual assault prevention). As well, a national resource and referral centre would perform a symbolic function. Generously funded, its continued presence and operation would signify that the government of Canada recognizes sexual assault to be a serious problem within its borders and that it was committed, at least financially, to doing something about the problem.

2. An international "News Bulletin" be established to bring to the attention of its membership (i) brief reports of research and legislative reform in various countries regarding the four main types of sexual assault, (ii) commentaries on current issues and controversies in the field, and (iii) upcoming conferences on sexual assault. This "International News Bulletin on Sexual Assault" might, for example, adopt a format similar to that of the *International Bulletin of Law and Mental Health* which addresses these three key areas in the space of approximately twenty pages.¹ Unlike that Bulletin, however, the sexual assault bulletin should also be, for an appropriate fee, computer transmittable (or at least able to be read on a computer screen) rather than available only in printed form. If this were the case, the bulletin would achieve greater circulation and back issues could be more easily and conveniently retrieved. The benefits likely to be derived from establishing an international "News Bulletin", with or without the

¹The *International Bulletin of Law and Mental Health* began publication April 1989 with Dr. Simon Verdun-Jones as its editor.

suggested computer applications, are many. Briefly, these benefits include, but are not limited to (1) an intellectual cornucopia of ideas relating to the topic of sexual assault (such as its etiology and prevention), (2) less individual time, effort, and expense searching for sexual assault research produced outside of Canada, (3) the swifter communication of sexual assault research findings to a broad-based audience, (4) the implementation of sexual assault prevention programs based on these findings, and (5) if the prevention programs are successful, a decline in the incidence of sexual assault.

3. *Workshops on date sexual assault, specifically its identification and prevention, be developed for use in public and private schools, colleges, and universities.*

Date Sexual Assault Workshops in the Junior and Senior Secondary High Schools

Currently, date sexual assault workshops are operating in several junior and senior secondary high schools in Santa Barbara, California and Seattle, Washington. With respect to Santa Barbara, *The Adolescent Sexual Assault Protection/ Prevention Program* (ASAP) has been operating in the schools since 1984 and has reached over 4,000 students.² Funded by the California Office of Criminal Justice, ASAP runs from one to five days using modeling and role play techniques to challenge myths about males, females, sexuality, and sexual assault. Date and acquaintance rape issues are emphasized as are conflict resolution skills and the prevention of sexual assault. Similarly, Alternatives to Fear's *Teen Project* is used in some Seattle schools

²Marcie Servedio, "Touching the Future," *Outcry!* (Winter/Spring 1987): 1.

to focus attention on date and acquaintance sexual assault.³ The workshop focuses on both the recognition of potentially dangerous situations and offers a wide range of self-defence skills ranging from boundary setting and psychological assertiveness to the martial arts. These are but two examples of the types of programs which might be used in Canada's junior and senior secondary high schools.

Date Sexual Assault Workshops in the Colleges and Universities

At present, the following colleges and universities have date sexual assault programs:⁴ Glassboro State College (New Jersey), the College of Great Falls (Montana), Dartmouth College (New Hampshire), Swarthmore College (Pennsylvania), the University of Florida, the University of Michigan, Cornell University, the University of Pennsylvania, Washington State University, Wesleyan University (Connecticut), Ohio State University (Columbus), the University of Minnesota (Minneapolis), and Grand Valley State University (Michigan). Some of these programs (such as those at Swarthmore College and Wesleyan University) are compulsory for all first year students; the majority, however, are voluntary. Depending on the programs' objectives, they are sometimes restricted to females (or males), but many of them would appear to be open to both sexes. Most involve role-playing (by student actors) or the use of films followed by discussion. At Cornell University, for example, student actors portray "Mary" and "Dave", a couple who, after an expensive restaurant meal, return to Dave's

³Mary Koss and Mary Harvey, *The Rape Victim: Clinical and Community Approaches to Treatment* (Massachusetts: Stephen Greene Press, 1987), p. 146.

⁴See Robin Warshaw, *I Never Called It Rape: The Ms. Report on Recognizing, Fighting, and Surviving Date and Acquaintance Rape* (New York: Harper and Row, 1988), pp. 175-177. See also Diana Pace et al., "Model of a Date Rape Workshop for College Campuses," *Journal of College Student Development* 29 (July 1988): 371-72.

place where Dave sexually assaults Mary.⁵ The audience then discusses what has transpired and makes suggestions regarding what could have been done to prevent the sexual assault. The student actors then replay the date scenario incorporating the audience's suggestions. The sexual assault is avoided and, often, "Mary" and "Dave" end up becoming friends. Although somewhat simplistic, behaviour is modelled for the audience that they can employ. In contrast, the *Rape Education and Prevention Program* (REPP) at Ohio State University emphasizes self-defence techniques to use in sexually assaultive situations.⁶ Still other programs, such as that at the University of Florida, are even more comprehensive. Presented by a group called Campus Organized Against Rape (COAR), the University of Florida has several different types of programs and workshops.⁷ Some of these use a rape myth quiz, a slide show of media images that contribute to sexual stereotypes, a film depicting a date sexual assault, discussions of body language and assertiveness in dating, role-playing, and self-defence techniques. Again, these are just a few examples of the types of workshops (or variations thereof) which might be used in Canada's colleges and universities.⁸

4. *Presentations on date sexual assault be incorporated into high school guidance classes, and college and university classes (i.e., sociology, criminology,*

⁵Robin Warshaw, *I Never Called It Rape: The Ms. Report on Recognizing, Fighting, and Surviving Date and Acquaintance Rape* (New York: Harper and Row, 1988), p. 176.

⁶*Id.* at 177.

⁷*Id.* at 176.

⁸For further information on date sexual assault workshops, see Robin Warshaw, *I Never Called It Rape: The Ms. Report on Recognizing, Fighting, and Surviving Date and Acquaintance Rape* (New York: Harper and Row, 1988), pp. 175-177. See also Diana Pace et al., "Model of a Date Rape Workshop for College Campuses." *Journal of College Student Development* 29 (July 1988): 371-72; and Mary Koss and Mary Harvey, *The Rape Victim: Clinical and Community Approaches to Treatment* (Massachusetts: Stephen Greene Press, 1987), pp. 145-151.

communication, women's studies, human sexuality, etc.). Unlike date sexual assault workshops, date sexual assault presentations would likely reach a wider audience by virtue of being part of the curriculum of existing courses rather than purely voluntary courses in and of themselves. As such, they are extremely useful tools for educating students about date sexual assault. But even if such presentations only reached a small audience, the disciplines of sociology, criminology, communication, women's studies, human sexuality, and social work (of which guidance classes may be said to be a part) demand that at least some time be devoted to important issues falling within their scope, one such important issue being date sexual assault.

5. *Security personnel on college and university campuses be familiarized with the issue of date sexual assault.* Since date sexual assault happens to many female college and university students, often on or near campus, it would appear wise to ensure that security personnel on campus are educated about this crime. That way, if date sexual assaults are reported to them, such security personnel will be better prepared to comfort and advise such victims. Paid attendance for selected security officers at date sexual assault workshops is one way to familiarize them with the issue of date sexual assault. Alternatively, a speaker could be brought in to deliver a presentation on "The Role of the Campus Security Officer in Responding to Date Sexual Assault".
6. *The general public be informed about the issue of date sexual assault and prevention programs available.* All sorts of possibilities for educating the general public about date sexual assault and its prevention arise, some more obvious than others. Specially trained individuals from Victim Service agencies could set up information displays in the shopping malls during National Crime Prevention Week (as well as at other times) to educate the

public about this poorly understood crime. Such individuals could also answer questions which the public might have about date sexual assault. Taped phone messages on date sexual assault are another option, and could easily be incorporated into existing tape libraries such as that operated by the B.C. Branch of the Canadian Bar Association. Dubbed "Dial-A-Law", the service provides free legal advice by telephone on a wide variety of topics. And last but not least, the Theatre could be used as a vehicle to educate the general public about date sexual assault. "Illusion Theatre", founded in 1974 in Minneapolis (Minnesota), operates on the premise that "...theatre could serve social and aesthetic aims, and that the collective talents of concerned actors, writers, directors, and producers could yield works of unique social impact".⁹ Since the founding of Illusion Theatre, its members have performed and produced plays dealing with childhood sexual assault (and other important societal issues) for child, adolescent, and adult audiences. With the proper encouragement and initiative, there is no reason why a similarly concerned group of actors, writers, directors, and producers in Canada could not similarly deal with important societal issues such as date sexual assault.

7. *Information on the topic of date rape/date sexual assault be freely made available to individuals working within the criminal justice system.* In order to make informed decisions with respect to date sexual assault, the police, prosecutors, defence counsel, judges, probation officers, and parole officers require information on the problem of date sexual assault, its effects on victims, its legal aspects, and its prevention. Having a national resource and referral centre on sexual assault, and workshops for criminal justice

⁹Mary Koss and Mary Harvey, *The Rape Victim: Clinical and Community Approaches to Treatment* (Massachusetts: Stephen Greene Press, 1987), p. 147.

professionals on the topic would help immeasurably in this regard. In B.C., such workshops might be held at the Justice Institute or similar facility. Hopefully, such measures will not only inform, but result in better decisions being made with respect to date sexual assault victims and offenders.

8. *Sexual assault peer counselling programs be instituted in colleges and universities across Canada to provide trained student aides to comfort victims and to assist them in obtaining further help.* As this study has shown, female date sexual assault victims turn to their best female friends more than anybody else in *disclosing* their sexual victimization. As such, training students' colleagues and peers in listening and comforting skills, AND informing them about the effects of date sexual assault on victims, may make a great deal of difference in whether such victims (1) receive professional counselling, and (2) report their victimization to the police. Such sexual assault peer counselling programs might be modelled on the Natural Helper's Program, a program whose general goal is "...to provide skilled listeners (not therapists) in a school setting so that students can get the help they need".¹⁰
9. *Twenty-four hour toll-free sexual assault hotlines be operated in every province and territory across Canada.* If sexual assault victims are to receive the proper medical care and therapy (i.e., professional counselling) that may be required, it is imperative that they have 24 hour toll-free access to sexual assault treatment centres.
10. *Victim support services be coordinated with one another.* Although it might seem obvious that victim support services should be coordinated with one

¹⁰For further information on this program, see Mary Ellen de la Pena and Dorothy Lee, "Natural Helpers: Developing Peer Support for Date Rape Victims" (Paper presented on May 29, 1987 at the Seattle conference *Romance, Rape and Relationships: A Conference on Teen Sexual Exploitation*).

another, this is not always the case. Staff at some service agencies are unaware of similar agencies in their area, or see themselves in competition with those agencies. Simply put, the needs of sexual assault victims are not well-served by a lack of coordination (be it through ignorance or design) of the support services which are available to them in their respective communities.

11. *Counselling centres on college and university campuses and in the community keep statistics on the number of sexual assault victims coming in, what the victim-offender relationship was, and where the crime occurred.* In order to properly address a problem, one must first know the nature and extent of that problem. By keeping statistics on all reported sexual assaults, counselling centres will have taken this crucial first step.
12. *Canadian colleges and universities develop specific official policies and procedures to deal with date sexual assaults which occur on campus where the perpetrator is a student, faculty member, or staff member.* In developing such policies and procedures, it is suggested that (1) institutional action *not* depend on the alleged victim filing criminal charges (most victims will not) or on a successful criminal prosecution (since criminal prosecutions are governed by higher standards of proof than civil ones),¹¹ (2) due process safeguards be strictly adhered to, and (3) that one found to have breached college or university policy by having, on the balance of probabilities, committed sexual assault be subject to any or all of the following depending on the seriousness of his/her "unbecoming conduct": suspension, probation, counselling, having a disciplinary letter placed in his/her file, demotion, and/or expulsion.

¹¹In criminal cases, the prosecution must prove the accused guilty "beyond a reasonable doubt". In civil cases, however, the plaintiff must prove the defendant guilty or liable "on the balance of probabilities".

13. *Expert witnesses be made available for helping juries, judges, and lawyers in criminal and civil prosecutions of date sexual assault to understand the crime and its effects on the victim. By informing juries, judges, and lawyers about date sexual assault, the likelihood of justice being done would appear to be increased.*
14. *The financial barriers to civil litigation of date sexual assault be lessened. The wider use of contingency fees is just one option individual lawyers might consider. Because the standards of proof are less in a civil suit than in a criminal case (i.e., on the balance of probabilities rather than beyond a reasonable doubt), a decision favorable to the victim is likelier. As such, a civil suit combined with a criminal one (or in place of one) may represent a sexual assault victim's best chance of obtaining justice.*
15. *Date sexual assault victims be informed by the police, prosecutors, and rape crisis counsellors of their right to bring civil lawsuits against their attackers whether or not criminal proceedings are initiated or continued.¹² One might as well not even have legal rights if one does not know what those rights are. By informing victims of their legal rights (which includes the right to bring civil lawsuits against their attackers), one empowers them. One gives them back some of the control the sexual assault took from them. And that control is a most precious commodity.*
16. *FUTURE RESEARCH be conducted in the following underresearched areas: (i) gang date rape; (ii) the date sexual assault of males in both the heterosexual and homosexual communities; (iii) date sexual assault in different cultures and countries; (iv) date sexual assault in Canada; (v) date sexual assault in specific subpopulations such as sorority women, the mentally*

¹²In what is believed to be Saskatchewan's first successful lawsuit for sexual assault, Cora Myers (the victim) received \$50,000. in damages. See "\$50,000. Assault." *The Province*, 6 April 1989, p. 12.

handicapped, the physically disabled, feminists, non-feminists, first year students, graduate students, and non-students; (vi) the history of date rape/date sexual assault; (vii) date rape and the law; (viii) date sexual assault prevention; (ix) date sexual assault treatment; (x) why some women marry their rapists; (xi) date rape attribution or those factors which lead an individual to label or not label a given act rape; (xii) the relationship between the characteristics of the victim (race, age, gender, conduct) and sexual assault believability- i.e., why Native Indian women and East Indian women who allege having been sexually assaulted are believed much less often than other women who make similar allegations; (xiii) the relationship between the type of sexual assault (stranger, acquaintance, date, or marital) and sexual assault believability; (xiv) the relationship between rape myth acceptance and the COMMISSION of the different types of sexual assault; and (xv) the relationship between rape myth acceptance and the REPORTING of the different types of sexual assault.

17. *FUTURE RESEARCH STRATEGIES consider incorporating some or all of the following suggestions: (i) MULTIPLE methods of data collection rather than reliance on a single method; (ii) DIFFERENT methods of data collection rather than reliance on the same method (usually questionnaires) for the investigation of a given phenomenon; (iii) where a single method must be employed for economic, ethical, or other reasons, VARIATION in that method (such as questionnaires completed in-class and out-of-class) for comparative purposes; and (iv) the shifting of emphasis from only studying/surveying college and university students to one studying NON-STUDENT groups as well, with a view to comparing the similarities or differences in results which exist between the two.*

CHAPTER IX

CONCLUSION

The present study has major implications for both social policy and future research. Discussed below, the ordering of these implications is not meant to imply that those which come first are more important than those which come last, or that those which come first should be acted upon first. Like the layer of ozone and the earth, social policy and research go together- one without the other courts disaster.

Beginning with the social policy implications, it is evident that there are many, but only the major ones will be touched on here. First, sexual assaults in dating/courting relations are widespread among female university and college students. The results of this study suggest that one in every four post-secondary female students will be sexually assaulted by a boyfriend or date at some point in her life. Of those who are sexually assaulted, 23% will be forced to engage in vaginal intercourse, 13% will be forced to endure digital penetration, and 5% will be forced to perform fellatio. If attempts are included, these percentages will be even higher. As far as the formulation of social policy is concerned, if sexual assault prevention is truly the objective, massive societal re-education will need to take place. The message that will need to be emphasized is that date sexual assault is the *more likely* threat to female university and college students, not stranger sexual assault. Once this reality is recognized, society and individual women will be better prepared to deal with date sexual assault in terms of prevention and remedial measures.

Second, date sexual assault *cannot* simply be dismissed as an act committed only by psychopaths or individuals on the fringe of society. While such

individuals have committed date sexual assault, the overwhelming majority of such crimes have been committed by so-called "normal men". The implication of this finding is frightening, but it would be a grave error to conclude that men, therefore, cannot be trusted. Rather, the finding suggests that trust be predicated or conditional on factors other than that the male is known to the female, that they have dated, that they have had sexual intercourse, or that they have been dating one another for a long time. Trust should be predicated more on an individual's current behaviour, specifically his behaviour towards women. Although much research remains to be done, it would appear that males who treat women as chattel, males who don't listen to women voicing their sexual limits, males who become easily angered at women voicing their sexual limits, and males who persist in touching women after they have been told to stop are perhaps greater sexual assault risks to women than males who do not exhibit such behaviour.

Third, date sexual assault is unlikely to be reported to the police, and most likely to be reported to the female victim's best female friend. The implication of this finding is two-fold- ways must be found to encourage a greater number of date sexual assault victims to report their victimization to the police, and the victims' peers must be empowered with information so that they can assist and advise victims in their time of personal crisis.

Fourth, the majority of date sexual assault victims suffer emotional consequences. Often, such consequences or symptoms of the attack are many and varied. They may include anxiety and nervousness, depression, crying, feelings of being alone, difficulty interacting with men, difficulty concentrating, sleep disturbances, loss of interest in sex, sudden mood changes, intense fears, job or school difficulties, loss of trust in men, extreme anger at the offender, feelings

of helplessness, feelings of guilt, self-doubt, loss of self-esteem, thoughts of suicide, and even attempts at suicide. Clearly, members of the helping professions (doctors, nurses, social workers, rape crisis workers) and those close to the victim (friends and family) need to know that such consequences can flow from a date sexual assault so that they can better assist and comfort the victim.

Fifth, many date sexual assault victims have been betrayed twice- first by the offender, then by the criminal justice system. With respect to the latter, date sexual assault has historically been treated as a second class or even third class crime, if it has been treated as a crime at all. It has been seen as less deserving or worthy of attention (or sanctions) than stranger sexual assault by both the law enforcement community and the judiciary. Such unequal, inequitable, and illogical legal discrimination between the four main types of sexual assault (stranger, acquaintance, date, and marital) must cease. To quote Lord Hewart in *Rex v. Sussex Justices*,¹ "It is not merely of some importance but is of fundamental importance that justice should not only be done, but should manifestly and undoubtedly be seen to be done".

And sixth, a substantial percentage of both sexes believe rape myths, the belief being heavily influenced by sex role stereotyping, adversarial sexual beliefs, and the acceptance of interpersonal violence. Although the present study did not find a statistically significant relationship between rape myth acceptance and the commission of sexual assault, it nevertheless seems reasonable to suggest that rape myth acceptance does *not* provide an atmosphere conducive to either positive social change or one which even supports date sexual assault victims in their hour of greatest need.

¹*Rex v. Sussex Justices* (1924) 1 K.B. 259.

As far as the implications of the present study for future research are concerned, there are several. First, many of the females disclosed that they had been sexually assaulted by boyfriends or dates, yet few males disclosed that they had ever sexually assaulted a girlfriend or date. Examination of the data strongly suggests that disclosures of sexual victimization are more likely than disclosures of sexual victimizing. Undoubtedly, this is partly due to the unwillingness of some males to admit (perhaps even to themselves) to an unethical or illegal act. Future sexual assault researchers ought to consider ways in which the reporting to survey researchers of disreputable or questionable behaviour can be increased.

Second, a response bias was discovered in the out-of-class or low response rate data. Females tend to be overrepresented by the data, particularly if they have been sexually assaulted by a boyfriend or date. This finding confirms what has long been known in social science research- questionnaires tend to be completed and returned by those they pertain to the most, exceptions being those who have committed certain disreputable acts. Knowing that such a scenario is both possible and probable, future researchers can structure their methodological approach accordingly.

And finally, a response bias was discovered in sexual assault victims who responded to the classified request to be interviewed. The greater they perceived their sexual victimization to be (such as when it was accompanied by battering), the more likely they were to volunteer to be interviewed. Given this fact, future researchers may wish to structure their methodology so as to minimize this biasing effect. Alternatively, they should qualify their findings, and point out the ways in which these findings were affected by their methodological approach.

Given the above implications for both social policy and future research, seventeen specific recommendations were made. Briefly, it was recommended that:

1. A national resource and referral centre be established to facilitate the understanding and prevention of the four main types of sexual assault (date, marital, acquaintance, and stranger);
2. An "International News Bulletin on Sexual Assault" be established;
3. Workshops on date sexual assault be developed for use in the schools, colleges, and universities;
4. Presentations on date sexual assault be incorporated into the educational system;
5. Security personnel be familiarized with the issue of date sexual assault;
6. The general public be informed about how to prevent date sexual assault;
7. Criminal justice practitioners be familiarized with the issue of date sexual assault;
8. Sexual assault peer counselling programs be instituted in colleges and universities across Canada;
9. Twenty-four hour toll-free sexual assault hotlines be operated across Canada;
10. Victim support services be coordinated with one another;
11. Counselling centres keep statistics, if they are not doing so already, on the number of sexual assault victims coming in, what the victim-offender relationship was, where the crime occurred, and so on;
12. Canadian colleges and universities develop specific official policies to deal with date sexual assaults which occur on campus where the perpetrator is a student, faculty member, or staff member;
13. Expert witnesses be made available for helping juries, judges, and lawyers in criminal and civil prosecutions of date sexual assault to understand the

- crime and its effects on the victim;
14. The financial barriers to civil litigation of date sexual assault be lessened;
 15. Date sexual assault victims be informed by the police, prosecutors, and rape crisis counsellors of their right to bring civil lawsuits against their attackers;
 16. Future research concentrate on such underresearched areas as, for example, gang date rape, date sexual assault prevention, date sexual assault in different cultures, date sexual assault and the law, and the date sexual assault of males; and
 17. Future research strategies incorporate *multiple, different, and/or varied* methods of data collection.

These recommendations, if implemented, should significantly improve society's chances of understanding, responding to, and ultimately preventing the problem of date sexual assault. In addition, they should help to take some of the danger out of dating and make it a more pleasurable experience for both partners. It is important to realize, however, that change will not happen overnight even if all these recommendations are implemented. Date sexual assault is *not* a recent phenomenon, a rare phenomenon, or even an unrewarded phenomenon- its history is ancient, its prevalence widespread, and its commission rarely punished (if not encouraged and rewarded). Much damage remains to be undone, and undoing it will take considerable time. As someone once said, "The longest journey begins with a single step".² This is no less true of making Canada a sexual-assault-free zone. But make the journey we must if we are to deny date

²Py Bateman, Shirley Fischer, Micheal Kane, Jan Loreen Martin, Sonja Martin, Connie Rae McCutcheon, Julie Meyer, Julie Miller, Maureen Saylor, Tony Silvestrin, and Sheri Thomas. *Treatment, Prosecution, and Prevention of Acquaintance and Date Rape Among Teenagers: Conference Recommendations, September 1987* (Seattle: Alternatives to Fear, Sept. 1987), p. 27.

sexual assault, with its attendant betrayal of trust, a future.

APPENDIX A:

REVIEW OF THE DATE RAPE /

Study	Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study	Definition of Date Rape
1. KIRKPATRICK & KANIN (February 1957)	To investigate "...sexual aggressiveness in dating- courtship relationships on a university campus." (p. 52)	The term "date rape" is not used. The terms used include "sexual aggressiveness" and "erotic aggressive- ness", both of which appear to be inter- changeable. Neither of these terms is ex- plicitly defined, although the latter is divided into 5 distinct categories - "necking", "petting" above the waist, "petting" below the waist, sex inter- course, and attempts at sex intercourse with violence or threats of violence.
2. KANIN (September 1957)	To investigate "...male sex aggression in dating- courtship relationships with high-school girls." (p. 197)	The term "date rape" is not used. The terms used include "male sex aggression" and "erotic intimacy". Neither is explicitly defined, although the latter is deemed to include the 5 categories discussed above in Kirkpatrick & Kanin (Feb. 1957).

TABLE A.1

DATE SEXUAL ASSAULT LITERATURE

Methodology Employed	Sample Size/ Characteristics	Major Findings
Eight page questionnaire distributed to females in 22 university classes, the males having been dismissed.	291 female university students from 22 varied classes, the bulk of whom were first and second year students.	20.9% of the 291 females had dates forcibly attempt sexual intercourse with them against their will, and 6.2% were also threatened or had physical pain inflicted upon them. (p. 53) Also, 55.7% of the 291 females reported experiencing offensive male sexual aggression during the 1954-55 academic year. (p. 53)
Six page questionnaire distributed to 10 university classes. Respondents also asked whether they had one close friend on campus who would be willing to fill out a questionnaire.	180 first semester female university students from 10 classes in Sociology and English. Also, 97 first semester female university students from an unknown number and type of university classes. Although the total sample size was 277, incomplete questionnaires reduced it to a final sample size of 262.	62.2% of a group of first semester female university students reported experiencing "...offensive male sexual aggression during the year prior to university entrance." (p. 197)

Study

3. KANIN
(August 1967)

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

To determine "...whether it (male sex aggression directed at females in a dating context) tends to be a response of frustrated males unable to obtain heterosexual outlets by more sanctioned means which do not involve the application of physical force." (p. 428)

Definition of Date Rape

The term "date rape" is not used. Rather, "sex aggression" is the chosen term which Kanin defines as "...the male's quest for coital access of a rejecting female during the course of which physical coercion is utilized to the degree that offended responses are elicited from the female." (p. 428)
It should be noted that Kanin is focusing exclusively on sexual assaults occurring in the context of a dating or courtship relationship.

4. KANIN
(Autumn 1967)

To examine "...one type of heterosexual deviation (premarital heterosexual interaction or male sex aggression) in order to determine whether it can be related to a differential association with significant peers whose values are congenial to the performance of such deviation." (p. 495)

See Kanin
(August 1967).

Methodology Employed

400 full-time, single, undergraduate males were randomly selected from a large, co-educational Midwestern University. Of the 381 males actually contacted, all agreed to participate. These males were then interviewed in person. Of the 381 interview schedules obtained, 40 were rejected as incomplete leaving 341 on which the study is based. Case material also obtained through direct interview/anonymous autobiography from approx. 60 males.

See Kanin
(August 1967)

Sample Size/ Characteristics

341 single, full-time undergraduate males from a large, coeducational, Midwestern University.

See Kanin
(August 1967)

Major Findings

"In spite of their (the sexually aggressive males) greater success, they tend - in contrast with non-aggressives - to report themselves sexually dissatisfied. (Sexual frustration, then, appears to be a quality more affiliated with the sexually active than with the sexually deprived. There is evidence here that the feeling of sexual deprivation is a state not necessarily dependent upon a given amount of sexual activity." (p. 432)

"...sexually aggressive orientations are acquired prior to the existence of these current groups (reference groups such as fraternities). Consequently, it is argued that the major functions performed by these reference groups consists of supporting and sustaining earlier acquired values." (p. 504)

Study

5. KANIN
(February 1969)

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

To examine "...certain features of aggressive-male-offended-female pairings in order to show that those relationships are not random occurrences among dating-courtship couples but rather that they tend to pattern meaningfully with certain personal and social variables."
(p. 12)

Definition of Date Rape

See Kanin
(August 1967).

Methodology Employed

See Kanin
(August 1967)

Sample Size/ Characteristics

See Kanin
(August 1967)

Major Findings

25.5% of the 341 undergraduate males "... reported at least one sexually aggressive episode since their entrance into college." (p. 12) Also, "...the form they (the females' reactions) manifest is probably more dependent upon the nature of the pair relationship than upon the severity of the aggressive act... (Specifically), the more violent rejections of the aggressive advance, screaming & fighting, are more frequently elicited from females in the least involved pairings." (p. 13)

Study

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

Definition of Date Rape

6. AMIR
(1971)

To "...analyze forcible rape occurring in the Philadelphia area under the jurisdiction and power of the Philadelphia police department."
(p. 6)

The term "dating type rape" is used but not explicitly defined. Presumably, this type of rape falls under the general heading of "forcible rape" which Amir defines as "...the carnal knowledge of a woman by a man, carried out against her will and without her consent, extorted by threat or fraudulence."
(p. 17)

7. KANIN
(1971)

To "...draw attention to a phenomenon (male sex aggression in dating-courtship relations) that, although not frequently reported to academic authorities, touches the lives of a significant number of college students."
(p. 107)

See Kanin
(August 1967).

Methodology Employed

Data was collected on all cases of forcible rape listed by the Philadelphia police for the years 1958 and 1960. Only those crimes the Philadelphia police defined as forcible rape and which appeared in the Uniform Crime Report Code under number 211 were analyzed.

Kanin truncates and summarizes the findings from 3 separate investigations he did in February 1957, September 1957, and August 1967.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

348 forcible rape cases in 1958 and 298 in 1960, for a total of 646 cases of forcible rape. It should be noted that "...the cases of rape are counted according to the number of victims involved..." (p. 38). Of these 646 female victims, 80% were black and the majority (38.4%) were between the ages of 15 to 24 years. Most (370) were victims of a "single rape", while 105 were victims of a "pair rape" and 171 were victims of "group rape".

See Kanin (February 1957, September 1957, & August 1967).

Major Findings

Amir found that only 6% of his sample had been raped by a close friend or boyfriend. This compares with 14.4% for acquaintances, 19.3% for neighbours, 5.3% for family friends, 2.5% for relatives, 42.3% for strangers, 9.6% for strangers but general knowledge, & 0.6% on whom no information was available (p. 234). Clearly, then, "...girls who trust their boyfriends...may not be spared from becoming victims of rape. In (6% of such relationships), gentlemen forfeited their positions of trust and committed the crime of forcible rape." (p. 235)

"The accumulated evidence suggests that sex aggression (in dating) is largely the consequence of a particular type of socialization coupled with appropriate situational factors." (p. 110). As an example of the latter, Kanin states "In the great majority of cases, females have willingly provided sexual stimulation to the point where coitus would not be considered an unusual male expectation." (p. 110)

Study

8. RUSSELL
(1974)

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

To "...educate people about rape from the victim's perspective..."
(p. 14)

Definition of Date Rape

Russell defines rape as "...intercourse imposed on a female against her wishes where her wishes are known to the rapist or where she expresses her wishes forthrightly, verbally, and/or physically."
(p. 13)

Included in her definition are cases where consent is not possible such as when the woman is asleep, unconscious, or drugged. The term "date rape" is not used.

Methodology Employed

90 females were interviewed apparently in-person by at least 5 interviewers. All interviews were taped. This sample of rape victims was obtained through word of mouth, advertising in the Berkeley women's newsletter, and notices on local community/college bulletin boards. It should be noted that the bulk of her book is based on only 22 of these 90 accounts of rape victims. (p. 10)

Sample Size/ Characteristics

90 females living in the Berkeley area, 22 of whom the bulk of her book was based upon.

Major Findings

With respect to date rape, Russel states "...men who rape often see themselves as lovers, not as rapists. They believe so strongly that women really want intercourse with them, that they are unable to hear women's protests to the contrary. Women's physical and verbal resistance is seen as part of the female game of pretending reluctance, or as an expression of a desire to be overcome. For example, one woman reported that her date finally succeeded in raping her after a two-hour struggle, but he could not understand why she was so upset, & he was unable to comprehend why she accused him of raping her. He considered himself a lover in the tradition of forceful males & expected to have a continuing relationship with her." (p. 258)

Study

9. BART
(1975)

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

To "...gather information about this widespread yet highly misunderstood crime (rape)." (p. 39)

Definition of Date Rape

The term "rape" is used, but is not explicitly defined.

10. BROWNMILLER
(1975)

To show that "rape is nothing more or less than a conscious process of intimidation by which all men keep all women in a state of fear."
(p. 5)

The term "date rape" is used, but is not explicitly defined.

Methodology Employed

Questionnaire was published in the magazine *Viva*. Readers who had been rape victims were asked to complete the questionnaire and mail it in. Dr. Pauline Bart was then asked to analyze the responses.

Not given, although the methodology employed appears to be a combination of literature review supplemented by personal interviews.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

1,070 females and males who responded to a questionnaire published in *Viva* asking rape victims to complete its questionnaire. The female victims greatly outnumbered the male victims, although a percentage is not given. The mean age was 18 years, 4 months. 60% were single, 22% were married, and 15% were divorced or separated.

Not given.

Major Findings

With respect to date rape, 3 significant findings emerged. First, "when the attacker was known, he was most likely to be an acquaintance (23%) or a date (12%)." (p. 40) Second, "women who were attacked by their husbands or lovers experienced the most loss of trust, followed by those attacked by dates, acquaintances, or relatives. Those who were least likely to experience loss of trust were attacked by strangers." (p. 42) And finally, "...rape by a known person seems more psychologically harmful (than rape by a stranger)." (p. 42)

With respect to date rape, Brownmiller quotes Brown who states "The closeness of the relationship (such as a dating couple) was a frequently used reason for categorizing (rape) cases as unfounded." (p. 393) Also, according to the Uniform Crime Reports, unfounded cases are "frequently complicated by a prior relationship between victim and offender." (p. 393).

Study

11. CLARK & LEWIS
(1977)

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

To show that "(r)ape is one of the products of a sexist society; it is the price we must pay for a society based on coercive sexuality."
(p. 29)

Definition of Date Rape

"The term "date rape" is not used. Rather, rape is defined under the now defunct s. 143 of the Canadian Criminal Code.
(p. 32)

12. KANIN & PARCELL
(1977)

To "...replicate and extend the 1957 investigation of male sex aggression...(since one could) hypothesize that the 1957 findings are now something of a period piece." (p. 67)

See Kanin
(September 1957).

13. CREANGE
(1978)

To explain what "campus rape" (date rape) is, and how to prevent it.

The terms "campus rape" & "sexual assault" are used. Campus rape is defined as sexual intercourse without consent occurring on campus. Sexual assault is defined as "...sexual abuse without the intent to rape." (p. 2).

Methodology Employed

Clark and Lewis approached the Metropolitan Toronto Police Dept. in Fall 1973 requesting access to all cases of rape reported to them in 1970 along with permission to interview the complainants. First request granted. Second request denied.

Questionnaires distributed to females in 23 varied university classes. Males and married females were excused. Of 358 females approached, 76 either refused to participate or returned incomplete questionnaires, leaving 282 useable questionnaires for analysis.

Not applicable.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

116 females over the age of 14 who reported to Toronto police in 1970 that they had been raped. 42 or 36.2% of these cases were classified by the police as founded.

282 single females enrolled in 23 varied university classes at a large Midwestern University.

Not applicable.

Major Findings

"The most conclusive finding supported by our data is that rape only occasionally occurs between persons very well known to each other." (p. 75)

A replication of Kanin's earlier 1957 study shows that there has been little change in either the incidence or frequency of unwanted male sexual aggression. Specifically, 50.7% of the 282 females reported experiencing offensive male sexual aggression during the 1971-72 academic year (p. 69,75). This compares with the 1957 study (Kirkpatrick & Kanin) which found 55.7% of 291 females reported experiencing offensive male sexual aggression during the 1954-55 academic year. (Footnote 2, p. 69)

"No single remedy for the problem of rape on campus exists...However, if all sectors of the university and community work together to prevent rape and provide victim services, the frequency of rape on campus can be lessened..." (p. 6)

Study

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

Definition of Date Rape

14. BYERS
(1979)

Insufficient informa-
tion.

Insufficient information.

15. WILSON & FAISON
(1979)

To examine "...the
social and social (sic)
psychological character-
istics that differentiate
victims from non-victims
of sex aggression (in
dating)." (p. 322)

The term "date rape" is
used, but is not explicitly
defined. Related terms
include "sex aggression" and
"sexual assault", the former
including 5 levels -
"petting" above the waist,
"petting" below the waist,
intercourse without
violence, intercourse
with violence, and any
aggression. (p. 324)

Methodology Employed

Questionnaires were distributed to female university students.

250 full-time undergraduates were randomly selected from University files. Due to those who were no longer attending University or who could not be located, the final sample dropped to 226. Of these, 181 (80.1%) completed a questionnaire in a room set aside in the Dept. of Sociology and Anthropology.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

96 female university students living in the West Virginia area.

174 full-time undergraduate university students, of which 83 were male and 91 were female.

Major Findings

Of the 96 females surveyed, 38% said they had been sexually assaulted and of these, more than 75% said they knew the person prior to being sexually assaulted. Women reported being sexually assaulted by distant acquaintances (24%), close acquaintances (17%), boyfriends (24%), and to a smaller extent friends, former boyfriends, & relatives.

"...10% of the women (of which there were 91) report encountering violence or threat of violence from their male companions who were trying to force sexual intercourse." (p. 324)
Zero percent of men report encountering the above from their female companions. (p. 324)

Study

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

Definition of Date Rape

16. VOGELMANN-SINE
(1980)

To examine "...the relationship between stereotypical attitudes about sex role behaviors and judgments of implicit consent to intercourse in situations depicting interactions between males and females (i.e., the men make advances and the women respond in varying degrees of encouragement)." (p. v)

The terms "rape" and "sexual assault" are used, but are not explicitly defined.

17. BART
(1981)

"The purpose of the research was to study the ways in which women have avoided rape, examining the situational contingencies (e.g. presence of a weapon) and the coping strategies (e.g. screaming, use of physical force) that are associated with avoidance, as well as the demographic background variables and childhood and adult socialization experiences...for what were thought at first to be 2 distinct groups of women: raped women and rape avoiders." (p. 124)

The term "rape" is used, but is not explicitly defined.

Methodology Employed

Altogether, 3 studies were done. Since the bulk of the findings are based on the latter study, its methodology is described here. The latter study consisted of 2 experiments in which undergraduate males and females were asked to judge women's implicit consent to intercourse on the basis of how the women responded to their date's advances. All subjects judged this information in the context of a rape trial & a dating situation. Experiment 1 presented information about the women's responses to advances which were on the lower end of the sexual intimacy scale, whereas Experiment 2 presented information which was on the higher end of the same scale.

13 females were interviewed. They were part of a larger convenience sample of 94 women who had been recruited through ads, press releases, public service announcements, personal appearances, and flyers. All had either been raped or avoided rape. The interviews were taped. It should also be noted that each of the 13 females served as her own control.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

Experiment 1: 111 undergraduates from the University of Hawaii, consisting of 58 females and 53 males. Range was between 18-38 years, with the mode being 19. Most (52%) were of American or Japanese ancestry.

Experiment 2: 110 undergraduates from the U. of Hawaii, consisting of 58 females and 52 males. Range was between 18-39 years, with the mode being 19. Most (55%) were of American or Japanese ancestry.

13 females, 18 years and older, who had either been raped or avoided rape when threatened within 2 years prior to the interviews.

Major Findings

"Subjects with more stereotypical attitudes... generally judged the women's behaviors to the men's advances as implying relatively higher degrees of implicit consent to intercourse in the rape as well as the nonrape condition." (p. vii). Also, "for all subjects (irrespective of attitudinal predispositions), the women's behaviors to the advance highest on sexual/physical intimacy were of significantly greater importance for overall judgments than their behaviors to the advances at relatively lower levels of sexual/physical intimacy." (p. vii).

With respect to date rape, women were more likely to be raped "...when they were attacked by men they knew, particularly if they had had a prior sexual relationship with them..." Women were more likely to avoid rape when they were attacked by strangers. (p. 123)

Study

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

Definition of Date Rape

18. KINNON
(1981)

To examine "...sexual assault in Canada today (1981): what it is and what it is not; its victims and assailants; how it is dealt with and how adequately or inadequately action is taken." (p. 2)

The term "sexual assault" is used instead of "rape" or "date rape". It is defined in a somewhat circular fashion as "...an assault with a sexual component: rape, indecent assault and incest, and will be used in this study mainly in connection with the crime of rape." (p. 1)

19. SARREL & SARREL
(1981)

To bring to public attention the fact that females have raped and sexually assaulted males. (p. 92)

The terms "sexual assault" and "rape" are used, but are not explicitly defined.

20. ABBEY
(1982)

To test the hypotheses that "...males are unable to distinguish females' friendly behavior from their seductive behavior..." (p. 832)

The terms "date rape" and "acquaintance rape" are used, but are not explicitly defined.

Methodology Employed

An extensive multiple choice questionnaire was given to 5 Sexual Assault Centres across Ontario. Counsellors and researchers at these centres recorded individual cases of rape on these questionnaires which were then computer tabulated. The data was collected between March 1, 1979 and February 29, 1980.

No specific methodology was employed. Rather, the 7 men who had been sexually assaulted by females came to the Sarrel's attention over a 5 year period. Specifically, these men were their patients in the Sex Counseling Program at Yale University.

A laboratory experiment was conducted in which a male and female took part in a conversation lasting 5 minutes while a hidden male and female observed their interaction.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

274 individuals (264 females, 10 males) who had reported to one of 5 Ontario Sexual Assault Centres that they had been sexually assaulted. 53.1% were under the age of 20.

7 males who had been sexually assaulted by females.

144 white undergraduates (72 males, 72 females) from Northwestern University who received credit toward a course requirement of research participation.

Major Findings

Because the categories into which the sexual assailants were classified were not defined, it is difficult (if not impossible) to say whether the date and acquaintance rapes outnumbered the stranger rapes. It is known, however, that there were more sexual assaults between those who knew each other well than between those who did not know each other at all. See the Table on p. 15 of Kinnon (1981).

According to the authors, "...the rape of a man by a women, though rare, is physiologically possible..." (p. 98)

"Men do tend to read sexual intent into friendly behavior. However, this appears to occur because of a general male bias rather than an attitude about females only. Evidently, women are not subject to this bias (at least not under these circumstances) and are, therefore, unlikely to misjudge male intentions in the way that men misjudge those of women." (p. 838)

Study

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

Definition of Date Rape

21. KORMAN & LESLIE
(1982)

"(T)o compare the incidence of sexual aggression reported today with reports from previous studies in this area, to determine if adherence to feminist ideology is associated with fewer episodes of sexual aggression on dates, (and) to determine if the sharing of expenses by women on dates is associated with fewer episodes of sexual aggression." (p. 118)

The terms "date rape" and "sexual aggression" are used, but are not explicitly defined.

22. RUSSELL
(1982)

To bring to the attention of scholars and non-scholars alike that rape in marriage and dating relationships is much more common than is realized. (p. 13, 246, 257)

Despite the presence of a Terminology section in Chapter 1, the term "rape" is not explicitly defined. Also, in Chapter 18, Russell uses the terms "date rape" and "premarital rape", but does not explicitly define them.

23. WILSON &
DURRENBERGER
(1982)

To compare rape victims with attempted rape victims. (p. 198)

The term "rape" is used, but is not explicitly defined.

Methodology Employed

500 questionnaires were handed out to female volunteers, of which 400 complete useable ones were returned for a return rate of 80%.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

400 single, undergraduate females enrolled in 27 Social Science classes at a large Southeastern University. Range was 18 to 22 years, the mean age being 19.9 years.

Major Findings

"...the pervasiveness of experience with offensive sexual aggression has not changed perceptively during a 20 - year span, although it appears that the aggressive advances are becoming more coitally - directed. Contrary to the hypotheses, adherence to feminist ideology and the sharing of dating expenses are shown not to be associated with fewer reports of offense on dates." (p. 114)

A combination of cluster sampling and systematic random sampling was used to obtain the initial sample of 2,000 households. A further 1,200 households was later drawn. 33 trained, female interviewers interviewed 930 females. All interviews were conducted in interviewer's homes. It should also be pointed out that the refusal rate was 19% once the females knew the study was about rape. The verification rate was 22%.

930 females living in San Francisco.

With respect to date rape, Russell examines the reasons why 6 women married their date rapists. She concludes that these women married their rapists for a number of reasons, among them the belief that they belong to a man they have had sex with, the desire to retain or regain purity, the desire to be rid of certain feelings of guilt, and because the particular date rapist they married was less abusive than other date rapists. (Chapter 18).

From 1975-1980, questionnaires were distributed to students privately on 2 occasions and in male - female groups during four surveys.

447 females from Human Sexuality classes, presumably from Stephen F. Austin State University.

With respect to date rape, "...39% of 52 rape victims as contrasted to 12% of 58 attempted rape victims dated their attackers again, after the assault..." (p. 198)

Study	Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study	Definition of Date Rape
24. CHECK & MALAMUTH (1983)	To "...examine more closely differences in people's reactions to stranger - versus acquaintance - rape situations." (p. 345)	The terms "date rape", "acquaintance rape", and "stranger rape" are used, but are <u>not</u> explicitly defined.
25. HENTON, CATE, KOVAL, LLOYD & CHRISTOPHER (1983)	To "...assess the incidence and context of the use of violence in high school dating relationships." (p. 469)	The terms "dating violence" and "premarital violence" are used instead of "date rape" because the article focuses exclusively on physical violence in dating relationships.
26. KANIN (1983)	To gather support for the hypothesis that "...deviant sexual behavior (in a dating context) can be attributed to an absence of legitimate sexual outlets (i.e. attributed to sexual frustration)." (p. 133)	The term "date rape" is used, but not explicitly defined. It is quite evident, however, that force must be applied against a non-consenting female and that penetration <u>must</u> occur for Kanin to consider it "date rape". (p. 133)

Methodology Employed

Experiment was conducted in 2 phases. In phase 1, subjects completed questionnaires assessing sex role stereotyping. In phase 2, they were then randomly assigned to read one of 3 sexually explicit depictions (mutually consenting intercourse vs. stranger rape vs. acquaintance rape) and were asked to indicate their sexual arousal, their perception of the depictions, and (for men) their likelihood of behaving as the man in the depiction.

A questionnaire was distributed to 644 high school students.

Sample was solicited from university classes and campus organizations during a 10 year period beginning in 1974. Subjects were interviewed and given a questionnaire to fill out.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

289 male and female undergraduates enrolled in an Introductory Psychology course at the University of Manitoba.

644 High School students (351 males and 293 females) were selected from 5 high schools located in various geographical areas of Oregon. Sample consisted entirely of volunteers from required classes. Range was 15 to 19 years, the mean age being 17.1 years.

71 self-disclosed date rapists, all of whom are male, white undergraduates.

Major Findings

"...high sex role stereotyping individuals were more aroused to rape and perceived that the rape victim reacted more favorably to the assault than low sex role stereotyping individuals, particularly in the case of acquaintance rape." (p. 350) As well, "...44% of the high sex role stereotyping men, as compared to only 12% of the low sex role stereotyping men reported some likelihood of raping." (p. 351)

"Of the total number of respondents, 78 (29 males and 49 females) had experienced some type of physical violence with a dating partner as either victim or aggressor." (p. 469)

"...relative frustration is significant for understanding of these (71) date-rape episodes." (p. 134)

Study

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

Definition of Date Rape

27. SHOTLAND &
GOODSTEIN
(1983)

To "...investigate variables involved in deciding that rape has occurred and to test a model of the decision process of rape attribution in a dating situation." (p. 220)

The terms "date rape", "acquaintance rape", "stranger rape", and "real rape" are used, but are not explicitly defined.

28. WILSON, FAISON, &
BRITTON
(1983)

To develop and test three explanations for why a substantial number of men are willing to engage in unwanted sexually aggressive behavior with women they are dating. Due to space limitations, these 3 explanations have been labelled (1) the POWER THEORY, (2) the GENERATIONAL THEORY OF VIOLENCE and (3) MERTON'S THEORY OF DEVIANCE.

Although the study focuses on sex aggression during dating, the term "date rape" is never used. Sex aggression is defined as "...includ(ing) all types of erotic intimacy (necking, petting above the waist, petting below the waist, sexual intercourse, and sexual intercourse with violence), but all types of sex aggression include a use of force to the extent that it offends the woman involved." (p. 242)

29. ABARBANEL
(1984)

Apparently to compare acquaintance rape with stranger rape. (p. 91)

Insufficient information.

Methodology Employed

Subjects provided with a questionnaire entitled "Sexual Behavior in a Dating Situation." Each questionnaire contained a detailed description of a date in which the male used low or moderate force to obtain sex, after the female began to protest either early, moderately, or late during foreplay.

See WILSON & FAISON (1979). It should be noted that only the males are included in this part of the study, 83 or 81% of whom completed the questionnaire.

600 rape victims were interviewed.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

287 undergraduates (141 males, 146 females) enrolled in an Introductory Psychology class during winter term 1981.

83 full-time undergraduate males from a medium-sized Southern University.

600 female rape victims, presumably from the Santa Monica, California area.

Major Findings

"Subjects were more likely to blame the women and to perceive her as desiring sex with low force and late onset of protest. The man was viewed as more violent and the incident more likely to be viewed as rape when there was more force, more protest, and earlier onset." (p. 220)

With respect to date rape, the major findings are that "...sex aggression in dating is a widespread social phenomenon that has remained fairly constant over the last quarter century." (p. 242)

Also, "...sex aggression is a response to structural strain (Merton's anomie) that is mediated by cultural legitimations." (p. 241)

"...acquaintance rapes cluster on weekends, between 10 p.m. and 2 a.m., and generally take place on the assailant's turf. They often last longer than stranger rapes, sometimes stretching over four hours, but are less likely to involve lethal weapons." (p. 91)

Study

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

Definition of Date Rape

30. KANIN
(1984)

To "...present a profile of a very different rapist and of a very different type of rape, i.e., assaults arising from intensive sexual interaction of dating pairs." (p. 96)

See Kanin (1983).

31. McEVOY &
BROOKINGS
(1984)

To assist husbands, fathers, and male friends to understand acquaintance rape. (p. 29).

The term "acquaintance rape" is used and, although not explicitly defined, it is deemed to include someone who is known such as a friend, former lover, or ex-husband who sexually assaults the woman. (p. 29, 32).

Methodology Employed

See Kanin (1983)

Sample Size/ Characteristics

See Kanin (1983)

Major Findings

Of the 71 self-disclosed date rapists, 75% are from middle class backgrounds. Excluding 6 men from the sample, the men appeared to be "typical" college students. (p. 98)
Also, 54% of the date rapes were both initiated and completed in the man's (or his friend's) residence, and secondly, in the victim's (or her friend's) residence (31%). (p. 99)

Not applicable.

Not applicable.

Authors make 3 statements of special interest:

(1) "While rape by a total stranger is traumatic and frightening, assault by someone who is known & trusted may be even more devastating." (p. 29)

(2) "...victims of this form of sexual assault (acquaintance rape) are least likely to report it to the police." (p. 31)

(3) "Acquaintance rape, particularly if it involves a former lover or ex-husband, is likely to be dismissed by police as an "unfounded" charge and therefore not worth the time and trouble to investigate." (p. 32)

Study

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

Definition of Date Rape

32. MIMS & CHANG
(1984)

To "...obtain information about the activities and the reactions of young women to past stressful unwanted sexual experiences." (p. 8)

The study looked at a wide range of "unwanted stressful sexual experiences" which included marital rape, date rape, acquaintance rape, and incest. An "U.S.S.E." was defined as "...any perceived stressful experience that caused great concern to the subject at the time or had left a long-lasting negative impression, eg. attempted rape, rape, child/adult oral sex, anal penetration by an adult...etc." (p. 8)

33. PORTERFIELD
(1984)

To bring to public attention the hidden crime that is date rape. (p. 60)

The terms "date rape" and "acquaintance rape" are used, but are not explicitly defined.

34. SIGELMAN, BERRY &
WILES
(1984)

To "...move the study of violence in college student's (dating) relationships beyond description and into prediction." (p. 533)

The terms "physical violence", "sexual violence", and "sexual aggression" are used, but are not explicitly defined.

Methodology Employed

A 5 part questionnaire was presented to females affiliated with either the military (1 group), college classes (3 groups), and convenient community groups (1 group). Participation rate was 53% for the non-nursing college group and between 78-100% for the remaining groups.

Chiefly LITERATURE REVIEW.

Questionnaires were distributed to students in Psychology, Sociology, and Nursing classes at Eastern Kentucky University.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

404 females between the ages of 17 to 35. 168 were from the military, 195 were from college, and 41 were from the community itself. Total sample was primarily Caucasian, single, with 14 years of education, and a mean age of 24.3 years.

Not applicable.

504 university students (116 males, 388 females) in Psychology, Sociology, and Nursing classes at Eastern Kentucky University. 89.3% were Caucasian, 66.9% were either first or second year students, and the mean age was 21.4 years.

Major Findings

With respect to date rape, 2 major findings emerged. First, the rapist "...was most often a relative, 96 (21.5%); friend or friend of the family, 93 (20.9%); or fiance, boyfriend or lover, 88 (19.8%) (p. 10). Secondly, "...the closer the relationship or the longer the duration of the experience, the less likely it will be disclosed." (p. 12). Specifically, experiences with husbands had the lowest disclosure rate (0%), followed by boyfriends, fiances, & lovers (19.1%), relatives (38.0%), neighbours, friends, & friends of the family (24.0%), bosses & acquaintances (39.1%), & strangers (73.1%). (p. 11)

According to recent statistics, 5 U.S. states exempt a man from being charged with rape in the first degree if his victim was a "voluntary social companion" (date). These states are Delaware, Hawaii, Maine, North Dakota, & West Virginia. (p. 62)

With respect to date rape, Sigelman et al. found a statistically significant (but modest) relationship between physical violence and unwanted sexual aggression between dating partners. (p. 538)

Study

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

Definition of Date Rape

35. BYERS & WILSON
(1985)

To "...measure the effects of several factors that Clark and Lewis' theory (of coercive sexuality) suggest might be related to men's compliance with and interpretation of women's refusal of their sexual advances."
(p. 376)

The terms "sexual assault" and "sexual aggression" are used, but are not explicitly defined.

36. EHRHART &
SANDLER
(1985)

"...to describe the phenomenon of gang rape as it sometimes occurs on campuses, some of the causes that bring it about, its impact on the victim and other students, how to deal with it, and most importantly, how to prevent its future occurrence." (p. 2)

The terms "campus gang rape" & "acquaintance gang rape" are used, but are not explicitly defined.

37. KANIN
(1985)

To "...examine the sexual histories of (self-disclosed date) rapists and nonrapists and attempt to determine if the former are more sexually deprived." (p. 220)

See Kanin (1983).

Methodology Employed

50 Volunteers (26 males & 24 females) were divided into groups based on their Attitudes Towards Women. The men roleplayed their responses to women's refusals in 9 tape-recorded descriptions of sexual dating situations. These descriptions varied according to the level of sexual involvement and the type of "NO" given. The women roleplayed the response they would expect from most men.

Not applicable.

See Kanin (1983).

Sample Size/ Characteristics

50 undergraduate volunteers (26 males, 24 females) enrolled in Introductory Psychology at the University of New Brunswick. All were single.

Not applicable.

71 Self-disclosed date rapists, all of whom are male, white undergraduates. Control group consisted of 227 male, white undergraduates.

Major Findings

Study provides "...only partial support for the theory (advanced by Clark and Lewis) of coercive sexuality." (p. 376)

"The possibility that victims (of campus gang rape) will bring third-party liability civil suits against institutions is growing" (p. 9)
See p. 10-16 for the study's specific recommendations for responding to & preventing campus gang rape.

Kanin concluded that sexual frustration led the 71 date rapists to sexually assault their dates. Specifically, he found that these men were hypersexually socialized. Because they placed such a high value on sexual accomplishment, a frustration of their sexual impulse led them to feel relatively deprived (compared to the controls, however, they were not actually deprived). This relative deprivation/sexual frustration led them to rape. (p. 229)

Study

38. KOSS, LEONARD,
BEEZLEY, & OROS
(1985)

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

To "...determine if (3 types of undetected sexually aggressive men who had assaulted female acquaintances) could be differentiated on the basis of psychological characteristics" (p. 983)
It should be noted that the three types of men were classified as either sexually coercive, sexually abusive, or sexually assaultive.

Definition of Date Rape

The term "nonstranger sexual aggression" is used instead of "date rape", but is not explicitly defined.

39. LANE &
GWARTNEY-GIBBS
(1985)

To "...estimate the incidence of 4 types of courtship violence...(to provide demographic profiles of those who inflict and those who experience courtship violence...and to examine different types of sexual aggression (among dating couples)." (p. 46)

Authors state "A weakness of the research reported to-date is that a clear uniform definition of courtship violence has not been used." (p. 46) They propose that "courtship" be broadened to include "...experiences that you may have had with acquaintances, friends, partners, or dates..." (p. 47)
"Violence" is defined as "...one partner attempting to hurt or maim the other through physical force..."
It is seen as being one of 4 categories, these being Conflict, Abuse, Violence, & Assault. (p. 49)

Methodology Employed

Participants recruited through a 2 stage sampling procedure. In first stage, the Sexual Experiences Survey was given to 1,846 males in randomly selected university classes. Males were then classified as either Sexually Assaultive, Sexually Abusive, Sexually Coercive, or Sexually Nonaggressive. In second stage, 143 of these males were interviewed.

Questionnaire was mailed out to a sample of undergraduates at a large Northwestern University. The sample had been drawn from the University's FALL 1982 registration list of approximately 12,000 students. Response rate was 55.5% with 325 students returning useable questionnaires.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

143 male university students were in the final sample. Of these, 17 were classified as "sexually assaultive", 23 as "sexually abusive", 53 as "sexually coercive", and 50 as "sexually non-aggressive".

325 university students (50.9% were males & 49.1% were females) from a large Northwestern University. Because females and upper level students were slightly overrepresented in the sample, the data was weighted to more accurately represent the student body population.

Major Findings

The results support a social control/social conflict explanation of nonstranger sexual aggression as opposed to a psychopathological one. (p. 981)

It should also be noted that "...acquaintance and stranger rape may require different theoretical explanations." (p. 990)

12.9% of the females and 1.6% of the males reported having been physically forced by a date to engage in kissing, fondling, or sexual intercourse. (p. 55)

Study	Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study	Definition of Date Rape
40. MUEHLENHARD, FRIEDMAN, & THOMAS (1985)	To determine the "...circumstances (which) increase the justifiabil- ity of (date) rape in men's eyes." (p. 298)	The term "date rape" is used, but is not explicitly defined.
41. SANDBERG (1985)	Insufficient information.	Insufficient information.
42. SCULLY & MAROLLA (1985)	To demonstrate that "...the popular image of rape, a nonutilitarian act committed by a few "sick" men (the psychopathological model), is too limited a view of sexual violence because it excludes culture and social structure as pre- disposing factors." (p. 251)	The terms "date rape" and "acquaintance rape" are used, but are not explicitly defined.

Methodology Employed

Two studies were done, both of which relied on questionnaires describing dates involving the hypothetical characters John & Mary. Different variables such as (a) who initiated the date?, (b) who paid for the date?, and (c) the dating activity? were manipulated.

Questionnaires were distributed to undergraduate students.

During 1980 and 1981, 114 convicted rapists were interviewed using an 89 page interview schedule. Each interview took place inside the prison and lasted between 3 to 7 hours.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

268 male undergraduates enrolled in Introductory Psychology (for Study 1 N= 100; for Study 2, N= 168) presumably at Texas A & M University. Their mean age was 19 years.

An unspecified number of male and female undergraduates at the University of South Dakota.

114 convicted, incarcerated rapists serving out their time in a Virginia prison. 46% were white and 54% were black. Age range went from 18 to 60 years with the majority between 18 to 35 years old.

Major Findings

"...rape was rated as significantly more justifiable (a) if the couple went to the man's apartment rather than to a religious function, (b) if the woman asked the man out rather than vice versa (significant in Study 1 only), and (c) if the man paid all the dating expenses rather than splitting them with the woman." (p. 297)

"...more than 20% of the women surveyed said they had been forced by their dates to have intercourse against their will." (p. 41)

Scully & Marolla describe several cases of "gang date rape". As they relate, "...one member of the gang would make a date with the victim. Then without her knowledge or consent, she would be driven to a pre-determined location & forcibly raped by each member of the group. One young man revealed this practice was so much a part of his group's recreational routine, they had rented a house for the purpose. From his perspective, the rape was justified because "usually the girl had a bad reputation, or we knew it was what she liked." (p. 260)

Study

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

Definition of Date Rape

43. SHOTLAND
(1985)

To "...present a preliminary version of a model of date rape that focuses, in part, on ...gender differences in the perception of sexual intent." (p. 187)
It should be noted that "(a) major tenet of the model is that date rape can be divided into two types...relational date rape and early date rape." (p. 187-188)

Shotland does not explicitly define "date rape", although he uses the term frequently. He does, however, divide date rape into 2 varieties - "early date rape" and "relational date rape". He defines the former as rape that "...occurs early in the relationship, after only a few dates..." (p. 188). He defines the latter as "...rape that occurs in the context of an ongoing relationship..." (p. 188).

44. BRISKIN & GARY
(1986)

To "...describe awareness workshops in which (sexual assault and the prevention thereof) were addressed." (p. 207)

The terms "acquaintance rape" and "date rape" are used, but are not explicitly defined. "Sexual assault" is also used and defined as "...forced sexual aggression or contact with or without penetration against a victim's will..." (p. 207)

Methodology Employed

Article is chiefly a REVIEW of the DATE RAPE LITERATURE arranged so as to lend credence to a particular model of date rape based on a perceived gender difference in the perception of sexual intent or interest between the 2 sexes.

Not applicable.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

Not applicable.

Not applicable

Major Findings

Shotland suggests that "early date rape" and "relational date rape" are caused by a different combination of factors. Specifically, he sees the former as being primarily due to the male's anti-social & misogynist personality traits (the "sick person" theory). The latter, on the other hand, is seen to be part of a "normal" social process. As he explains, "Research evidence suggests that men perceive sexual interest when women do not. It is hypothesized that misunderstandings around sex when matched with situational and personality factors of both the male and female lead to relational date rape." (the "sick society" theory) (p. 187).

"...acquaintance rapes are one of the least reported of all sexual assaults. Students tend to not define an act as a sexual assault if it is committed by a known assailant (e.g., date, fellow student, friend of a friend)." (p. 208)

Methodology Employed

Article is chiefly a REVIEW of the DATE RAPE LITERATURE arranged so as to lend credence to a particular model of date rape based on a perceived gender difference in the perception of sexual intent or interest between the 2 sexes.

Not applicable.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

Not applicable.

Not applicable

Major Findings

Shotland suggests that "early date rape" and "relational date rape" are caused by a different combination of factors. Specifically, he sees the former as being primarily due to the male's anti-social & misogynist personality traits (the "sick person" theory). The latter, on the other hand, is seen to be part of a "normal" social process. As he explains, "Research evidence suggests that men perceive sexual interest when women do not. It is hypothesized that misunderstandings around sex when matched with situational and personality factors of both the male and female lead to relational date rape." (the "sick society" theory) (p. 187).

"...acquaintance rapes are one of the least reported of all sexual assaults. Students tend to not define an act as a sexual assault if it is committed by a known assailant (e.g., date, fellow student, friend of a friend)." (p. 208)

Study

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

Definition of Date Rape

45. FISCHER
(1986)

To "...identify what kind of person does not consider such a situation (where a date rape occurs) rape and/or does not regard the male's behavior as definitely unacceptable." (p. 458)

The terms "date rape" and "forcible date rape" are used, but are not explicitly defined.

46. LEVINE-MACCOMBIE
& KOSS
(1986)

To "...determine whether acknowledged (acquaintance) rape victims, unacknowledged (acquaintance) rape victims, and (acquaintance) rape avoiders could be discriminated by situational variables including the response strategies used in the assault." (p. 311)

The term "acquaintance rape" is used, but is not explicitly defined.

Methodology Employed

During the first week of classes over 2 successive years (1982 & 1983), questionnaires were administered to students. Students received class credit for participation.

Participants recruited through a 2 stage sampling procedure. In first stage, the Sexual Experiences Survey was administered to 2,016 females in randomly selected classes at a midwestern state university. 12.7% of these women had a sexual encounter meeting the legal definition of rape. In the second stage, these women (231) were interviewed. Classification into 3 groups further reduced the useable sample size to 82.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

823 students enrolled in Introductory Psychology and Human Sexuality courses over 2 successive years. For the former course, 106 were surveyed in the Fall of 1982 and 156 in the Fall of 1983. For the latter course, 278 were surveyed in the Fall of 1982 and 283 in the Fall of 1983. Both males and females were surveyed.

82 female university students aged 18 to 25 years selected from a midwestern state university of 20,000 students via a 2 stage sampling procedure. Their mean age was 21 years, their mean age at victimization was 18 years, 92% were white, and 72% were single. 35 were classified as "rape avoiders", 26 as "acknowledged rape victims", and 21 as "unacknowledged rape victims."

Major Findings

"...persons relatively more accepting of forcible date rape are less sure it really is rape, have more traditional attitudes towards women, are more self-sexually permissive..., have less accurate sexual knowledge and, though a large majority blame the male, are slightly more inclined to blame society or the situation." (p. 457)

"...the major findings of existing research on stranger rape avoidance are generalizable to acquaintance rape." (p. 311)

Study

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

Definition of Date Rape

47. PIROG-GOOD
& STETS
(1986)

To "...document the frequency of gender specific patterns of sexual abuse in white, heterosexual dating relationships (and to develop) a model in which sexually abusive behavior may be understood in terms of an individual's need to control his or her partner." (p. 1)

The term "sexual abuse" is used instead of "date rape", and defined as "...(s)exual acts which are clearly initiated against the will of one's partner." (p. 1)

48. STETS
& PIROG-GOOD
(1986)

See PIROG-GOOD
& STETS (1986).

See PIROG-GOOD
& STETS (1986).

Methodology Employed

During Spring 1986, a random sample of 56 upper level classes at a Midwestern University was obtained. Letters were then sent to 56 professors asking if they would allow their classes to be surveyed. 25 professors agreed. Questionnaires were then distributed to these 25 classes.

See PIROG-GOOD & STETS (1986).

Sample Size/ Characteristics

505 white, upper level undergraduates (244 males, 351 females) drawn from 25 classes at a large Midwestern University.

See PIROG-GOOD & STETS (1986).

Major Findings

- (1) "25% of the men who dated within the past year report initiating sexual abuse compared to 7% of women." (p. 9)
- (2) "(M)ilder forms of sexual abuse are most likely to occur for both men and women." (p. 10)
- (3) "...the experience of violence, not the witnessing of violence, increases male sexual abuse." (p. 11)
- (4) "(M)en who frequently date are more likely to use sexual abuse." (p. 12)
- (5) "(M)en & women are sexually abusive for different reasons." (p. 14)

Exactly the same as PIROG-GOOD & STETS (1986).

- (1) "...the generational theory of violence, personality dimensions of instrumentality and expressiveness, & seriousness of the relationship explain dating violence for men while a situation of jealousy explains dating violence for women." (Abstract)
- (2) "violence is more likely to occur in more serious relationships." (p. 14)

Study

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

Definition of Date Rape

49. BATEMAN ET AL.
(1987)

To summarize the recommendation from the 1987 Conference "Romance, Rape and Relationships: A Conference on Teen Sexual Exploitation."

The terms "acquaintance rape" & "date rape" are used, but are not explicitly defined.

50. BYERS, GILES,
& PRICE
(1987)

"...to investigate factors that might mediate the occurrence of male sexual aggression in dating relationships."
(p. 321)

The term "sexual aggression" is used instead of "date rape", but is not explicitly defined.

Methodology Employed

Over 200 conference participants collectively devised specific recommendations for treating, prosecuting, and preventing acquaintance & date rape among teenagers.

Two experiments were conducted. "In Experiment 1, 33 female undergraduates role-played their refusal of unwanted sexual advances in dating situations that varied in the level of the woman's romantic interest in her date and in the intimacy level of the sexual activities...In Experiment 2, 58 male college students rated selected women's responses differing in verbal definiteness for their effectiveness in stopping unwanted sexual advances." (p. 321).

Sample Size/ Characteristics

Not applicable.

Experiment 1 - 33 unmarried females enrolled in Introductory Psychology at the University of New Brunswick. Median age was 19 years; Experiment 2 - 58 unmarried males enrolled in Introductory Psychology at the University of New Brunswick. Median age was 20 years.

Major Findings

"When we assess the acculturation, socialization, and educational processes historically as they relate to acquaintance rape, we can learn from the past and discover the path to a future free of sexual exploitation. Only by becoming familiar with these processes and their functions can we hope to modify them and create a safer and more pleasant environment for all." (p. 27).

"...the (33) women were found to be less verbally definite in situations in which they were romantically interested in their dates and in the low intimacy situations...women may decrease the likelihood of being victims of sexual aggression by being more verbally definite in refusing unwanted sexual advances." (p. 321)

Study

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

Definition of Date Rape

51. DULL
& GIACOPASSI
(1987)

To "...determine whether, within a college population, attitudes condoning sexual violence (date rape) as part of the courtship ritual are generally present and accepted throughout, are accepted by only certain segments, or whether the existence of these attitudes is generally rejected by college students." (p. 177)

The terms "date rape" and "acquaintance rape" are used, but are not explicitly defined.

52. ESTRICH
(1987)

To put forth "...an argument for (legal and social) change: for an understanding of rape that recognizes that a "simple" rape (rape by a date, acquaintance, ex-lover, or neighbour) IS a real rape." (p. 7)

The terms "date rape" and "acquaintance rape" are used and apparently deemed to be "SIMPLE RAPES" as opposed to "AGGRAVATED RAPES". This distinction between aggravated rapes and simple rapes can be traced to Professors Harry Kalven & Hans Zeisel of the University of Chicago. They defined an aggravated rape as one with extrinsic violence (guns, knives, or beatings) or multiple assailants or no prior relationships between the victim and the defendant. A simple rape had none of these aggravating factors. (p. 4).

53. HUGHES
& SANDLER
(1987)

"...to show...what to watch out for (with respect to date rape), why it (date rape) occurs, and what to do should it happen to you or a friend." (p. 1)

The term "date rape" is used interchangeably with "acquaintance rape", & is defined as "...forced, unwanted intercourse with a person you know." (p. 1)

Methodology Employed

In April 1984, questionnaires were administered to a probabilistic sample¹ of 500 undergraduates out of an undergraduate population of 21,000. 449 undergraduates completed useable questionnaires.

¹A cluster sampling technique was used.

Chiefly a REVIEW and SUMMARY of the LEGAL LITERATURE and U.S. CASE LAW on rape.

Not applicable.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

449 undergraduates enrolled in Introductory Sociology and Criminal Justice courses at a major university in the Mid-South. Of this total, 254 were female (57%) and 181 were male (40%). Also, 90% of the sample was single, 68% were white, 29% were black, and the median age was 19.8 years.

Not applicable.

Not applicable.

Major Findings

"...males (are) far more likely than females to hold attitudes that condone aggressive sexual behavior." (p. 188)

"Conduct is labeled criminal "to announce to society that these actions are not to be done and to secure that fewer of them are done." It is time - long past time - to announce to society our condemnation of simple rape, and to enforce that condemnation "to secure that fewer of them are done." The message of the law to men, and to women, should be made clear. Simple rape is real rape." (p. 104)

"There is a need for colleges and universities to have rape prevention programs not only to help women protect themselves but to help men understand the issue of rape and thereby make the college campus a safer environment for everyone." (p. 7)

Study

54. KOSS, GIDYCH,
& WISNIEWSKI
(1987)

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

To "...extend previous research (on rape and sexual aggression to a national basis..." (p. 163)

Definition of Date Rape

The term "rape" is used and defined as "...carnal knowledge of a female forcibly and against her consent." (p. 162)

55. MAKEPEACE
(1987)

To compare "...social factor differences between: (1) respondents with and without courtship violence experience and, (2) offenders (male only) and victims (female only)." (p. 87)

The term "courtship violence" is used, but is not explicitly defined.

Methodology Employed

Questionnaires were administered to a national sample of 6,159 U.S. students enrolled in 32 institutions of higher learning.

Questionnaires were administered to 2,338 students at 7 colleges in the U.S.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

6,159 U.S. students (3,187 females, 2,972 males) enrolled in 32 colleges, universities, and technical schools in America. 85% were single, 86% were white, and the mean age was 21.4 years.

2,338 students drawn from 7 American colleges. Both males and females were surveyed, although the precise number or percentage is not given.

Major Findings

"...since the age of 14, 27.5% of college women report experiencing and 7.7% of college men reported perpetrating an act that met legal definitions of rape, which includes attempts." (p. 168)
This translates into a victimization rate for women of 38 per 1,000 who experienced a rape meeting the FBI definition for a 6 month period. For males, the perpetration rate was 9 per 1,000 which represented the number who admitted an act in a 6 month period meeting the FBI definition of rape.

"Having been fired on multiple occasions was the single condition most related to courtship violence." (p. 89)

Study

56. MUELENHARD
& LINTON
(1987)

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

To assess "...the incidence of and the risk factors for date rape and other forms of male-against-female sexual aggression (SA) in dating situations." (p. 186)

Definition of Date Rape

The terms "date rape" and "sexual aggression" are used, but are not explicitly defined. Other terms used include "heterosexual dating" and "unwanted sexual activity". The latter is defined as "when the female does not want to engage in some sexual activity, and she makes this clear to the male either verbally or nonverbally, but he does it anyway. The unwanted sexual activity could be anything ranging from kissing to sexual intercourse." (p. 188)

57. RIVERA
& REGOLI
(1987)

To investigate the incidence & prevalence of sexual assault among sorority women.

The term "sexual assault" is used, but is not explicitly defined.

Methodology Employed

Over the course of two semesters, questionnaires were administered to students enrolled in Introductory Psychology classes at a large, southwestern, public university.

Questionnaires mailed to 400 members of 12 sororities at a large state university in the southwestern U.S. 174 were returned for a return rate of 43.5%.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

Final sample consisted of 635 undergraduates (294 males, 341 females) enrolled in Introductory Psychology classes at a large, southwestern, public university. The mean age was 19.5 years for men and 18.8 years for the women.

174 females from 12 sororities at a large university in the southwestern U.S.

Major Findings

"...77.6% of the women and 57.3% of the men had been involved in sexual aggression; 14.7% of the women and 7.1% of the men had been involved in rape." (p. 193)

"Variables that appear to be risk factors are the man's initiating the date, paying all the expenses; miscommunication about sex; heavy alcohol or drug use, "parking"; and men's acceptance of traditional sex roles, interpersonal violence, adversarial attitudes about relationships, and rape myths." (p. 186)

"...51% of sorority women reported that their life experiences had included forced touching of intimate parts. 35% said that attempts at penetration (Vaginal, oral, or anal) had been made, and 17% had been sexually assaulted through penetration."

Study

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

Definition of Date Rape

58. AIZENMAN
& KELLEY
(1988)

To investigate the incidence and nature of violence and acquaintance rape in dating relationships among college men and women.

The term "acquaintance rape" is used, but is not explicitly defined.

59. BYERS & LEWIS
(1988)

"(T)o determine how frequently (sexual disagreement) occurs in dating relationships, to determine the types and frequencies of the various strategies that men use when their partner indicates that she is unwilling to engage in a particular sexual activity, and to describe the characteristics of disagreement situations and relate these to male compliance with the woman's refusal." (p. 15).

The terms "sexual disagreement" & "sexual coercion" are used. Sexual disagreement is defined as one "...in which the man desire(s) to engage in a higher level of sexual activity than...the woman." (p. 15). Sexual coercion is not defined.

Methodology Employed

Questionnaires were mailed to 800 undergraduate students (400 males, 400 females) at Rutgers University. 43% (51% for the females and 35% for the males) were returned.

Questionnaires were administered to the 132 subjects. Also, the subjects kept a diary or record of their dates & sexual disagreements.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

Final sample consisted of 344 undergraduate students from Rutgers University (204 females, 140 males). The mean age was 20.3 for the females & 20.9 for the males.

121 unmarried students (67 women, 54 men) enrolled in Introductory Psychology at the University of New Brunswick. The mean age was 18.7 for the women & 20.3 for the men.

Major Findings

"Of the women, 51% indicated that they had successfully avoided an acquaintance rape, 29% mentioned that they had been forced to have intercourse against their will, and 43% reported having been pressed to have sexual contact when they did not want to...Of the male students, 14% mentioned having been forced (in a dating situation) to have intercourse against their will, and 17% indicated that they had been pressed to have sexual contact when they did not want to."
(p. 308)

"One or more (sexual) disagreements were reported by 47% of participants, but disagreements occurred in only 7% of reported dates. In 61% of the disagreement situations, the man complied with the woman's refusal without question. Verbal and/or physical coercion was reported in 25% of the disagreement situations."
(p. 15).

Study

**Major Hypotheses/
Purpose of Study**

**Definition of
Date Rape**

60. BYERS
(1988)

"...to investigate the effects of acceptance of rape supportive beliefs (RMA), sexual intimacy, and sexual arousal or behavior in sexual disagreement situations." (p. 235)

See BYERS & LEWIS (1988).

61. DEKESEREDY
(1988)

"...to describe Social Support Theory (where male social networks may perpetrate and legitimate various means of women abuse) & (to outline its ...partial contribution to the study of women abuse in dating relationships." (p. 1)

The term "woman abuse" is used instead of "date rape", & is defined as "...any intentional physical, sexual, or psychological assault on a woman by a boyfriend, lover, live-in lover, or date." (p. 3)

62. DEKESEREDY
(1988)

To critically evaluate research and theory on women abuse in dating relationships.

The term "woman abuse" is used instead of "date rape", & is defined as "...any intentional physical, sexual, or psychological assault on a woman by a boyfriend, lover, live-in lover, or date." (p. 79)

Methodology Employed

Two experiments were conducted. "In Experiment 1, 67 college women role-played their responses to their date's initial and continued unwanted sexual advances after viewing either an erotic or a neutral videotape...In Experiment 2, 78 college men role-played their responses to their date's first and second refusal of their sexual advances." (p. 235)

The literature on the topic of social support & woman abuse in dating relationships was reviewed.

The literature on woman abuse in dating relationships was reviewed.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

See BYERS & LEWIS (1988).

Not applicable.

Not applicable.

Major Findings

"...both acceptance of rape supportive beliefs, as well as the sexual intimacy involved, affect men and women's behavior in sexual disagreement situations." (p. 253)

"Peer group support can influence men to deal with their problems by abusing their girlfriends. Social support can also motivate men to mistreat these women, regardless of stress." (p. 10).

"In order to develop a theory of woman abuse in dating relationships, scholars must formulate explanations that incorporate the major variables identified in their empirical studies. They are also encouraged to include wider structural forces in their explanations. Like wife-beating, premarital woman abuse may be a micro-sociological expression of a wider social problem-patriarchy. Micro - macro linkages should be articulated." (p. 90)

Study

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

Definition of Date Rape

63. GEORGE,
GOURNIC,
& McAFEE
(1988)

"To examine the postulate that the drinking woman is viewed differently than her nondrinking counterpart." (p. 1295)

Because the study was not about date rape, the term is not used.

64. JOHNSON
AND JACKSON
(1988)

To assess the circumstances contributing to the differential perception of acquaintance & stranger rape.

The terms "acquaintance rape" and "stranger rape" are used. The former is defined as a rape "...in which the victim and rapist were previously known to each other and may have interacted in some socially appropriate manner." (p. 38) Stranger rape is not defined.

65. KIKUCHI
[Rhode Island Rape
Crisis Centre Study]
(1988)

To investigate students' attitudes towards sexual assault in dating relationships.

Not given.

Methodology Employed

Drinking habits questionnaire & the modified Southwick et al. (1981) instrument (which assess both moderate & high dosage expectancies for alcohol's perceived effects on the self) administered to 174 undergraduate students.

Subjects told to read a passage involving a sexual encounter between a male & a female. The passage described a situation in which 2 students were assigned to work together, & where the male made sexual advances. Two conditions were manipulated - the attraction level between them & the woman's response to his advances (ambiguous versus unambiguous condition).

Questionnaires distributed to 1,700 students in grades 6 to 9 between Feb. to Dec. 1987 who participated in the Rhode Island Rape Crisis Centre's assault awareness program at schools across the state.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

174 undergraduate students (61 men & 113 women) enrolled in a psychology course at an unnamed university (probable the State University of New York at Buffalo).

120 Introductory Psychology students (60 males, 60 females) at the University of North Carolina.

1,700 students in grades 6 to 9.

Major Findings

"Subjects rated the drinking woman as significantly more aggressive, impaired, sexually available, & as significantly more likely to engage in foreplay & intercourse. Perceptions of her sexual disinhibition & likelihood of sex play were significantly enhanced if the man bought the drinks." (p. 1295)

"...perception tended to be less favorable toward the victim and more lenient toward the defendant when there was ambiguity in the victim's desire for intercourse. Additionally, when compared to females, males' perception tended to be less favorable toward the victim and more lenient toward the perpetrator." (p. 37)

"50% of the students said a woman who walks alone at night and dresses seductively is asking to be raped. 51% of the boys & 41% of the girls said a man has the right to force a woman to kiss him if he has spent a lot of money (defined by 12-year-olds as \$10. to \$15.) on her. 65% of the boys and 57% of the girls in grades 7 through 9 said it is acceptable for a man to force a woman to have sexual intercourse if they have been dating for more than six months." (p. A10)

Study	Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study	Definition of Date Rape
66. KOSS, DINERO, SEIBEL, & COX (1988)	To compare the experiences of stranger rape victims to those of acquaintance rape victims, & to then compare the experiences of women assaulted by different types of acquaintances (i.e. non-romantic acquaintances, casual dates, steady dates, and family members).	The terms "stranger rape" and "acquaintance rape" are used. Examples are given to illustrate each term's meaning, but neither term is explicitly defined.
67. MILLER (1988)	To suggest ways in which date rape might be prevented.	The term "date rape" is used & is defined as "...an interaction that begins between a man & a woman in the context of a social event or gathering, and ends with one participant forcing the other to participate in sexual activity against his or her will." (p. 553)
68. MS. REPORT (1988)	"...To define and demonstrate the prevalence of acquaintance rape, (and) to point toward ways to reduce such assault." (p. 3)	The terms "date rape" & "acquaintance rape" are used interchangeably. Each is defined as "(r)ape that occurs on dates or between people who know each other..." (p. 20)

Methodology Employed

See Koss, Gidycz, & Wisniewski (1987).

Some of the date rape literature was reviewed.

See Koss et al. (1987). Also, see Robin Warshaw, I Never Called It Rape: The Ms. Report on Recognizing, Fighting and Surviving Date and Acquaintance Rape (New York: Harper and Row, 1988), pp. 189-210.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

489 rape victims located among a national U.S. sample of 3,187 female college students.

Not applicable.

6,159 U.S. students, (3,187 females, 2972 males) enrolled in 32 colleges, universities, and technical schools in U.S. 85% were single, 86% were white, and the mean age was 21.4 years.

Major Findings

"Rapes by acquaintances, compared with strangers, were more likely to involve a single offender and multiple episodes, were less likely to be seen as rape or to be revealed to anyone, and were similar in terms of the victim's resistance." (p. 1)

"The reported research indicated that among college students, sexual aggression is rare among strangers, occurring more commonly among acquaintances. Thus, the general focus of rape prevention methods that emphasize stranger-rape prevention, such as increased lighting or extra security locks, misses the point entirely." (p. 553)

"1 in 4 (of the 3,187) women surveyed were victims of rape or attempted rape, 84% of those raped knew their attacker, (and) 57% of the rapes happened on dates." (p. 11)

Study

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

Definition of Date Rape

69. MUEHLENHARD
& HOLLABAUGH
(1988)

To investigate
"...whether women ever
engage in token resist-
ance to sex - saying no
but meaning yes - and,
if they do, what their
reasons are for doing
so." (p. 872)

Not applicable.

70. PACE & ZAUGRA
(1988)

To describe what the
authors believe is a
"model" of a date rape
workshop for college
campuses.

The term "date rape" is
used, but is not explicitly
defined.

71. PRITCHARD
(1988)

To discuss the
prevalence of date and
acquaintance rape & the
characteristics of such
rapists (for Chapter 2
only).

The terms "date rape" &
"acquaintance rape" are
used, but are not explicitly
defined.

Methodology Employed

Questionnaires were administered to 610 undergraduate females.

Not applicable.

Not applicable.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

610 female Introductory Psychology students from Texas A & M University. Their mean age was 19 years.

Not applicable.

Not applicable.

Major Findings

"...39.3% of the (610) women had engaged in token resistance at least once. Their reasons fell into three categories: practical (i.e. fear of appearing promiscuous), inhibition-related (i.e. emotional, religious, or moral concerns), and manipulative reasons (i.e. game-playing reasons)." (p. 872)

"Student evaluations indicate that the workshop is effective in increasing participants' awareness of the sociocultural forces contributing to date rape, helping them to better understand how to avoid a misunderstanding about sexual matters with another person, & giving them a greater sense of responsibility in sexual situations." (p. 371)

"...17-23% of female students have been victims of acquaintance or date rape; many others have been threatened." (p. 17)

Study

Major Hypotheses/ Purpose of Study

Definition of Date Rape

72. STRUCKMAN-JOHNSON
(1988)

"To document and to compare the proportions of men and women students at a small midwestern university who have been coerced to have sexual intercourse by a dating partner." (p. 235)

The term "forced sex" is used, but is not explicitly defined.

Methodology Employed

Questionnaires distributed to over 600 students at the University of South Dakota in September 1985 over a 2 week period. A subsample of respondents was later contacted to obtain written descriptions of forced sex episodes.

Sample Size/ Characteristics

Final sample consisted of 623 students (355 women, 268 men) obtained from 2 large psychology classes, 3 university residence halls, 5 fraternities, & 4 sororities at the University of South Dakota. The mean age of the respondents was 20 years, with women & sophomores being overrepresented.

Major Findings

22% of the 355 women reported that they "...had been forced to engage in sexual intercourse on a date at least once during their lifetime. In comparison, 43 (16%) of the 268 men had reported at least one forced sex episode in their lifetime..." (p. 237)

APPENDIX B: FEMALE QUESTIONNAIRE ON SEXUAL AGGRESSION

***To be completed by FEMALES only.**

This questionnaire is divided into three sections. Section one deals with attitudes towards women, section two with attitudes toward sexual aggression, and section three with your sexual aggression experiences. The instructions appearing at the beginning of each section ask you to supply the information requested or to indicate the alternative which best represents your feelings on the issue in question.

Thank you very much for taking the time to complete this questionnaire; your participation is greatly appreciated. If you have any questions about this questionnaire, please feel free to ask the person who gave it to you and/or contact the project director, Ken Garley (291-3213) or Dr. Margaret Jackson (291-3213) at Simon Fraser University. Please note that all replies to this questionnaire will be held in strictest confidence.

Please ensure that you have read the **INFORMATION SHEET FOR SUBJECTS** and fully understand it before checking **ONE** of the two boxes. If you have any questions at all, please ask.

*****Do you agree to participate in the Sexual Aggression Research Project by answering this questionnaire?**

1. Yes, I agree to participate in the research project.
2. No, I do not agree to participate in the research project.

INSTRUCTIONS: Prior to beginning section one, you are asked a few questions about **YOU**. Please note that your responses to these questions will not be used to identify you in any way, but rather are merely to help us describe the sample of persons who complete this questionnaire. Please check **ONLY ONE** box for each question unless otherwise specified.

A. What is your sex?

1. Male
2. Female

B. In what year were you born?

19____

C. Are you married, single, widowed, separated, or divorced?

1. Married/Common-law
2. Single (never married)
3. Widowed
4. Separated
5. Divorced

D. What is the HIGHEST level of education you have completed?

1. No schooling
2. Some elementary
3. Completed elementary
4. Some High School
5. Completed High School
6. Some Community or Technical College or Nursing
7. Completed Community or Technical College or Nursing
8. Some University or Teachers' College
9. Completed University or Teachers' College
10. Some Post-graduate University studies
11. Completed Post-graduate University studies
12. Other education or training (please specify) _____

E. What is your race?

1. White
2. Black
3. Chinese
4. Japanese
5. East Indian
6. Native Indian
7. Other (please specify) _____

INSTRUCTIONS: The statements listed below describe attitudes that different people have towards women. There are no right or wrong answers, only opinions. Please circle the one answer that BEST expresses your feelings about each statement.

1. A man should fight when the woman he's with is insulted by another man.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

2. When a man and woman are on a date, it is acceptable for the woman to pay for the date.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

3. A woman should be a virgin when she marries.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

4. There is something wrong with a woman who doesn't want to raise a family.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

5. A wife should never contradict her husband in public.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

6. It is better for a woman to use her feminine charm to get what she wants rather than ask for it outright.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

7. A man should be a virgin when he marries.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

8. It looks worse for a woman to be drunk in public than for a man to be drunk in public.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

9. There is nothing wrong with a woman sitting alone in a bar.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

10. A woman will only respect the man she is dating if he will lay down the law to her.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

11. Many women are so demanding sexually that a man just can't satisfy them.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

12. A man must show the woman that he is the boss right from the start or he'll end up henpecked.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

13. Women are usually sweet until they've caught a man, but then they let their true self show.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

14. A lot of men talk big, but when it comes down to it, they can't perform well sexually.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

15. In a dating relationship a woman is primarily out to take advantage of a man.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

16. Men are out for only one thing- sex.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

17. Most women are sly and manipulating when they are out to attract a man.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

18. A lot of women seem to get pleasure in putting men down.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

19. People today should not use "an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth" as a rule for living.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

20. Being roughed up is sexually stimulating to many women.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

21. Many times a woman will pretend she doesn't want to have sexual intercourse because she doesn't want to seem loose, but she's really hoping the man will force her.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

22. A wife should move out of the house if her husband hits her.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

23. Sometimes the only way a man can get a frigid woman turned on is to use force.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

24. A man is never justified in hitting his wife.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

INSTRUCTIONS: The statements listed below describe attitudes that different people have towards sexual aggression and rape. Please circle the one answer that **BEST** expresses your feelings about each statement.

25. A woman who goes to the home or apartment of a man on their first date implies that she is willing to have sex with him.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

26. Any female can get raped.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

27. One reason that women falsely report a rape is that they frequently have a need to call attention to themselves.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

28. If she really wants to, any healthy woman can successfully resist being raped.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

29. When women go around braless or wearing short skirts and tight tops, they are just asking for trouble.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

30. In the majority of rapes, the victim is promiscuous or has a bad reputation.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

31. If a girl engages in necking or petting and she lets things get out of hand, it is her own fault if her partner forces sex on her.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

32. Women who get raped while hitchhiking get what they deserve.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

33. A woman who is stuck-up and thinks she is too good to talk to guys on the street deserves to be taught a lesson.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

34. Many women have an unconscious wish to be raped.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

35. If a woman gets drunk at a party and has sexual intercourse with a man she's just met there, she should be considered "fair game" to other males at the party who want to have sex with her too, whether she wants to or not.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

36. What percentage of women who report a rape would you say are lying because they are angry and want to get back at the man they accuse?

Almost All	About 3/4	About Half	About 1/4	Almost None
1	2	3	4	5

37. What percentage of reported rapes would you guess were merely invented by women who discovered they were pregnant and wanted to protect their own reputation?

Almost All	About 3/4	About Half	About 1/4	Almost None
1	2	3	4	5

38. A person comes to you and claims they were raped. How likely would you be to believe their statement if the person were:

your best FEMALE friend?

Always 1	Frequently 2	Sometimes 3	Rarely 4	Never 5
-------------	-----------------	----------------	-------------	------------

your best MALE friend?

Always 1	Frequently 2	Sometimes 3	Rarely 4	Never 5
-------------	-----------------	----------------	-------------	------------

an East Indian woman?

Always 1	Frequently 2	Sometimes 3	Rarely 4	Never 5
-------------	-----------------	----------------	-------------	------------

a Native Indian woman?

Always 1	Frequently 2	Sometimes 3	Rarely 4	Never 5
-------------	-----------------	----------------	-------------	------------

an elderly woman?

Always 1	Frequently 2	Sometimes 3	Rarely 4	Never 5
-------------	-----------------	----------------	-------------	------------

a young boy?

Always 1	Frequently 2	Sometimes 3	Rarely 4	Never 5
-------------	-----------------	----------------	-------------	------------

a young girl?

Always 1	Frequently 2	Sometimes 3	Rarely 4	Never 5
-------------	-----------------	----------------	-------------	------------

a black woman?

Always 1	Frequently 2	Sometimes 3	Rarely 4	Never 5
-------------	-----------------	----------------	-------------	------------

a white woman?

Always 1	Frequently 2	Sometimes 3	Rarely 4	Never 5
-------------	-----------------	----------------	-------------	------------

a Chinese woman?

Always 1	Frequently 2	Sometimes 3	Rarely 4	Never 5
-------------	-----------------	----------------	-------------	------------

INSTRUCTIONS: The following questions are specifically intended to tap your beliefs and experiences regarding sexual aggression. Just a reminder that all questions will be held in strictest confidence. Please check **ONLY ONE** box for each question unless otherwise specified.

39. In your opinion, how does a male know during sexual foreplay that the female is ready and in agreement to voluntary sexual intercourse? (Read the list and check all appropriate boxes)

1. Female offers no resistance to increasing degrees of sexual intimacy
2. Female gives clear verbal consent
3. Female fondles male's genital area
4. Female talks of sex and contraception
5. Female returns french kissing or breathes heavily
6. "Nice" females never suggest sexual intercourse in word or deed so he will never know
7. Don't know how
8. Other (please specify) _____

40. In your opinion, how does a female clearly communicate to a male that she is in voluntary agreement to sexual intercourse? (Read the list and check all appropriate boxes)

1. Female offers no resistance to increasing degrees of sexual intimacy
2. Female gives clear verbal consent
3. Female fondles male's genital area
4. Female talks of sex and contraception
5. Female returns french kissing or breathes heavily
6. "Nice" females never suggest sexual intercourse in word or deed
7. Don't know how
8. Other (please specify) _____

41. Have you ever experienced unwanted male sexual aggression?

1. Yes
2. No
3. Don't know

42. If you answered YES to the previous question (#41), what forms did such unwanted male sexual aggression take? (Read the list and check successful or attempt only in all appropriate boxes)

- | Success-
ful | Attempt
only | |
|--------------------------|--------------------------|--|
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 1. Held my hand against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 2. Hugged me against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 3. Kissed me against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 4. Placed his hands on my breasts against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 5. Placed his hands on my legs or thighs against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 6. Placed his hands on my vagina against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 7. Removed my blouse against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 8. Removed my bra against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 9. Removed my slacks, shorts, or skirt against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 10. Removed my panties against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 11. Forced my legs apart against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 12. Exposed his penis against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 13. Placed his penis in my vagina against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 14. Placed his penis in my anus against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 15. Placed his penis in my mouth against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 16. Placed his finger or a foreign object in my vagina against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 17. Placed his finger or a foreign object in my anus against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 18. Placed his finger or a foreign object in my mouth against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 19. Placed his mouth on my vagina or anus against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 20. Came (released seminal fluid) in my vagina, anus, or mouth against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 21. Other (please specify) _____ |

43. Have you ever experienced unwanted male sexual aggression from a BOYFRIEND or DATE?

1. Yes 2. No 3. Don't know

44. If you answered YES to the previous question (#43), what forms of sexual aggression did a boyfriend or date use on you? (Read the list and check all appropriate boxes)

Success-ful Attempt only

1. Held my hand against my wishes
2. Hugged me against my wishes
3. Kissed me against my wishes
4. Placed his hands on my breasts against my wishes
5. Placed his hands on my legs or thighs against my wishes
6. Placed his hands on my vagina against my wishes
7. Removed my blouse against my wishes
8. Removed my bra against my wishes.
9. Removed my slacks, shorts, or skirt against my wishes
10. Removed my panties against my wishes
11. Forced my legs apart against my wishes
12. Exposed his penis against my wishes
13. Placed his penis in my vagina against my wishes
14. Placed his penis in my anus against my wishes
15. Placed his penis in my mouth against my wishes
16. Placed his finger or a foreign object in my vagina against my wishes
17. Placed his finger or a foreign object in my anus against my wishes
18. Placed his finger or a foreign object in my mouth against my wishes
19. Placed his mouth on my vagina or anus against my wishes
20. Came (released seminal fluid) in my vagina, anus, or mouth against my wishes
21. Other (please specify) _____

45. If you answered YES to questions 41 or 43 (having experienced unwanted male sexual aggression), on how many SEPARATE occasions have you experienced such unwanted sexual aggression from:

males (strangers or otherwise)?

1. One occasion
2. 2-5 occasions
3. 6-10 occasions
4. 11-15 occasions
5. 16-20 occasions
6. Over 20 occasions

boyfriends or dates?

1. Zero occasions
2. One occasion
3. 2-5 occasions
4. 6-10 occasions
5. 11-15 occasions
6. 16-20 occasions
7. Over 20 occasions

the same boyfriend or date?

1. Zero occasions
2. One occasion
3. 2-5 occasions
4. 6-10 occasions
5. 11-15 occasions
6. 16-20 occasions
7. Over 20 occasions

46. If you answered YES to questions 41 or 43 (having experienced unwanted male sexual aggression), please briefly describe the experience that upset you the most.

47. If you answered YES to question #43 (unwanted sexual aggression from a boyfriend or date), please indicate how long you had KNOWN this person. If NO to question #43, skip to question #75.

1. Under 6 months
2. 6 months to one year
3. 1-2 years
4. 2-3 years
5. 3-4 years
6. 4-5 years
7. Over 5 years

48. At the time the unwanted sexual aggression took place, how long had you been DATING this person?

1. Under 2 days
2. 2-30 days
3. 1-3 months
4. 3-6 months
5. 6 months to one year
6. 1-2 years
7. 2-3 years
8. 3-4 years
9. 4-5 years
10. Over 5 years

49. Was this person married, single, widowed, separated, or divorced at the time the unwanted sexual aggression happened against you?

1. Married to another person
2. Living common-law with another person
3. Married to me
4. Living common-law with me
5. Single (never married)
6. Widowed
7. Separated
8. Divorced
9. Don't know

50. Approximately how old was this person?

1. 10 years or under
2. 11-15
3. 16-19
4. 20-24
5. 25-34
6. 35-49
7. 50-64
8. 65 years or older

51. What was this person's occupation at the time the unwanted sexual aggression took place?

1. Unemployed/Retired
2. Student
3. Factory worker or labourer
4. Office worker
5. Doctor or health care professional
6. Professor or teacher
7. Don't know
8. Other (please specify) _____

52. What was the HIGHEST level of education this person completed at the time the unwanted sexual aggression took place?

1. No schooling
2. Some elementary
3. Completed elementary
4. Some high school
5. Completed high school
6. Some Community or Technical College or Nursing
7. Completed Community or Technical College or Nursing
8. Some University or Teachers' College
9. Completed University or Teachers' College
10. Some Post-graduate University studies
11. Completed Post-graduate University studies
12. Other education or training (please specify) _____
13. Don't know

53. What is this person's race?

1. White
2. Black
3. Chinese
4. Japanese
5. East Indian
6. Native Indian
7. Other (please specify) _____

54. Approximately how old were you at the time of the unwanted sexual aggression?

1. 10 years or under
2. 11-15
3. 16-19
4. 20-24
5. 25-34
6. 35-49
7. 50-64
8. 65 years or older

55. Were you married, single, widowed, separated, or divorced at the time of the unwanted sexual aggression?

1. Married/Common-law
2. Single (never married)
3. Widowed
4. Separated
5. Divorced

56. At the time the unwanted sexual aggression took place, had YOU asked him out on the date or had HE asked you out on the date?

1. I had asked him out
2. He had asked me out
3. We were not on a date
4. Don't know
5. Other (please specify) _____

57. If you were on a date when the unwanted sexual aggression occurred, who PAID for the date?

1. I paid for the date
2. He paid for the date
3. We split the cost of the date
4. The date did not cost us anything
5. Don't know
6. Other (please specify) _____

58. Where did the unwanted sexual aggression take place?

1. Your house or apartment
2. His house or apartment
3. Someone else's house or apartment
4. Other buildings or enclosed structures such as schools, stairwells, empty buildings, etc. (please specify) _____
5. Motel/hotel room
6. Car, van, truck, or other vehicle
7. Boat, ship, or other sea-going vessel
8. Plane or other aircraft
9. Street or alley
10. Other outside area such as beach, field, in the hills or mountains, backyard, etc. (please specify) _____
11. Other area (please specify) _____

59. How long did the unwanted sexual aggression last?

1. Under 15 minutes
2. 15 minutes—a half hour
3. A half hour—one hour
4. 1–2 hours
5. 2–3 hours
6. 3–4 hours
7. 4–5 hours
8. Over 5 hours

60. On what DAY of the week did the unwanted sexual aggression take place?

1. Monday
2. Tuesday
3. Wednesday
4. Thursday
5. Friday
6. Saturday
7. Sunday

61. Approximately what TIME did the unwanted sexual aggression start?

1. Midnight–3:00 A.M.
2. 3:00 A.M.–6:00 A.M.
3. 6:00 A.M.–9:00 A.M.
4. 9:00 A.M.–12:00 Noon
5. 12:00 Noon–3:00 P.M.
6. 3:00 P.M.–6:00 P.M.
7. 6:00 P.M.–9:00 P.M.
8. 9:00 P.M.–Midnight

62. Which of the following kinds of pressure or force were used on you just before or during the unwanted sexual aggression? (Read the list and check all appropriate boxes)

1. Verbal persuasion, such as "If you love me you will" or "I'll break up with you if you don't"
2. Verbal threats of injury
3. Physical intimidation (the person was bigger and stronger)
4. You were made drunk
5. You were drugged (type of drug?) _____
6. You were taken by surprise, such as being asleep
7. You were pushed, slapped, and treated with mild roughness
8. You were threatened with a weapon such as a knife, bottle, cigarette lighter, gun, etc. (type of weapon?) _____
9. You were physically beaten
10. You were choked
11. You were injured with a weapon, such as being cut with a knife or burned with a lighter (type of weapon?) _____
12. No pressure or force was used on me
13. Other (please specify) _____

63. What did you do or say, if anything, to try to stop your boyfriend or date from forcibly kissing, touching, fondling, undressing, or penetrating you against your will? (Read the list and check all appropriate boxes)

1. I tried reasoning with him
2. I used an excuse, such as "I'm pregnant", "I have my period", or "I have a venereal disease"
3. I got hostile or angry
4. I screamed and yelled, made noise
5. I physically resisted and fought back
6. I tried running away, escaping
7. I froze
8. Other (please specify) _____

64. What did you do AFTER your boyfriend or date forcibly tried or succeeded in kissing, touching, fondling, undressing, or penetrating you against your will? (Read the list and check all appropriate boxes)

1. I notified the police
2. I called a Rape Crisis Centre
3. I told my parents
4. I told my closest FEMALE friend
5. I told my closest MALE friend
6. I contacted a social worker
7. I contacted a priest, minister, or member of the clergy
8. I took no action at all
9. Other (please specify) _____

65. How long did you wait before calling the police after your boyfriend or date forcibly tried or succeeded in kissing, touching, fondling, undressing, or penetrating you against your will?

1. Less than one hour
2. 1-24 hours
3. 1-3 days
4. 4-7 days
5. 1-4 weeks
6. 1-3 months
7. 3-6 months
8. Over 6 months
9. I never called the police

66. Did you launch a CIVIL SUIT (sue your boyfriend) for what he did to you?

1. Yes
2. No

67. If you answered YES to the previous question (#66), what was the outcome of the case?

1. I won my case (amount awarded?) _____
2. I lost my case.
3. I voluntarily withdrew my case
4. Case hasn't yet gone to court
5. Case has gone to court but hasn't yet been decided
6. Other (please specify) _____

68. Did you seek **MEDICAL ATTENTION** after your boyfriend or date forcibly tried or succeeded in kissing, touching, fondling, undressing, or penetrating you against your will?

1. Yes
2. No

69. If you answered YES to the previous question (#68), which **INJURIES** (if any of the following) did the doctor discover were caused by the actions of your boyfriend or date? (Read the list and check all appropriate boxes)

1. Discovered bruises on my body
2. Discovered slight to moderate cuts on my body
3. Discovered deep cuts on my body
4. Discovered burn marks on my body
5. Discovered sprained bones
6. Discovered broken bones
7. Discovered loose or broken teeth
8. Discovered venereal disease
9. Discovered I had become pregnant
10. Found no evidence of physical injury, venereal disease, or pregnancy
11. Other (please specify) _____

70. Which of the following **EMOTIONAL CONSEQUENCES** did you suffer because your boyfriend or date forcibly tried or succeeded in kissing, touching, fondling, undressing, or penetrating you against your will? (Read the list and check all appropriate boxes)

1. Anxiety and nervousness
2. Depression
3. Sleep disturbances
4. Crying
5. Feelings of being alone
6. Difficulties in concentration
7. Difficulty with or loss of job
8. Difficulty interacting with men
9. Loss of interest in sex
10. Intense fears
11. Quick mood changes
12. Thoughts of suicide
13. Attempted suicide
14. Suffered no emotional consequences
15. Other (please specify) _____

71. If you suffered emotional consequences, how **LONG** did they persist?

1. Less than one day
2. 1 day-1 week
3. 1 week-1 month
4. 1-6 months
5. 6 months-1 year
6. 1-2 years
7. 2-5 years
8. Over 5 years

72. Are you physically attracted to the opposite sex (males), the same sex (females), or both sexes?

- 1. Attracted to opposite sex
- 2. Attracted to same sex
- 3. Attracted to both sexes

73. How SUPPORTIVE were the following individuals or agencies when they learned what your boyfriend or date had done to you? (Please circle the one answer that BEST represents your feelings)

Police

Extremely Supportive	Moderately Supportive	Slightly Supportive	Not Supportive	Never Learned What Happened
1	2	3	4	5

Rape Crisis Centre

Extremely Supportive	Moderately Supportive	Slightly Supportive	Not Supportive	Never Learned What Happened
1	2	3	4	5

Parents

Extremely Supportive	Moderately Supportive	Slightly Supportive	Not Supportive	Never Learned What Happened
1	2	3	4	5

Closest Female Friend

Extremely Supportive	Moderately Supportive	Slightly Supportive	Not Supportive	Never Learned What Happened
1	2	3	4	5

Closest Male Friend

Extremely Supportive	Moderately Supportive	Slightly Supportive	Not Supportive	Never Learned What Happened
1	2	3	4	5

Social Worker

Extremely Supportive

Moderately Supportive

Slightly Supportive

Not Supportive

Never Learned What Happened
5

1

2

3

4

Member of the Clergy

Extremely Supportive

Moderately Supportive

Slightly Supportive

Not Supportive

Never Learned What Happened
5

1

2

3

4

Doctor

Extremely Supportive

Moderately Supportive

Slightly Supportive

Not Supportive

Never Learned What Happened
5

1

2

3

4

Other (please specify)

Extremely Supportive

Moderately Supportive

Slightly Supportive

Not Supportive

Never Learned What Happened
5

1

2

3

4

74. How would you evaluate the services you received? (Please circle the one answer that BEST represents your feelings)

Medical

Excellent	Good	Adequate	Poor	Didn't Use
1	2	3	4	5

Legal

Excellent	Good	Adequate	Poor	Didn't Use
1	2	3	4	5

Counselling

Excellent	Good	Adequate	Poor	Didn't Use
1	2	3	4	5

Police

Excellent	Good	Adequate	Poor	Didn't Use
1	2	3	4	5

Other (please specify) _____

Excellent	Good	Adequate	Poor	Didn't Use
1	2	3	4	5

75. Which of the following precautions are you taking to PREVENT future unwanted sexual aggression? (Read the list and check all appropriate boxes)

1. Self-defence training
2. Assertiveness training
3. Buddy system (Reliance on friend)
4. Reliance on security personnel
5. Carrying of a weapon (type?) _____
6. Avoidance of social interaction with men
7. Not taking any precautions
8. Other (please specify) _____

76. If you have ever experienced unwanted male sexual aggression from a **BOYFRIEND OR DATE** (however mild or severe), would you be willing to be interviewed if your identity were kept secret?

1. Yes, preferably over the phone
2. Yes, preferably in person
3. Yes, either by phone or in person
4. No

77. If you answered YES to question #76 (willing to be interviewed), please give only your first name (or a fictitious first name for contact purposes) and a phone number where you can be reached or a message left. Thank you.

Contact Name:

Phone number:

Best time to call:

In the remaining space you are welcome to add any comments that you wish to make about either this questionnaire, sexual aggression, relations between the sexes, the role of women, or any other related issue. If there is insufficient space, please feel free to use the back of this page.

THANK YOU very much for your participation in this study. Your willingness to share your personal feelings and experiences is greatly appreciated. If you would like a copy of the results of this study, they will be available free of charge at the Criminology General Office at Simon Fraser University ON OR AFTER July 1, 1987.

APPENDIX C: MALE QUESTIONNAIRE ON SEXUAL AGGRESSION

***To be completed by MALES only.**

This questionnaire is divided into three sections. Section one deals with attitudes towards women, section two with attitudes toward sexual aggression, and section three with your sexual aggression experiences. The instructions appearing at the beginning of each section ask you to supply the information requested or to indicate the alternative which best represents your feelings on the issue in question.

Thank you very much for taking the time to complete this questionnaire; your participation is greatly appreciated. If you have any questions about this questionnaire, please feel free to ask the person who gave it to you and/or contact the project director, Ken Garley (291-3213) or Dr. Verdun-Jones (291-3213) at Simon Fraser University. Please note that all replies to this questionnaire will be held in strictest confidence.

Please ensure that you have read the **INFORMATION SHEET FOR SUBJECTS** and fully understand it before checking **ONE** of the two boxes. If you have any questions at all, please ask.

*****Do you agree to participate in the Sexual Aggression Research Project by answering this questionnaire?**

1. Yes, I agree to participate in the research project.
2. No, I do not agree to participate in the research project.

INSTRUCTIONS: Prior to beginning section one, you are asked a few questions about **YOU**. Please note that your responses to these questions will not be used to identify you in any way, but rather are merely to help us describe the sample of persons who complete this questionnaire. Please check **ONLY ONE** box for each question unless otherwise specified.

A. What is your sex?

1. Male
2. Female

B. In what year were you born?

19_____

C. Are you married, single, widowed, separated, or divorced?

1. Married/Common-law
2. Single (never married)
3. Widowed
4. Separated
5. Divorced

D. What is the HIGHEST level of education you have completed?

1. No schooling
2. Some elementary
3. Completed elementary
4. Some High School
5. Completed High School
6. Some Community or Technical College or Nursing
7. Completed Community or Technical College or Nursing
8. Some University or Teachers' College
9. Completed University or Teachers' College
10. Some Post-graduate University studies
11. Completed Post-graduate University studies
12. Other education or training (please specify) _____

E. What is your race?

1. White

2. Black

3. Chinese

4. Japanese

5. East Indian

6. Native Indian

7. Other (please specify) _____

INSTRUCTIONS: The statements listed below describe attitudes that different people have towards women. There are no right or wrong answers, only opinions. Please circle the one answer that BEST expresses your feelings about each statement.

1. A man should fight when the woman he's with is insulted by another man.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

2. When a man and woman are on a date, it is acceptable for the woman to pay for the date.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

3. A woman should be a virgin when she marries.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

4. There is something wrong with a woman who doesn't want to raise a family.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

5. A wife should never contradict her husband in public.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

6. It is better for a woman to use her feminine charm to get what she wants rather than ask for it outright.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

7. A man should be a virgin when he marries.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

8. It looks worse for a woman to be drunk in public than for a man to be drunk in public.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

9. There is nothing wrong with a woman sitting alone in a bar.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

10. A woman will only respect the man she is dating if he will lay down the law to her.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

11. Many women are so demanding sexually that a man just can't satisfy them.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

12. A man must show the woman that he is the boss right from the start or he'll end up henpecked.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

13. Women are usually sweet until they've caught a man, but then they let their true self show.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

14. A lot of men talk big, but when it comes down to it, they can't perform well sexually.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

15. In a dating relationship a woman is primarily out to take advantage of a man.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

16. Men are out for only one thing- sex.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

17. Most women are sly and manipulating when they are out to attract a man.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

18. A lot of women seem to get pleasure in putting men down.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

19. People today should not use "an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth" as a rule for living.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

20. Being roughed up is sexually stimulating to many women.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

21. Many times a woman will pretend she doesn't want to have sexual intercourse because she doesn't want to seem loose, but she's really hoping the man will force her.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

22. A wife should move out of the house if her husband hits her.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

23. Sometimes the only way a man can get a frigid woman turned on is to use force.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

24. A man is never justified in hitting his wife.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

INSTRUCTIONS: The statements listed below describe attitudes that different people have towards sexual aggression and rape. Please circle the one answer that BEST expresses your feelings about each statement.

25. A woman who goes to the home or apartment of a man on their first date implies that she is willing to have sex with him.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

26. Any female can get raped.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

27. One reason that women falsely report a rape is that they frequently have a need to call attention to themselves.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

28. If she really wants to, any healthy woman can successfully resist being raped.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

29. When women go around braless or wearing short skirts and tight tops, they are just asking for trouble.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

30. In the majority of rapes, the victim is promiscuous or has a bad reputation.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

31. If a girl engages in necking or petting and she lets things get out of hand, it is her own fault if her partner forces sex on her.

Strongly Agree 1	Moderately Agree 2	Slightly Agree 3	Slightly Disagree 4	Moderately Disagree 5	Strongly Disagree 6	Don't Know 7
------------------------	--------------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	-----------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------

32. Women who get raped while hitchhiking get what they deserve.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

33. A woman who is stuck-up and thinks she is too good to talk to guys on the street deserves to be taught a lesson.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

34. Many women have an unconscious wish to be raped.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

35. If a woman gets drunk at a party and has sexual intercourse with a man she's just met there, she should be considered "fair game" to other males at the party who want to have sex with her too, whether she wants to or not.

Strongly Agree	Moderately Agree	Slightly Agree	Slightly Disagree	Moderately Disagree	Strongly Disagree	Don't Know
1	2	3	4	5	6	7

36. What percentage of women who report a rape would you say are lying because they are angry and want to get back at the man they accuse?

Almost All	About 3/4	About Half	About 1/4	Almost None
1	2	3	4	5

37. What percentage of reported rapes would you guess were merely invented by women who discovered they were pregnant and wanted to protect their own reputation?

Almost All	About 3/4	About Half	About 1/4	Almost None
1	2	3	4	5

38. A person comes to you and claims they were raped. How likely would you be to believe their statement if the person were:

your best FEMALE friend?

Always 1	Frequently 2	Sometimes 3	Rarely 4	Never 5
-------------	-----------------	----------------	-------------	------------

your best MALE friend?

Always 1	Frequently 2	Sometimes 3	Rarely 4	Never 5
-------------	-----------------	----------------	-------------	------------

an East Indian woman?

Always 1	Frequently 2	Sometimes 3	Rarely 4	Never 5
-------------	-----------------	----------------	-------------	------------

a Native Indian woman?

Always 1	Frequently 2	Sometimes 3	Rarely 4	Never 5
-------------	-----------------	----------------	-------------	------------

an elderly woman?

Always 1	Frequently 2	Sometimes 3	Rarely 4	Never 5
-------------	-----------------	----------------	-------------	------------

a young boy?

Always 1	Frequently 2	Sometimes 3	Rarely 4	Never 5
-------------	-----------------	----------------	-------------	------------

a young girl?

Always 1	Frequently 2	Sometimes 3	Rarely 4	Never 5
-------------	-----------------	----------------	-------------	------------

a black woman?

Always 1	Frequently 2	Sometimes 3	Rarely 4	Never 5
-------------	-----------------	----------------	-------------	------------

a white woman?

Always 1	Frequently 2	Sometimes 3	Rarely 4	Never 5
-------------	-----------------	----------------	-------------	------------

a Chinese woman?

Always 1	Frequently 2	Sometimes 3	Rarely 4	Never 5
-------------	-----------------	----------------	-------------	------------

INSTRUCTIONS: The following questions are specifically intended to tap your beliefs and experiences regarding sexual aggression. Just a reminder that all questions will be held in strictest confidence. Please check **ONLY ONE** box for each question unless otherwise specified.

39. In your opinion, how does a male know during sexual foreplay that the female is ready and in agreement to voluntary sexual intercourse? (Read the list and check all appropriate boxes)

1. Female offers no resistance to increasing degrees of sexual intimacy
2. Female gives clear verbal consent
3. Female fondles male's genital area
4. Female talks of sex and contraception
5. Female returns french kissing or breathes heavily
6. "Nice" females never suggest sexual intercourse in word or deed so he will never know
7. Don't know how
8. Other (please specify) _____

40. In your opinion, how does a female clearly communicate to a male that she is in voluntary agreement to sexual intercourse? (Read the list and check all appropriate boxes)

1. Female offers no resistance to increasing degrees of sexual intimacy
2. Female gives clear verbal consent
3. Female fondles male's genital area
4. Female talks of sex and contraception
5. Female returns french kissing or breathes heavily
6. "Nice" females never suggest sexual intercourse in word or deed
7. Don't know how
8. Other (please specify) _____

41. Have you ever PETTED a female above her waist?

1. Yes
2. No
3. Don't know

42. Have you ever PETTED a female below her waist?

- 1. Yes
- 2. No
- 3. Don't know

43. Have you ever had VAGINAL intercourse with a female?

- 1. Yes
- 2. No
- 3. Don't know

44. Have you ever stimulated a female's genitals ORALLY?

- 1. Yes
- 2. No
- 3. Don't know

45. Has a female ever stimulated your genitals ORALLY?

- 1. Yes
- 2. No
- 3. Don't know

46. Have you ever had ANAL intercourse with a female?

- 1. Yes
- 2. No
- 3. Don't know

47. Have you ever been in a situation where you became so sexually aroused that you couldn't stop yourself from having sexual intercourse even though the female you were with didn't want to continue?

- 1. Yes
- 2. No
- 3. Don't know

48. If you answered YES to the previous question (#47), please briefly describe the incident and what happened after it was over.

49. Have you ever said things you did NOT really mean to a girlfriend or date in order to have sexual intercourse?

- 1. Yes
- 2. No
- 3. Don't know

50. Have you ever threatened to END a relationship if your girlfriend or date didn't have sexual intercourse with you?

- 1. Yes
- 2. No
- 3. Don't know

51. Have you ever threatened to use physical force to make a girlfriend or date engage in KISSING OR FONDLING?

- 1. Yes
- 2. No
- 3. Don't know

52. Have you ever threatened to use physical force to make a girlfriend or date engage in SEXUAL INTERCOURSE?

- 1. Yes
- 2. No
- 3. Don't know

53. Which of the following have you said to a girlfriend or date in order to obtain sexual intercourse? (Read the list and check all appropriate boxes)

1. I love you (you were speaking the truth).
2. I love you (you were stretching the truth).
3. If you love me you will.
4. I'll break up with you if you don't.
5. Life is too short to wait.
6. You're not a virgin so what's the big deal?
7. Don't make me use force.
8. Other (please specify) _____

54. Have you ever TRIED to remove a girlfriend's or date's clothes when she didn't want them removed?

1. Yes
2. No
3. Don't know

55. Have you ever SUCCEEDED in removing a girlfriend's or date's clothes when she didn't want them removed?

1. Yes
2. No
3. Don't know

56. Have you ever PETTED a girlfriend or date above her waist when she didn't want you to?

1. Yes
2. No
3. Don't know

57. Have you ever PETTED a girlfriend or date below her waist when she didn't want you to?

1. Yes
2. No
3. Don't know

58. Have you ever had VAGINAL intercourse with a girlfriend or date when she didn't want to?

1. Yes
2. No
3. Don't know

59. Have you ever stimulated a girlfriend's or date's genitals ORALLY when she didn't want you to?

1. Yes
2. No
3. Don't know

60. Has a girlfriend or date ever stimulated your genitals ORALLY when she didn't want to?

1. Yes
2. No
3. Don't know

61. Have you ever had ANAL intercourse with a girlfriend or date when she didn't want to?

1. Yes
2. No
3. Don't know

62. If you answered YES to any of the previous eight questions (#54- #61), please briefly describe the incident and what happened after it was over.

(If there was more than one incident, please specify how many, but relate only the most memorable or most recent)

63. Which of the following methods have you used in order to obtain sexual intercourse from a female? (Read the list and check method worked, method failed, or both in all appropriate boxes)

W	F	B
o	a	o
r	i	t
k	l	h
e	e	
d	d	

- 1. Verbal persuasion
- 2. Verbal threats of injury
- 3. Ignoring her protests
- 4. Physically restraining her
- 5. Getting her drunk
- 6. Drugging her (drug type?) _____
- 7. Taking her by surprise, such as when she's asleep
- 8. Pushing, slapping, and treating her with mild roughness
- 9. Threatening her with a weapon (type of weapon?) _____
- 10. Physically beating her
- 11. Choking her
- 12. Injuring her with a weapon (type of weapon?) _____
- 13. Other (please specify) _____

64. Which of the following methods have you used in order to obtain sexual intercourse from a GIRLFRIEND or DATE? (Read the list and check method worked, method failed, or both in all appropriate boxes)

W	F	B
o	a	o
r	i	t
k	l	h
e	e	
d	d	

- 1. Verbal persuasion
- 2. Verbal threats of injury
- 3. Ignoring her protests
- 4. Physically restraining her
- 5. Getting her drunk
- 6. Drugging her (drug type?) _____
- 7. Taking her by surprise, such as when she's asleep
- 8. Pushing, slapping, and treating her with mild roughness
- 9. Threatening her with a weapon (type of weapon?) _____
- 10. Physically beating her
- 11. Choking her
- 12. Injuring her with a weapon (type of weapon?) _____
- 13. Other (please specify) _____

65. Have you ever used physical force (i.e. twisting her arm, holding her down, etc.) to get a girlfriend or date to engage in **KISSING OR FONDLING**?

- 1. Yes
- 2. No
- 3. Don't know

66. Have you ever used physical force to make a girlfriend or date engage in SEXUAL INTERCOURSE?

1. Yes
2. No
3. Don't know

67. Have you ever used a knife, gun, or other weapon to make a girlfriend or date engage in kissing, fondling, or sexual intercourse?

1. Yes
2. No
3. Don't know

68. Have you ever physically injured a girlfriend or date to make her engage in kissing, fondling, or sexual intercourse?

1. Yes
2. No
3. Don't know

69. Are you physically attracted to the opposite sex (females), the same sex (males), or both sexes?

1. Attracted to opposite sex
2. Attracted to same sex
3. Attracted to both sexes

70. Under what CIRCUMSTANCES would you make a girlfriend, date, or other female engage in kissing, fondling, or sexual intercourse with you when she didn't want to?

71. Why would you NOT make a girlfriend, date, or other female engage in kissing, fondling, or sexual intercourse with you when she didn't want to?

In the remaining space you are welcome to add any comments that you wish to make about either this questionnaire, sexual aggression, relations between the sexes, the role of women, or any other related issue. If there is insufficient space, please feel free to use the back of this page.

THANK YOU very much for your participation in this study. Your willingness to share your personal feelings and experiences is greatly appreciated. If you would like a copy of the results of this study, they will be available free of charge at the Criminology General Office at Simon Fraser University ON OR AFTER July 1, 1987.

APPENDIX D: FEMALE INTERVIEW SCHEDULE (TYPE 1)

***To only be used for FEMALES who have completed a questionnaire.**

a. Date of Interview (Month, Day, Year):

b. Name of Interviewer:

c. Type of Interview (check appropriate box)

1. Phone Interview

2. Face-to-face Interview (specify meeting place) _____

d. Name of Interviewee:

e. Phone Number of Interviewee:

f. Time Interview Began (use 24 hour clock):

g. Time Interview Ended (use 24 hour clock):

h. Interviewer's Assessment of Interviewee's Truthfulness

1. Person appeared to be telling the truth

2. Person appeared to be lying

3. Other (please specify) _____

i. Interviewer's Comments (use back page if needed):

j. Signature of Interviewer:

INTRODUCTION: First of all, let me thank you for taking the time to be interviewed; your participation is greatly appreciated. If you have any questions about this interview, please feel free to ask. As you know, this interview deals with your sexual aggression experiences. Some of the questions asked may make you feel uncomfortable. This is quite natural, and only to be expected. You should know that you can refuse to answer any questions, although it is hoped that you will answer them all to the best of your ability. Also, you are free to withdraw your participation in this study at any time should you so wish. Finally, let me reassure you that all your replies to my questions will be held in strictest confidence. Do you have any questions?

Before we begin this interview, you should know that you can contact Dr. Margaret Jackson or the project director Ken Garley at S.F.U.'s School of Criminology if you have any questions or complaints about this interview. They can be reached at 291-3213 weekdays during regular office hours. [At this point, ALL interviewees are to be handed a card with this information on it if they are being interviewed in person. If interview is being conducted over the phone, allow the person sufficient time to write this information down.

INTERVIEWER INSTRUCTIONS: As the interviewer, it is your professional and ethical responsibility to ensure that the person you are interviewing is fully made aware of the above and that she completely understands it. Only once this task has been fulfilled may you ask the following question. [Please check only ONE of the two boxes. If neither box is checked or if the "NO" box is checked, then any responses that may have been collected will be considered non-useable. For responses to be useable, INFORMED CONSENT must be obtained (that is, the "YES" box must be checked).]

*****Do you agree to participate in the Sexual Aggression Research Project by being interviewed?**

1. Yes, I agree to participate in the research project.
2. No, I do not agree to participate in the research project.

INSTRUCTIONS: At the outset, I am going to ask you a few questions so that I may verify that you are indeed the person who earlier completed a questionnaire. Please note that your responses to these questions will not be used to identify you in any way, but rather are merely to help us describe the sample of persons who are interviewed. [Please check ONLY ONE box for each question unless otherwise specified.]

A. What is your sex?

1. Male
2. Female

B. In what year were you born?

19 _____

C. Are you married, single, widowed, separated, or divorced?

1. Married/Common-law
2. Single (never married)
3. Widowed
4. Separated
5. Divorced

D. What is the HIGHEST level of education you have completed?

1. No schooling
2. Some elementary
3. Completed elementary
4. Some High School
5. Completed High School
6. Some Community or Technical College or Nursing
7. Completed Community or Technical College or Nursing
8. Some University or Teachers' College
9. Completed University or Teachers' College
10. Some Post-graduate University studies
11. Completed Post-graduate University studies
12. Other education or training (please specify) _____

E. What is your race?

- 1. White
- 2. Black
- 3. Chinese
- 4. Japanese
- 5. East Indian
- 6. Native Indian
- 7. Other (please specify) _____

INSTRUCTIONS: The following questions are specifically intended to tap your beliefs and experiences regarding sexual aggression. Just a reminder that all questions will be held in strictest confidence. [Please check **ONLY ONE** box for each question unless otherwise specified.]

1. When you first completed the questionnaire, you indicated that you had experienced unwanted male sexual aggression from a boyfriend or date. You then proceeded to briefly describe the experience that upset you the most. Could you please **ELABORATE** on your earlier response? [See #46]. Specifically, would you please describe in detail the chain of events leading up to your experience of unwanted sexual aggression, the incident itself, and what you did immediately after the incident?

A. Before Incident:

B. During Incident:

C. After Incident

2. How did you and the person who committed the act of unwanted sexual aggression against you first meet?

1. We met through friends
2. We met through our parents
3. We met on our own without help from others
4. We met through a dating service
5. Other (please specify) _____

3. Could you please describe in detail the kinds of **PRESSURE** or **FORCE** that were used on you just before or during the unwanted sexual aggression? [See #62]. Specifically, what did this person say and do to you?

4. Could you please describe in detail what you did or said (if anything) to **STOP** your boyfriend or date from forcibly kissing, fondling, undressing, or penetrating you against your will? [See #63].

5. Why did you not call the police? Or, why did you wait the time you did to call the police? [See #64 & #65].

6. CIVIL SUIT [See #66. If interviewee launched a civil suit, find out as much as you can about the case. This is a TOP PRIORITY request, and is well worth extending the interview for. For additional space, use back of page.]

Among other things, you should determine the following:

- (a) how long ago civil suit launched?
- (b) province suit launched in?
- (c) court suit launched in?
- (d) her lawyer's name (if she is willing to give it)?
- (e) whether suit launched on contingency fee basis?
- (f) her out-of-pocket expenses?
- (g) outcome of case?
- (h) amount awarded?
- (i) whether she'd go to court again?

7. Which of the following EMOTIONS did you experience as a direct result of the unwanted sexual aggression? (Read the list and check all appropriate responses)

- 1. Anger
- 2. Hate
- 3. Fear
- 4. Betrayal
- 5. Guilt
- 6. Other (please specify) _____

8. Why did you experience GUILT? [If applicable]

9. When you completed the questionnaire, you indicated that certain individuals and agencies were NOT SUPPORTIVE when they learned what your boyfriend or date had done to you. [See #73].

List Nonsupportive Individuals/Agencies: _____

In what ways were these individuals and agencies not supportive? Why do you think they were not supportive?

10. When you completed the questionnaire, you indicated that certain services you received were POOR. [See #74].

List Poor Services: _____

In what ways were these services poor? Why do you think these services were poor?

11. How would you improve the following services for victims of unwanted sexual aggression and rape if it were in your power to do so?

Medical:

Legal:

Counselling:

Police:

Other (please specify): _____

12. How do you think unwanted sexual aggression can BEST be prevented?

13. How do you think boyfriends or dates who rape their girlfriends should be PUNISHED? Specifically, should they be punished more severely, less severely, or the same as a man who rapes a female stranger?

1. Punishment should be MORE severe

2. Punishment should be LESS severe

3. Punishment should be the SAME

4. There should be NO punishment

5. Don't know

6. Other (please specify) _____

14. Have any of your female friends (past or present) received unwanted sexual aggression from a boyfriend or date? If YES, what forms did such unwanted sexual aggression take?

15. Is there anything else you'd like to add? Any question you think I should have asked but didn't?

THANK YOU very much for your participation in this study. Your willingness to share your personal feelings and experiences is greatly appreciated. If you would like a copy of the results of this study, they will be available free of charge at the Criminology General Office at Simon Fraser University ON OR AFTER July 1, 1987.

APPENDIX E: FEMALE INTERVIEW SCHEDULE (TYPE 2)

***To only be used for FEMALES who have not completed a questionnaire.**

a. Date of Interview (Month, Day, Year):

b. Name of Interviewer:

c. Type of Interview (check appropriate box)

1. Phone Interview

2. Face-to-face Interview (specify meeting place) _____

d. Name of Interviewee:

e. Phone Number of Interviewee:

f. Time Interview Began (use 24 hour clock):

g. Time Interview Ended (use 24 hour clock):

h. Interviewer's Assessment of Interviewee's Truthfulness

1. Person appeared to be telling the truth

2. Person appeared to be lying

3. Other (please specify) _____

i. Interviewer's Comments (use back page if needed):

j. Signature of Interviewer:

INTRODUCTION: First of all, let me thank you for taking the time to be interviewed; your participation is greatly appreciated. If you have any questions about this interview, please feel free to ask. As you know, this interview deals with your sexual aggression experiences. Some of the questions asked may make you feel uncomfortable. This is quite natural, and only to be expected. You should know that you can refuse to answer any questions, although it is hoped that you will answer them all to the best of your ability. Also, you are free to withdraw your participation in this study at any time should you so wish. Finally, let me reassure you that all your replies to my questions will be held in strictest confidence. Do you have any questions?

Before we begin this interview, you should know that you can contact Dr. Margaret Jackson or the project director Ken Garley at S.F.U.'s School of Criminology if you have any questions or complaints about this interview. They can be reached at 291-3213 weekdays during regular office hours. [At this point, ALL interviewees are to be handed a card with this information on it if they are being interviewed in person. If interview is being conducted over the phone, allow the person sufficient time to write this information down.]

INTERVIEWER INSTRUCTIONS: As the interviewer, it is your professional and ethical responsibility to ensure that the person you are interviewing is fully made aware of the above and that she completely understands it. Only once this task has been fulfilled may you ask the following question. [Please check only ONE of the two boxes. If neither box is checked or if the "NO" box is checked, then any responses that may have been collected will be considered non-useable. For responses to be useable, INFORMED CONSENT must be obtained (that is, the "YES" box must be checked.)]

*****Do you agree to participate in the Sexual Aggression Research Project by being interviewed?**

1. Yes, I agree to participate in the research project.
2. No, I do not agree to participate in the research project.

INSTRUCTIONS: At the outset, I am going to ask a few questions about YOU. Please note that your responses to these questions will not be used to identify you in any way, but rather are merely to help us describe the sample of persons who are interviewed. [Please check ONLY ONE box for each question unless otherwise specified.]

A. What is your sex?

1. Male
2. Female

B. In what year were you born?

19 _____

C. Are you married, single, widowed, separated, or divorced?

- 1. Married/Common-law
- 2. Single (never married)
- 3. Widowed
- 4. Separated
- 5. Divorced

D. What is the HIGHEST level of education you have completed?

- 1. No schooling
- 2. Some elementary
- 3. Completed elementary
- 4. Some High School
- 5. Completed High School
- 6. Some Community or Technical College or Nursing
- 7. Completed Community or Technical College or Nursing
- 8. Some University or Teachers' College
- 9. Completed University or Teachers' College
- 10. Some Post-graduate University studies
- 11. Completed Post-graduate University studies
- 12. Other education or training (please specify) _____

E. What is your race?

1. White
2. Black
3. Chinese
4. Japanese
5. East Indian
6. Native Indian
7. Other (please specify) _____

INSTRUCTIONS: The following questions are specifically intended to tap your beliefs and experiences regarding sexual aggression. Just a reminder that all questions will be held in strictest confidence. [Please check **ONLY ONE** box for each question unless otherwise specified.]

39. In your opinion, how does a male know during sexual foreplay that the female is ready and in agreement to voluntary sexual intercourse? (Read the list and check all appropriate boxes)

1. Female offers no resistance to increasing degrees of sexual intimacy
2. Female gives clear verbal consent
3. Female fondles male's genital area
4. Female talks of sex and contraception
5. Female returns french kissing or breathes heavily
6. "Nice" females never suggest sexual intercourse in word or deed so he will never know
7. Don't know how
8. Other (please specify) _____

40. In your opinion, how does a female clearly communicate to a male that she is in voluntary agreement to sexual intercourse? (Read the list and check all appropriate boxes)

1. Female offers no resistance to increasing degrees of sexual intimacy
2. Female gives clear verbal consent
3. Female fondles male's genital area
4. Female talks of sex and contraception
5. Female returns french kissing or breathes heavily
6. "Nice" females never suggest sexual intercourse in word or deed
7. Don't know how
8. Other (please specify) _____

41. Have you ever experienced unwanted male sexual aggression?

1. Yes
2. No
3. Don't know

42. If you answered YES to the previous question (#41), what forms did such unwanted male sexual aggression take? (Read the list and check successful or attempt only in all appropriate boxes)

- | Success-
ful | Attempt
only | |
|--------------------------|--------------------------|--|
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 1. Held my hand against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 2. Hugged me against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 3. Kissed me against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 4. Placed his hands on my breasts against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 5. Placed his hands on my legs or thighs against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 6. Placed his hands on my vagina against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 7. Removed my blouse against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 8. Removed my bra against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 9. Removed my slacks, shorts, or skirt against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 10. Removed my panties against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 11. Forced my legs apart against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 12. Exposed his penis against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 13. Placed his penis in my vagina against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 14. Placed his penis in my anus against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 15. Placed his penis in my mouth against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 16. Placed his finger or a foreign object in my vagina against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 17. Placed his finger or a foreign object in my anus against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 18. Placed his finger or a foreign object in my mouth against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 19. Placed his mouth on my vagina or anus against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 20. Came (released seminal fluid) in my vagina, anus, or mouth against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 21. Other (please specify) _____ |

43. Have you ever experienced unwanted male sexual aggression from a BOYFRIEND or DATE?

1. Yes 2. No 3. Don't know

44. If you answered YES to the previous question (#43), what forms of sexual aggression did a boyfriend or date use on you? (Read the list and check all appropriate boxes)

- | Successful | Attempt only | |
|-------------------------------------|--------------------------|--|
| <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 1. Held my hand against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 2. Hugged me against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 3. Kissed me against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 4. Placed his hands on my breasts against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 5. Placed his hands on my legs or thighs against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 6. Placed his hands on my vagina against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 7. Removed my blouse against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 8. Removed my bra against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 9. Removed my slacks, shorts, or skirt against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 10. Removed my panties against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 11. Forced my legs apart against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 12. Exposed his penis against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 13. Placed his penis in my vagina against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 14. Placed his penis in my anus against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 15. Placed his penis in my mouth against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 16. Placed his finger or a foreign object in my vagina against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 17. Placed his finger or a foreign object in my anus against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 18. Placed his finger or a foreign object in my mouth against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 19. Placed his mouth on my vagina or anus against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 20. Came (released seminal fluid) in my vagina, anus, or mouth against my wishes |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> | 21. Other (please specify) _____ |

45. If you answered YES to questions 41 or 43 (having experienced unwanted male sexual aggression), on how many SEPARATE occasions have you experienced such unwanted sexual aggression from:

males (strangers or otherwise)?

1. One occasion
2. 2-5 occasions
3. 6-10 occasions
4. 11-15 occasions
5. 16-20 occasions
6. Over 20 occasions

boyfriends or dates?

1. Zero occasions
2. One occasion
3. 2-5 occasions
4. 6-10 occasions
5. 11-15 occasions
6. 16-20 occasions
7. Over 20 occasions

the same boyfriend or date?

1. Zero occasions
2. One occasion
3. 2-5 occasions
4. 6-10 occasions
5. 11-15 occasions
6. 16-20 occasions
7. Over 20 occasions

46. If you answered YES to questions 41 or 43 (having experienced unwanted male sexual aggression), please briefly describe the experience that upset you the most.

47. If you answered YES to question #43 (unwanted sexual aggression from a boyfriend or date), please indicate how long you had KNOWN this person. If NO to question #43, skip to question #75.

1. Under 6 months
2. 6 months to one year
3. 1-2 years
4. 2-3 years
5. 3-4 years
6. 4-5 years
7. Over 5 years

48. At the time the unwanted sexual aggression took place, how long had you been DATING this person?

1. Under 2 days
2. 2-30 days
3. 1-3 months
4. 3-6 months
5. 6 months to one year
6. 1-2 years
7. 2-3 years
8. 3-4 years
9. 4-5 years
10. Over 5 years

49. Was this person married, single, widowed, separated, or divorced at the time the unwanted sexual aggression happened against you?

1. Married to another person
2. Living common-law with another person
3. Married to me
4. Living common-law with me
5. Single (never married)
6. Widowed
7. Separated
8. Divorced
9. Don't know

50. Approximately how old was this person?

1. 10 years or under
2. 11-15
3. 16-19
4. 20-24
5. 25-34
6. 35-49
7. 50-64
8. 65 years or older

51. What was this person's occupation at the time the unwanted sexual aggression took place?

1. Unemployed/Retired
2. Student
3. Factory worker or labourer
4. Office worker
5. Doctor or health care professional
6. Professor or teacher
7. Don't know
8. Other (please specify) _____

52. What was the HIGHEST level of education this person completed at the time the unwanted sexual aggression took place?

1. No schooling
2. Some elementary
3. Completed elementary
4. Some high school
5. Completed high school
6. Some Community or Technical College or Nursing
7. Completed Community or Technical College or Nursing
8. Some University or Teachers' College
9. Completed University or Teachers' College
10. Some Post-graduate University studies
11. Completed Post-graduate University studies
12. Other education or training (please specify) _____
13. Don't know

53. What is this person's race?

1. White
2. Black
3. Chinese
4. Japanese
5. East Indian
6. Native Indian
7. Other (please specify) _____

54. Approximately how old were you at the time of the unwanted sexual aggression?

1. 10 years or under
2. 11-15
3. 16-19
4. 20-24
5. 25-34
6. 35-49
7. 50-64
8. 65 years or older

55. Were you married, single, widowed, separated, or divorced at the time of the unwanted sexual aggression?

1. Married/Common-law
2. Single (never married)
3. Widowed
4. Separated
5. Divorced

56. At the time the unwanted sexual aggression took place, had YOU asked him out on the date or had HE asked you out on the date?

1. I had asked him out
2. He had asked me out
3. We were not on a date
4. Don't know
5. Other (please specify) _____

57. If you were on a date when the unwanted sexual aggression occurred, who PAID for the date?

1. I paid for the date
2. He paid for the date
3. We split the cost of the date
4. The date did not cost us anything
5. Don't know
6. Other (please specify) _____

58. Where did the unwanted sexual aggression take place?

1. Your house or apartment
2. His house or apartment
3. Someone else's house or apartment
4. Other buildings or enclosed structures such as schools, stairwells, empty buildings, etc. (please specify) _____
5. Motel/hotel room
6. Car, van, truck, or other vehicle
7. Boat, ship, or other sea-going vessel
8. Plane or other aircraft
9. Street or alley
10. Other outside area such as beach, field, in the hills or mountains, backyard, etc. (please specify) _____
11. Other area (please specify) _____

59. How long did the unwanted sexual aggression last?

1. Under 15 minutes
2. 15 minutes-a half hour
3. A half hour-one hour
4. 1-2 hours
5. 2-3 hours
6. 3-4 hours
7. 4-5 hours
8. Over 5 hours

60. On what DAY of the week did the unwanted sexual aggression take place?

1. Monday
2. Tuesday
3. Wednesday
4. Thursday
5. Friday
6. Saturday
7. Sunday

61. Approximately what TIME did the unwanted sexual aggression start?

1. Midnight-3:00 A.M.
2. 3:00 A.M.-6:00 A.M.
3. 6:00 A.M.-9:00 A.M.
4. 9:00 A.M.-12:00 Noon
5. 12:00 Noon-3:00 P.M.
6. 3:00 P.M.-6:00 P.M.
7. 6:00 P.M.-9:00 P.M.
8. 9:00 P.M.-Midnight

62. Which of the following kinds of pressure or force were used on you just before or during the unwanted sexual aggression? (Read the list and check all appropriate boxes)

1. Verbal persuasion, such as "If you love me you will" or "I'll break up with you if you don't"
2. Verbal threats of injury
3. Physical intimidation (the person was bigger and stronger)
4. You were made drunk
5. You were drugged (type of drug?) _____
6. You were taken by surprise, such as being asleep
7. You were pushed, slapped, and treated with mild roughness
8. You were threatened with a weapon such as a knife, bottle, cigarette lighter, gun, etc. (type of weapon?) _____
9. You were physically beaten
10. You were choked
11. You were injured with a weapon, such as being cut with a knife, or burned with a lighter (type of weapon?) _____
12. No pressure or force was used on me
13. Other (please specify) _____

63. What did you do or say, if anything, to try to stop your boyfriend or date from forcibly kissing, touching, fondling, undressing, or penetrating you against your will? (Read the list and check all appropriate boxes)

1. I tried reasoning with him
2. I used an excuse, such as "I'm pregnant", "I have my period", or "I have a venereal disease"
3. I got hostile or angry
4. I screamed and yelled, made noise
5. I physically resisted and fought back
6. I tried running away, escaping
7. I froze
8. Other (please specify) _____

64. What did you do AFTER your boyfriend or date forcibly tried or succeeded in kissing, touching, fondling, undressing, or penetrating you against your will? (Read the list and check all appropriate boxes)

1. I notified the police
2. I called a Rape Crisis Centre
3. I told my parents
4. I told my closest FEMALE friend
5. I told my closest MALE friend
6. I contacted a social worker
7. I contacted a priest, minister, or member of the clergy
8. I took no action at all
9. Other (please specify) _____

65. How long did you wait before calling the police after your boyfriend or date forcibly tried or succeeded in kissing, touching, fondling, undressing, or penetrating you against your will?

1. Less than one hour
2. 1-24 hours
3. 1-3 days
4. 4-7 days
5. 1-4 weeks
6. 1-3 months
7. 3-6 months
8. Over 6 months
9. I never called the police

66. Did you launch a CIVIL SUIT (sue your boyfriend) for what he did to you?

1. Yes
2. No

67. If you answered YES to the previous question (#66), what was the outcome of the case?

1. I won my case (amount awarded?) _____
2. I lost my case
3. I voluntarily withdrew my case
4. Case hasn't yet gone to court
5. Case has gone to court but hasn't yet been decided
6. Other (please specify) _____

68. Did you seek MEDICAL ATTENTION after your boyfriend or date forcibly tried or succeeded in kissing, touching, fondling, undressing, or penetrating you against your will?

1. Yes
2. No

69. If you answered YES to the previous question (#68), which INJURIES (if any of the following) did the doctor discover were caused by the actions of your boyfriend or date? (Read the list and check all appropriate boxes)

1. Discovered bruises on my body
2. Discovered slight to moderate cuts on my body
3. Discovered deep cuts on my body
4. Discovered burn marks on my body
5. Discovered sprained bones
6. Discovered broken bones
7. Discovered loose or broken teeth
8. Discovered venereal disease
9. Discovered I had become pregnant
10. Found no evidence of physical injury, venereal disease, or pregnancy
11. Other (please specify) _____

70. Which of the following EMOTIONAL CONSEQUENCES did you suffer because your boyfriend or date forcibly tried or succeeded in kissing, touching, fondling, undressing, or penetrating you against your will? (Read the list and check all appropriate boxes)

1. Anxiety and nervousness
2. Depression
3. Sleep disturbances
4. Crying
5. Feelings of being alone
6. Difficulties in concentration
7. Difficulty with or loss of job
8. Difficulty interacting with men
9. Loss of interest in sex
10. Intense fears
11. Quick mood changes
12. Thoughts of suicide
13. Attempted suicide
14. Suffered no emotional consequences
15. Other (please specify) _____

71. If you suffered emotional consequences, how LONG did they persist?

1. Less than one day
2. 1 day-1 week
3. 1 week-1 month
4. 1-6 months
5. 6 months-1 year
6. 1-2 years
7. 2-5 years
8. Over 5 years

72. Are you physically attracted to the opposite sex (males), the same sex (females), or both sexes?

- 1. Attracted to opposite sex
- 2. Attracted to same sex
- 3. Attracted to both sexes

73. How SUPPORTIVE were the following individuals or agencies when they learned what your boyfriend or date had done to you? (Please circle the one answer that BEST represents your feelings)

Police

Extremely Supportive	Moderately Supportive	Slightly Supportive	Not Supportive	Never Learned What Happened
1	2	3	4	5

Rape Crisis Centre

Extremely Supportive	Moderately Supportive	Slightly Supportive	Not Supportive	Never Learned What Happened
1	2	3	4	5

Parents

Extremely Supportive	Moderately Supportive	Slightly Supportive	Not Supportive	Never Learned What Happened
1	2	3	4	5

Closest Female Friend

Extremely Supportive	Moderately Supportive	Slightly Supportive	Not Supportive	Never Learned What Happened
1	2	3	4	5

Closest Male Friend

Extremely Supportive	Moderately Supportive	Slightly Supportive	Not Supportive	Never Learned What Happened
1	2	3	4	5

Social Worker

Extremely Supportive

1

Moderately Supportive

2

Slightly Supportive

3

Not Supportive

4

Never Learned What Happened
5

Member of the Clergy

Extremely Supportive

1

Moderately Supportive

2

Slightly Supportive

3

Not Supportive

4

Never Learned What Happened
5

Doctor

Extremely Supportive

1

Moderately Supportive

2

Slightly Supportive

3

Not Supportive

4

Never Learned What Happened
5

Other (please specify)

Extremely Supportive

1

Moderately Supportive

2

Slightly Supportive

3

Not Supportive

4

Never Learned What Happened
5

74. How would you evaluate the services you received? (Please circle the one answer that BEST represents your feelings)

Medical

Excellent	Good	Adequate	Poor	Didn't Use
1	2	3	4	5

Legal

Excellent	Good	Adequate	Poor	Didn't Use
1	2	3	4	5

Counselling

Excellent	Good	Adequate	Poor	Didn't Use
1	2	3	4	5

Police

Excellent	Good	Adequate	Poor	Didn't Use
1	2	3	4	5

Other (please specify) _____

Excellent	Good	Adequate	Poor	Didn't Use
1	2	3	4	5

75. Which of the following precautions are you taking to PREVENT future unwanted sexual aggression? (Read the list and check all appropriate boxes)

1. Self-defence training
2. Assertiveness training
3. Buddy system (Reliance on friend)
4. Reliance on security personnel
5. Carrying of a weapon (type?) _____
6. Avoidance of social interaction with men
7. Not taking any precautions
8. Other (please specify) _____

Do you have any comments that you wish to make about either this interview, sexual aggression, relations between the sexes, the role of women, or any other related issue? (If there is insufficient space, please feel free to use the back of this page)

THANK YOU very much for your participation in this study. Your willingness to share your personal feelings and experiences is greatly appreciated. If you would like a copy of the results of this study, they will be available free of charge at the Criminology General Office at Simon Fraser University ON OR AFTER July 1, 1987.

APPENDIX F: SUBJECT CONSENT FORM

*To only be used for ADULTS who wish to answer a questionnaire.

Note: Simon Fraser University and those conducting this project strongly believe that research should be carried out in an ethical manner in order to fully protect at all times the interests, comfort, and safety of subjects. This form and the information it contains are given to you for your own protection, and to ensure that you fully understand the procedures, risks, and benefits involved. Your signature on this form will signify that you have received the INFORMATION SHEET FOR SUBJECTS, that you have received ample opportunity to consider this information, and that you voluntarily agree to participate in this project.

Having been asked by Ken Garley of the School of Criminology at Simon Fraser University to participate in a research project, I consent to completing a questionnaire dealing with sexual aggression.

I understand that I have the right to withdraw from the project at any time. I also understand that any complaints about the questionnaire may be made to the chief researcher Ken Garley or to Dr. Verdun-Jones, Director of the School of Criminology at S.F.U. The number is 291-3213.

I may obtain a FREE copy of the results of this study, upon its completion, by contacting:

Ken D. Garley
School of Criminology
Simon Fraser University
Burnaby, B.C.
V5A 1S6

DATE: _____

SIGNATURE: _____

APPENDIX G: GUARDIAN CONSENT FORM (TYPE 1)

*To only be used for MINORS who wish to answer a questionnaire.

Note: Simon Fraser University and those conducting this project strongly believe that research should be carried out in an ethical manner in order to fully protect at all times the interests, comfort, and safety of subjects. This form and the information it contains are given to you for your own protection, and to ensure that you fully understand the procedures, risks, and benefits involved. Your signature on this form will signify that you have received the INFORMATION SHEET FOR SUBJECTS, that you have received ample opportunity to consider this information, and that you voluntarily agree to allow your son, daughter, or other person for whom you are responsible to participate in this project.

As the parent or legal guardian of _____,
I consent to him/her completing a questionnaire dealing with sexual aggression in a research project supervised by Ken Garley of the School of Criminology at Simon Fraser University.

I certify that I have explained to _____
that he/she has the right to withdraw from the project at any time. I understand that any complaints about the questionnaire may be made to the chief researcher Ken Garley or to Dr. Verdun-Jones, Director of the School of Criminology at S.F.U. The number is 291-3213.

I may obtain a FREE copy of the results of this study, upon its completion, by contacting:

Ken D. Garley
School of Criminology
Simon Fraser University
Burnaby, B.C.
V5A 1S6

DATE: _____

SIGNATURE: _____

APPENDIX H: GUARDIAN CONSENT FORM (TYPE 2)

*To only be used for MINORS who wish to be interviewed.

Note: Simon Fraser University and those conducting this project strongly believe that research should be carried out in an ethical manner in order to fully protect at all times the interests, comfort, and safety of subjects. This form and the information it contains are given to you for your own protection, and to ensure that you fully understand the procedures, risks, and benefits involved. Your signature on this form will signify that you have received the **INFORMATION SHEET FOR SUBJECTS**, that you have received ample opportunity to consider this information, and that you voluntarily agree to allow your son, daughter, or other person for whom you are responsible to participate in this project.

As the parent or legal guardian of _____
I consent to him/her being interviewed on the topic of sexual aggression in a research project supervised by Ken Garley of the School of Criminology at Simon Fraser University.

I certify that I have explained to _____
that he/she has the right to withdraw from the project at any time. I understand that any complaints about the interview may be made to the Chief researcher Ken Garley or to Dr. Verdun-Jones, Director of the School of Criminology at S.F.U. The number is 291-3213.

I may obtain a FREE copy of the results of this study, upon its completion, by contacting:

Ken D. Garley
School of Criminology
Simon Fraser University
Burnaby, B.C.
V5A 1S6

DATE: _____

SIGNATURE: _____

APPENDIX I: INFORMATION SHEET FOR SUBJECTS

Title of Project: Sexual Aggression Research Project

Prior to completing the questionnaire, it is important that you be told the possible risks and benefits of your participation in this study so that you will be better able to decide if you wish to participate.

As far as the risks are concerned, they are psychological ones. In other words, because the study deals with sexual aggression some of the questions asked may cause you discomfort. You may feel embarrassed, ashamed, guilty, or some similar feeling. The purpose of this study is not to cause such feelings to surface, however, a way has not yet been found to separate one's feelings from one's experiences. Should you not wish to answer certain questions, that is your right, although it is hoped that you will answer them all to the best of your ability. Let me reassure you that **ALL REPLIES TO THIS QUESTIONNAIRE WILL BE HELD IN STRICTEST CONFIDENCE**. Also, you are free to withdraw your participation in this study at any time should you so desire.

You may wonder if it is worth participating in this study. You may ask "What do I stand to gain by my participation?" In a nutshell, you get to tell your side of the story anonymously to someone who is truly interested in what you have to say. By participating in this study, you also help others. The first step in preventing and eliminating unwanted sexual aggression is to understand the conditions under which it occurs. Your participation will help us to understand, and perhaps to prevent, such acts of unwanted aggression. As a professional courtesy and way of saying "thank-you for participating", you will receive (if you wish) a FREE copy of the results of this study.

Should you require further information or wish to register a complaint, you may contact either the project director Ken Garley, Dr. Margaret Jackson, or Dr. Verdun-Jones at the School of Criminology at Simon Fraser University. The number is 291-3213.

APPENDIX J: MISCELLANEOUS TABLES

Table J.1
 Crosstabulation of Believability of Sexual Assault
 Victims with Specific Characteristics by Sex
 (Out-of-Class Sample)

Condition Completed
 Under
 Out-of-Class

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
1. Respondent's Best Female Friend						
Always or Frequently	38	95.0%	70	100%	108	98.2%
Sometimes	2	5.0%	0	.0%	2	1.8%
No Response	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
Total	40	100%	70	100%	110	100%
2. Respondent's Best Male Friend						
Always or Frequently	26	65.0%	65	92.9%	91	82.7%
Sometimes	2	5.0%	4	5.7%	6	5.5%
Rarely or Never	12	30.0%	1	1.4%	13	11.8%
No Response	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
Total	40	100%	70	100%	110	100%
3. East Indian Woman						
Always or Frequently	27	67.5%	61	87.1%	88	80.0%
Sometimes	8	20.0%	6	8.6%	14	12.7%
Rarely or Never	5	12.5%	1	1.4%	6	5.5%
No Response	0	.0%	2	2.9%	2	1.8%
Total	40	100%	70	100%	110	100%
4. Native Indian Woman						
Always or Frequently	24	60.0%	59	84.3%	83	75.5%
Sometimes	9	22.5%	8	11.4%	17	15.5%
Rarely or Never	7	17.5%	2	2.9%	9	8.2%
No Response	0	.0%	1	1.4%	1	.9%
Total	40	100%	70	100%	110	100%
5. Elderly Woman						
Always or Frequently	27	67.5%	66	94.3%	93	84.5%
Sometimes	5	12.5%	3	4.3%	8	7.3%
Rarely or Never	8	20.0%	0	.0%	8	7.3%
No Response	0	.0%	1	1.4%	1	.9%
Total	40	100%	70	100%	110	100%
6. Young Boy						
Always or Frequently	26	65.0%	61	87.1%	87	79.1%
Sometimes	9	22.5%	7	10.0%	16	14.5%
Rarely or Never	5	12.5%	1	1.4%	6	5.5%
No Response	0	.0%	1	1.4%	1	.9%
Total	40	100%	70	100%	110	100%
7. Young Girl						
Always or Frequently	36	90.0%	62	88.6%	98	89.1%
Sometimes	2	5.0%	5	7.1%	7	6.4%
Rarely or Never	2	5.0%	1	1.4%	3	2.7%
No Response	0	.0%	2	2.9%	2	1.8%
Total	40	100%	70	100%	110	100%
8. Black Woman						
Always or Frequently	32	80.0%	62	88.6%	94	85.5%
Sometimes	8	20.0%	6	8.6%	14	12.7%
Rarely or Never	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
No Response	0	.0%	2	2.9%	2	1.8%
Total	40	100%	70	100%	110	100%
9. White Woman						
Always or Frequently	34	85.0%	62	88.6%	96	87.3%
Sometimes	6	15.0%	5	7.1%	11	10.0%
Rarely or Never	0	.0%	1	1.4%	1	.9%
No Response	0	.0%	2	2.9%	2	1.8%
Total	40	100%	70	100%	110	100%
10. Chinese woman						
Always or Frequently	31	77.5%	63	90.0%	94	85.5%
Sometimes	7	17.5%	5	7.1%	12	10.9%
Rarely or Never	2	5.0%	0	.0%	2	1.8%
No Response	0	.0%	2	2.9%	2	1.8%
Total	40	100%	70	100%	110	100%

Table J.2
 Crosstabulation of Believability of Sexual Assault
 Victims with Specific Characteristics by Sex
 (In-Class & Out-of-Class Samples Combined)

Total	Sex of Respondent ¹				Total	
	Male		Female			
1. Respondent's Best Female Friend						
Always or Frequently	252	96.9%	252	99.2%	504	98.1%
Sometimes	7	2.7%	2	.8%	9	1.8%
No Response	1	.4%	0	0%	1	.2%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
2. Respondent's Best Male Friend						
Always or Frequently	170	65.4%	215	84.6%	385	74.9%
Sometimes	20	7.7%	20	7.9%	40	7.8%
Rarely or Never	69	26.5%	19	7.5%	88	17.1%
No Response	1	.4%	0	0%	1	.2%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
3. East Indian Woman						
Always or Frequently	171	65.8%	207	81.5%	378	73.5%
Sometimes	54	20.8%	38	15.0%	92	17.9%
Rarely or Never	28	10.8%	4	1.6%	32	6.2%
No Response	7	2.7%	5	2.0%	12	2.3%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
4. Native Indian Woman						
Always or Frequently	143	55.0%	200	78.7%	343	66.7%
Sometimes	65	25.0%	39	15.4%	104	20.2%
Rarely or Never	45	17.3%	11	4.3%	56	10.9%
No Response	7	2.7%	4	1.6%	11	2.1%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
5. Elderly Woman						
Always or Frequently	191	73.5%	227	89.4%	418	81.3%
Sometimes	31	11.9%	17	6.7%	48	9.3%
Rarely or Never	33	12.7%	8	3.1%	41	8.0%
No Response	5	1.9%	2	.8%	7	1.4%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
6. Young Boy						
Always or Frequently	176	67.7%	211	83.1%	387	75.3%
Sometimes	63	24.2%	31	12.2%	94	18.3%
Rarely or Never	15	5.8%	10	3.9%	25	4.9%
No Response	6	2.3%	2	.8%	8	1.6%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
7. Young Girl						
Always or Frequently	211	81.2%	217	85.4%	428	83.3%
Sometimes	42	16.2%	29	11.4%	71	13.8%
Rarely or Never	2	.8%	5	2.0%	7	1.4%
No Response	5	1.9%	3	1.2%	8	1.6%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
8. Black Woman						
Always or Frequently	206	79.2%	218	85.8%	424	82.5%
Sometimes	42	16.2%	30	11.8%	72	14.0%
Rarely or Never	5	1.9%	1	.4%	6	1.2%
No Response	7	2.7%	5	2.0%	12	2.3%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
9. White Woman						
Always or Frequently	213	81.9%	221	87.0%	434	84.4%
Sometimes	35	13.5%	26	10.2%	61	11.9%
Rarely or Never	5	1.9%	3	1.2%	8	1.6%
No Response	7	2.7%	4	1.6%	11	2.1%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
10. Chinese woman						
Always or Frequently	203	78.1%	219	86.2%	422	82.1%
Sometimes	37	14.2%	29	11.4%	66	12.8%
Rarely or Never	13	5.0%	1	.4%	14	2.7%
No Response	7	2.7%	5	2.0%	12	2.3%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%

See Table 6.38 for the In-Class Sample &
 Table J.1 for the Out-of-Class Sample.

Table J.3 (Part 1 of 2)
 Crosstabulation of Burt's Rape Myth Acceptance
 Scale Items by Sex (Out-of-Class Sample)

Condition Completed
 Under
 Out-of-Class

	Sex of Respondent		Total	
	Male	Female		
1. A woman who goes to the home... of a man on their first date implies that she is willing to have sex with him.				
Agree	13 32.5%	10 14.3%	23	20.9%
Disagree	25 62.5%	60 85.7%	85	77.3%
Don't Know	2 5.0%	0 .0%	2	1.8%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110	100%
2. Any female can get raped.				
Agree	33 82.5%	69 98.6%	102	92.7%
Disagree	5 12.5%	1 1.4%	6	5.5%
Don't Know	2 5.0%	0 .0%	2	1.8%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110	100%
3. One reason that women falsely report a rape is that they frequently have a need to call attention to themselves.				
Agree	12 30.0%	18 25.7%	30	27.3%
Disagree	17 42.5%	37 52.9%	54	49.1%
Don't Know	11 27.5%	15 21.4%	26	23.6%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110	100%
4. If she really wants to, any healthy woman can successfully resist being raped.				
Agree	4 10.0%	6 8.6%	10	9.1%
Disagree	35 87.5%	62 88.6%	97	88.2%
Don't Know	1 2.5%	2 2.9%	3	2.7%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110	100%
5. When women go around braless or wearing short skirts and tight tops, they are just asking for trouble.				
Agree	18 45.0%	15 21.4%	33	30.0%
Disagree	22 55.0%	54 77.1%	76	69.1%
Don't Know	0 .0%	1 1.4%	1	.9%
No Response	0 .0%	0 .0%	0	.0%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110	100%
6. In the majority of rapes, the victim is promiscuous or has a bad reputation.				
Agree	3 7.5%	1 1.4%	4	3.6%
Disagree	30 75.0%	60 85.7%	90	81.8%
Don't Know	7 17.5%	9 12.9%	16	14.5%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110	100%
7. If a girl engages in necking or petting... it is her own fault if her partner forces sex on her.				
Agree	10 25.0%	5 7.1%	15	13.6%
Disagree	30 75.0%	64 91.4%	94	85.5%
Don't Know	0 .0%	1 1.4%	1	.9%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110	100%
8. Women who get raped while hitchhiking get what they deserve.				
Agree	4 10.0%	11 15.7%	15	13.6%
Disagree	36 90.0%	59 84.3%	95	86.4%
Don't Know	0 .0%	0 .0%	0	.0%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110	100%

See Table 6.39 for In-Class Sample &
 Table J.4 for the Combined Sample.

Table J.3 (Part 2 of 2)
 Crosstabulation of Burt's Rape Myth Acceptance
 Scale Items by Sex (Out-of-Class Sample)

Condition Completed
 Under
 Out-of-Class

	Sex of Respondent		Total
	Male	Female	
9. A woman who is stuck-up and thinks she is too good to talk to guys on the street deserves to be taught a lesson.			
Agree	4 10.0%	2 2.9%	6 5.5%
Disagree	36 90.0%	66 94.3%	102 92.7%
Don't Know	0 .0%	2 2.9%	2 1.8%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110 100%
10. Many women have an unconscious wish to be raped.			
Agree	3 7.5%	3 4.3%	6 5.5%
Disagree	28 70.0%	60 85.7%	88 80.0%
Don't Know	9 22.5%	7 10.0%	16 14.5%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110 100%
11. If a woman gets drunk at a party and has sexual intercourse with a man she's just met there, she (is)...fair game...			
Agree	2 5.0%	0 .0%	2 1.8%
Disagree	38 95.0%	70 100%	108 98.2%
Don't Know	0 .0%	0 .0%	0 .0%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110 100%
12. What % of women who report a rape would you say are lying because they are angry and want to get back at the man...?			
About 75% or More	1 2.5%	3 4.3%	4 3.6%
About 50%	4 10.0%	3 4.3%	7 6.4%
About 25% or Less	35 87.5%	63 90.0%	98 89.1%
No Response	0 .0%	1 1.4%	1 .9%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110 100%
13. What % of reported rapes would you guess were merely invented by women who discovered they were pregnant...?			
About 75% or More	0 .0%	1 1.4%	1 .9%
About 50%	2 5.0%	5 7.1%	7 6.4%
About 25% or Less	38 95.0%	63 90.0%	101 91.8%
No Response	0 .0%	1 1.4%	1 .9%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110 100%

See Table 6.39 for the In-Class Sample &
 Table J.4 for the Combined Sample.

Table J.4 (Part 1 of 2)
 Crosstabulation of Burt's Rape Myth Acceptance Scale
 Items by Sex (In-Class & Out-of-Class Samples Combined)

Total	Sex of Respondent		Total
	Male	Female	
1. A woman who goes to the home of a man on their first date implies that she is willing to have sex with him.			
Agree	88 33.8%	43 16.9%	131 25.5%
Disagree	169 65.0%	207 81.5%	376 73.2%
Don't Know	3 1.2%	4 1.6%	7 1.4%
Total	260 100%	254 100%	514 100%
2. Any female can get raped.			
Agree	225 86.5%	245 96.5%	470 91.4%
Disagree	27 10.4%	7 2.8%	34 6.6%
Don't Know	8 3.1%	2 .8%	10 1.9%
Total	260 100%	254 100%	514 100%
3. One reason that women falsely report a rape is that they frequently have a need to call attention to themselves.			
Agree	106 40.8%	89 35.0%	195 37.9%
Disagree	100 38.5%	119 46.9%	219 42.6%
Don't Know	54 20.8%	46 18.1%	100 19.5%
Total	260 100%	254 100%	514 100%
4. If she really wants to, any healthy woman can successfully resist being raped.			
Agree	30 11.5%	29 11.4%	59 11.5%
Disagree	220 84.6%	219 86.2%	439 85.4%
Don't Know	10 3.8%	6 2.4%	16 3.1%
Total	260 100%	254 100%	514 100%
5. When women go around braless or wearing short skirts and tight tops, they are just asking for trouble.			
Agree	108 41.5%	77 30.3%	185 36.0%
Disagree	147 56.5%	174 68.5%	321 62.5%
Don't Know	4 1.5%	3 1.2%	7 1.4%
No Response	1 .4%	0 .0%	1 .2%
Total	260 100%	254 100%	514 100%
6. In the majority of rapes, the victim is promiscuous or has a bad reputation.			
Agree	33 12.7%	19 7.5%	52 10.1%
Disagree	183 70.4%	211 83.1%	394 76.7%
Don't Know	44 16.9%	24 9.4%	68 13.2%
Total	260 100%	254 100%	514 100%
7. If a girl engages in necking or petting...it is her own fault if her partner forces sex on her.			
Agree	58 22.3%	35 13.8%	93 18.1%
Disagree	200 76.9%	217 85.4%	417 81.1%
Don't Know	2 .8%	2 .8%	4 .8%
Total	260 100%	254 100%	514 100%
8. Women who get raped while hitchhiking get what they deserve.			
Agree	29 11.2%	53 20.9%	82 16.0%
Disagree	229 88.1%	200 78.7%	429 83.5%
Don't Know	2 .8%	1 .4%	3 .6%
Total	260 100%	254 100%	514 100%

See Table 6.39 for the In-Class Sample &
 Table J.3 for the Out-of-Class Sample.

Table J.4 (Part 2 of 2)
 Crosstabulation of Burt's Rape Myth Acceptance Scale
 Items by Sex (In-Class & Out-of-Class Samples Combined)

Total	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
9. A woman who is stuck-up and thinks she is too good to talk to guys on the street deserves to be taught a lesson.						
Agree	25	9.6%	8	3.1%	33	6.4%
Disagree	234	90.0%	243	95.7%	477	92.8%
Don't Know	1	.4%	3	1.2%	4	.8%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
10. Many women have an unconscious wish to be raped.						
Agree	22	8.5%	17	6.7%	39	7.6%
Disagree	181	69.6%	212	83.5%	393	76.5%
Don't Know	57	21.9%	25	9.8%	82	16.0%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
11. If a woman gets drunk at a party and has sexual intercourse with a man she's just met there, she (is)...fair game...						
Agree	12	4.6%	8	3.1%	20	3.9%
Disagree	247	95.0%	244	96.1%	491	95.5%
Don't Know	1	.4%	2	.8%	3	.6%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
12. What % of women who report a rape would you say are lying because they are angry and want to get back at the man...?						
About 75% or More	2	.8%	5	2.0%	7	1.4%
About 50%	24	9.2%	14	5.5%	38	7.4%
About 25% or Less	233	89.6%	233	91.7%	466	90.7%
No Response	1	.4%	2	.8%	3	.6%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
13. What % of reported rapes would you guess were merely invented by women who discovered they were pregnant...?						
About 75% or More	2	.8%	2	.8%	4	.8%
About 50%	18	6.9%	10	3.9%	28	5.4%
About 25% or Less	239	91.9%	240	94.5%	479	93.2%
No Response	1	.4%	2	.8%	3	.6%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%

See Table 6.39 for the In-Class Sample &
 Table J.3 for the Out-of-Class Sample.

Table J.5 (Part 1 of 2)
 Crosstabulation of Burt's Sex Role Stereotyping
 Scale Items by Sex (Out-of-Class Sample)

Condition Completed
 Under
 Out-of-Class

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
1. A man should fight when the woman he's with is insulted by another man.						
Agree	17	42.5%	15	21.4%	32	29.1%
Disagree	22	55.0%	55	78.6%	77	70.0%
Don't Know	1	2.5%	0	0%	1	.9%
Total	40	100%	70	100%	110	100%
2. When a man and woman are on a date, it is acceptable for the woman to pay for the date.						
Agree	34	85.0%	68	97.1%	102	92.7%
Disagree	6	15.0%	2	2.9%	8	7.3%
Don't Know	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
Total	40	100%	70	100%	110	100%
3. A woman should be a virgin when she marries.						
Agree	14	35.0%	14	20.0%	28	25.5%
Disagree	23	57.5%	51	72.9%	74	67.3%
Don't Know	2	5.0%	5	7.1%	7	6.4%
No Response	1	2.5%	0	0%	1	.9%
Total	40	100%	70	100%	110	100%
4. There is something wrong with a woman who doesn't want to raise a family.						
Agree	14	35.0%	5	7.1%	19	17.3%
Disagree	26	65.0%	65	92.9%	91	82.7%
Don't Know	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
Total	40	100%	70	100%	110	100%
5. A wife should never contradict her husband in public.						
Agree	14	35.0%	7	10.0%	21	19.1%
Disagree	25	62.5%	63	90.0%	88	80.0%
Don't Know	1	2.5%	0	0%	1	.9%
No Response	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
Total	40	100%	70	100%	110	100%
6. It is better for a woman to use her feminine charm to get what she wants rather than ask for it outright.						
Agree	5	12.5%	2	2.9%	7	6.4%
Disagree	33	82.5%	68	97.1%	101	91.8%
Don't Know	2	5.0%	0	0%	2	1.8%
Total	40	100%	70	100%	110	100%
7. A man should be a virgin when he marries.						
Agree	11	27.5%	11	15.7%	22	20.0%
Disagree	26	65.0%	54	77.1%	80	72.7%
Don't Know	2	5.0%	4	5.7%	6	5.5%
No Response	1	2.5%	1	1.4%	2	1.8%
Total	40	100%	70	100%	110	100%

See Table 6.40 for the In-Class Sample &
 Table J.6 for the Combined Sample.

Table J 5 (Part 2 of 2)
 Crosstabulation of Burt's Sex Role Stereotyping
 Scale Items by Sex (Out-of-Class Sample)

Condition Completed
 Under
 Out-of-Class

	Sex. of Respondent		Total
	Male	Female	
8 It looks worse for a woman to be drunk in public than for a man to be drunk in public			
Agree	19 47.5%	21 30.0%	40 36.4%
Disagree	21 52.5%	47 67.1%	68 61.8%
Don't Know	0 0%	2 2.9%	2 1.8%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110 100%
9 There is nothing wrong with a woman sitting alone in a bar.			
Agree	27 67.5%	54 77.1%	81 73.6%
Disagree	10 25.0%	13 18.6%	23 20.9%
Don't Know	3 7.5%	3 4.3%	6 5.5%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110 100%

See Table 6 40 for the In-Class Sample &
 Table 6 6 for the Combined Sample.

Table J.6 (Part 1 of 2)
 Crosstabulation of Burt's Sex Role Stereotyping Scale
 Items by Sex (In-Class & Out-of-Class Samples Combined)

Total

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
1. A man should fight when the woman he's with is insulted by another man.						
Agree	158	60.8%	83	32.7%	241	46.9%
Disagree	98	37.7%	171	67.3%	269	52.3%
Don't Know	4	1.5%	0	.0%	4	.8%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
2. When a man and woman are on a date, it is acceptable for the woman to pay for the date.						
Agree	212	81.5%	233	91.7%	445	86.6%
Disagree	47	18.1%	20	7.9%	67	13.0%
Don't Know	1	.4%	1	.4%	2	.4%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
3. A woman should be a virgin when she marries.						
Agree	78	30.4%	53	20.9%	132	25.7%
Disagree	157	60.4%	186	73.2%	343	66.7%
Don't Know	21	8.1%	15	5.9%	36	7.0%
No Response	3	1.2%	0	.0%	3	.6%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
4. There is something wrong with a woman who doesn't want to raise a family.						
Agree	70	26.9%	19	7.5%	89	17.3%
Disagree	184	70.8%	234	92.1%	418	81.3%
Don't Know	6	2.3%	1	.4%	7	1.4%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
5. A wife should never contradict her husband in public.						
Agree	79	30.4%	41	16.1%	120	23.3%
Disagree	176	67.7%	211	83.1%	387	75.3%
Don't Know	5	1.9%	1	.4%	6	1.2%
No Response	0	.0%	1	.4%	1	.2%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
6. It is better for a woman to use her feminine charm to get what she wants rather than ask for it outright.						
Agree	35	13.5%	30	11.8%	65	12.6%
Disagree	218	83.8%	223	87.8%	441	85.8%
Don't Know	7	2.7%	1	.4%	8	1.6%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
7. A man should be a virgin when he marries.						
Agree	51	19.6%	37	14.6%	88	17.1%
Disagree	189	72.7%	202	79.5%	391	76.1%
Don't Know	17	6.5%	14	5.5%	31	6.0%
No Response	3	1.2%	1	.4%	4	.8%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%

See Table 6.40 for the In-Class Sample &
 Table J.5 for the Out-of-Class Sample.

Table J.6 (Part 2 of 2)
 Crosstabulation of Burt's Sex Role Stereotyping Scale
 Items by Sex (In-Class & Out-of-Class Samples Combined)

Total

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
8. It looks worse for a woman to be drunk in public than for a man to be drunk in public.						
Agree	149	57.3%	107	42.1%	256	49.8%
Disagree	107	41.2%	143	56.3%	250	48.6%
Don't Know	4	1.5%	4	1.6%	8	1.6%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
9. There is nothing wrong with a woman sitting alone in a bar.						
Agree	200	76.9%	183	72.0%	383	74.5%
Disagree	56	21.5%	66	26.0%	122	23.7%
Don't Know	4	1.5%	5	2.0%	9	1.8%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%

See Table 6.40 for the In-Class Sample &
 Table J.5 for the Out-of-Class Sample.

Table J.7 (Part 1 of 2)
 Crosstabulation of Burt's Adversarial Sexual Belief
 Scale Items by Sex (Out-of-Class Sample)

Condition Completed
 Under
 Out-of-Class

	Sex of Respondent		Total
	Male	Female	
1. A woman will only respect the man she is dating if he will lay down the law to her.			
Agree	5 12.5%	2 2.9%	7 6.4%
Disagree	34 85.0%	67 95.7%	101 91.8%
Don't Know	1 2.5%	1 1.4%	2 1.8%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110 100%
2. Many women are so demanding sexually that a man just can't satisfy them.			
Agree	3 7.5%	5 7.1%	8 7.3%
Disagree	30 75.0%	53 75.7%	83 75.5%
Don't Know	7 17.5%	11 15.7%	18 16.4%
No Response	0 .0%	1 1.4%	1 .9%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110 100%
3. A man must show the woman that he is the boss right from the start or he'll end up henpecked.			
Agree	10 25.0%	3 4.3%	13 11.8%
Disagree	30 75.0%	66 94.3%	96 87.3%
Don't Know	0 .0%	1 1.4%	1 .9%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110 100%
4. Women are usually sweet until they've caught a man, but then they let their true self show.			
Agree	12 30.0%	15 21.4%	27 24.5%
Disagree	27 67.5%	54 77.1%	81 73.6%
Don't Know	1 2.5%	1 1.4%	2 1.8%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110 100%
5. A lot of men talk big, but when it comes down to it, they can't perform well sexually.			
Agree	25 62.5%	30 42.9%	55 50.0%
Disagree	4 10.0%	25 35.7%	29 26.4%
Don't Know	10 25.0%	15 21.4%	25 22.7%
No Response	1 2.5%	0 .0%	1 .9%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110 100%
6. In a dating relationship a woman is primarily out to take advantage of a man.			
Agree	5 12.5%	1 1.4%	6 5.5%
Disagree	33 82.5%	69 98.6%	102 92.7%
Don't Know	2 5.0%	0 .0%	2 1.8%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110 100%
7. Men are out for only one thing—sex.			
Agree	14 35.0%	16 22.9%	30 27.3%
Disagree	25 62.5%	52 74.3%	77 70.0%
Don't Know	1 2.5%	2 2.9%	3 2.7%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110 100%

See Table 6.41 for the In-Class Sample &
 Table J.8 for the Combined Sample.

Table J.7 (Part 2 of 2)
 Crosstabulation of Burt's Adversarial Sexual Belief
 Scale Items by Sex (Out-of-Class Sample)

Condition Completed
 Under
 Out-of-Class

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
8. Most women are sly and manipulating when they are out to attract a man.						
Agree	18	45.0%	21	30.0%	39	35.5%
Disagree	21	52.5%	49	70.0%	70	63.6%
Don't Know	0	.0%	0	.0%	0	.0%
No Response	1	2.5%	0	.0%	1	.9%
Total	40	100%	70	100%	110	100%
9. A lot of women seem to get pleasure in putting men down.						
Agree	7	17.5%	17	24.3%	24	21.8%
Disagree	27	67.5%	49	70.0%	76	69.1%
Don't Know	5	12.5%	4	5.7%	9	8.2%
No Response	1	2.5%	0	.0%	1	.9%
Total	40	100%	70	100%	110	100%

See Table 6.41 for the In-Class Sample &
 Table J.8 for the Combined Sample.

Table J.8 (Part 1 of 2)
 Crosstabulation of Burt's Adversarial Sexual Belief Scale
 Items by Sex (In-Class & Out-of-Class Samples Combined)

Total

	Sex of Respondent		Total	
	Male	Female		
1. A woman will only respect the man she is dating if he will lay down the law to her.				
Agree	28 10.8%	13 5.1%	41	8.0%
Disagree	221 85.0%	234 92.1%	455	88.5%
Don't Know	11 4.2%	7 2.8%	18	3.5%
Total	260 100%	254 100%	514	100%
2. Many women are so demanding sexually that a man just can't satisfy them.				
Agree	39 15.0%	20 7.9%	59	11.5%
Disagree	189 72.7%	178 70.1%	367	71.4%
Don't Know	32 12.3%	54 21.3%	86	16.7%
No Response	0 .0%	2 .8%	2	.4%
Total	260 100%	254 100%	514	100%
3. A man must show the woman that he is the boss right from the start or he'll end up henpecked.				
Agree	63 24.2%	17 6.7%	80	15.6%
Disagree	193 74.2%	234 92.1%	427	83.1%
Don't Know	4 1.5%	3 1.2%	7	1.4%
Total	260 100%	254 100%	514	100%
4. Women are usually sweet until they've caught a man, but then they let their true self show.				
Agree	94 36.2%	47 18.5%	141	27.4%
Disagree	156 60.0%	203 79.9%	359	69.8%
Don't Know	10 3.8%	4 1.6%	14	2.7%
Total	260 100%	254 100%	514	100%
5. A lot of men talk big, but when it comes down to it, they can't perform well sexually.				
Agree	143 55.0%	108 42.5%	251	48.8%
Disagree	57 21.9%	86 33.9%	143	27.8%
Don't Know	58 22.3%	59 23.2%	117	22.8%
No Response	2 .8%	1 .4%	3	.6%
Total	260 100%	254 100%	514	100%
6. In a dating relationship a woman is primarily out to take advantage of a man.				
Agree	24 9.2%	7 2.8%	31	6.0%
Disagree	223 85.8%	245 96.5%	468	91.1%
Don't Know	13 5.0%	2 .8%	15	2.9%
Total	260 100%	254 100%	514	100%
7. Men are out for only one thing - sex.				
Agree	85 32.7%	75 29.5%	160	31.1%
Disagree	170 65.4%	173 68.1%	343	66.7%
Don't Know	5 1.9%	6 2.4%	11	2.1%
Total	260 100%	254 100%	514	100%

See Table 6.41 for the In-Class Sample &
 Table J.7 for the Out-of-Class Sample.

Table J.8 (Part 2 of 2)
 Crosstabulation of Burt's Adversarial Sexual Belief Scale
 Items by Sex (In-Class & Out-of-Class Samples Combined)

Total

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
8. Most women are sly and manipulating when they are out to attract a man.						
Agree	118	45.4%	88	34.6%	206	40.1%
Disagree	127	48.8%	166	65.4%	293	57.0%
Don't Know	14	5.4%	0	.0%	14	2.7%
No Response	1	.4%	0	.0%	1	.2%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
9. A lot of women seem to get pleasure in putting men down.						
Agree	72	27.7%	71	28.0%	143	27.8%
Disagree	168	64.6%	163	64.2%	331	64.4%
Don't Know	19	7.3%	20	7.9%	39	7.6%
No Response	1	.4%	0	.0%	1	.2%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%

See Table 6.41 for the In-Class Sample &
 Table J.7 for the Out-of-Class Sample.

Table J.9
 Crossstabulation of Burt's Acceptance of Interpersonal Violence
 Scale Items by Sex (Out-of-Class Sample)

Condition Completed
 Under
 Out-of-Class

	Sex of Respondent		Total	
	Male	Female		
1. People today should not use "an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth" as a rule for living.				
Agree	29 72.5%	55 78.6%	84	76.4%
Disagree	6 15.0%	9 12.9%	15	13.6%
Don't Know	3 7.5%	5 7.1%	8	7.3%
No Response	2 5.0%	1 1.4%	3	2.7%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110	100%
2. Being roughed up is sexually stimulating to many women.				
Agree	3 7.5%	6 8.6%	9	8.2%
Disagree	27 67.5%	55 78.6%	82	74.5%
Don't Know	9 22.5%	8 11.4%	17	15.5%
No Response	1 2.5%	1 1.4%	2	1.8%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110	100%
3. Many times a woman will pretend she doesn't want to have sex...but she's really hoping the man will force her.				
Agree	10 25.0%	7 10.0%	17	15.5%
Disagree	22 55.0%	55 78.6%	77	70.0%
Don't Know	7 17.5%	8 11.4%	15	13.6%
No Response	1 2.5%	0 .0%	1	.9%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110	100%
4. A wife should move out of the house if her husband hits her.				
Agree	25 62.5%	53 75.7%	78	70.9%
Disagree	14 35.0%	12 17.1%	26	23.6%
Don't Know	0 .0%	5 7.1%	5	4.5%
No Response	1 2.5%	0 .0%	1	.9%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110	100%
5. Sometimes the only way a man can get a frigid woman turned on is to use force.				
Agree	2 5.0%	1 1.4%	3	2.7%
Disagree	30 75.0%	62 88.6%	92	83.6%
Don't Know	7 17.5%	7 10.0%	14	12.7%
No Response	1 2.5%	0 .0%	1	.9%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110	100%
6. A man is never justified in hitting his wife.				
Agree	28 70.0%	59 84.3%	87	79.1%
Disagree	11 27.5%	10 14.3%	21	19.1%
Don't Know	0 .0%	1 1.4%	1	.9%
No Response	1 2.5%	0 .0%	1	.9%
Total	40 100%	70 100%	110	100%

See Table 6.42 for the In-Class Sample &
 Table J.10 for the Combined Sample.

Table J.10
 Crosstabulation of Burt's Acceptance of Interpersonal Violence
 Scale Items by Sex (In-Class & Out-of-Class Samples Combined)

Total

	Sex of Respondent				Total	
	Male		Female			
1. People today should not use "an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth" as a rule for living.						
Agree	173	66.5%	180	70.9%	353	68.7%
Disagree	72	27.7%	60	23.6%	132	25.7%
Don't Know	13	5.0%	13	5.1%	26	5.1%
No Response	2	.8%	1	.4%	3	.6%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
2. Being roughed up is sexually stimulating to many women.						
Agree	35	13.5%	28	11.0%	63	12.3%
Disagree	188	72.3%	196	77.2%	384	74.7%
Don't Know	36	13.8%	29	11.4%	65	12.6%
No Response	1	.4%	1	.4%	2	.4%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
3. Many times a woman will pretend she doesn't want to have sex...but she's really hoping the man will force her.						
Agree	65	25.0%	35	13.8%	100	19.5%
Disagree	163	62.7%	198	78.0%	361	70.2%
Don't Know	31	11.9%	21	8.3%	52	10.1%
No Response	1	.4%	0	.0%	1	.2%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
4. A wife should move out of the house if her husband hits her.						
Agree	165	63.5%	196	77.2%	361	70.2%
Disagree	79	30.4%	49	19.3%	128	24.9%
Don't Know	15	5.8%	9	3.5%	24	4.7%
No Response	1	.4%	0	.0%	1	.2%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
5. Sometimes the only way a man can get a frigid woman turned on is to use force.						
Agree	17	6.5%	7	2.8%	24	4.7%
Disagree	214	82.3%	221	87.0%	435	84.6%
Don't Know	28	10.8%	26	10.2%	54	10.5%
No Response	1	.4%	0	.0%	1	.2%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%
6. A man is never justified in hitting his wife.						
Agree	207	79.6%	227	89.4%	434	84.4%
Disagree	51	19.6%	25	9.8%	76	14.8%
Don't Know	1	.4%	2	.8%	3	.6%
No Response	1	.4%	0	.0%	1	.2%
Total	260	100%	254	100%	514	100%

See Table 6.42 for the In-Class Sample &
 Table J.9 for the Out-of-Class Sample.

REFERENCES

- "A Look at Date Rape." *Northwest Afternoon*: February 12, 1986 (Television Broadcast).
- "A Look at Date Rape." *Sally Jessy Raphael*: January 17, 1989 (Television Broadcast).
- "A Look at Date Rape." *Town Meeting*: January 3, 1988 (Television Broadcast).
- Abbey, Antonia. "Sex Differences in Attributions for Friendly Behaviour: Do Males Misperceive Females' Friendliness?" *Journal of Personality and Social Psychology* 42 (May 1982): 830-838.
- Adams, Caren, and Fay, Jennifer. *Nobody Told Me It Was Rape: A Parent's Guide for Talking with Teenagers about Acquaintance Rape and Sexual Exploitation*. Santa Cruz: Network Publications, 1984.
- Adler, Christine. "An Exploration of Self-Reported Sexually Aggressive Behavior." *Crime and Delinquency* 31 (April 1985): 306-331.
- Afterschool Special: Date Rape*: September 15, 1988 (Television Broadcast).
- Ageton, Suzanne S. *Sexual Assault Among Adolescents*. Toronto: D.C. Heath and Co., 1983.
- Aizenman, Marta and Kelley, Georgette. "The Incidence of Violence and Acquaintance Rape in Dating Relationships Among College Men and Women." *Journal of College Student Development* (July 1988): 305-311.
- Amir, Menachem. *Patterns in Forcible Rape*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1971.
- Angel, Sherry. "Rape- Its Silent Victims." *Family Circle* (January 25, 1983): 62, 119-120.
- Backhouse, Constance B. "Nineteenth-Century Canadian Rape Law 1800-92." In *Essays in the History of Canadian Law*, Vol. 2, pp.200-247. Edited by David H. Flaherty. Toronto: Osgoode Society, 1983.
- Barnes, J.A. *Who Should Know What?: Social Science, Privacy, and Ethics*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1979.
- Barrett, Karen. "Date Rape: A Campus Epidemic?" *Ms.* 11 (September 1982): 48-51, 130.
- Bart, Pauline B. "A Study of Women Who Both Were Raped and Avoided Rape." *Journal of Social Issues* 37 (Fall 1981): 123-137.
- Bart, Pauline B. "Rape Doesn't End With a Kiss." *Viva* 2 (1975): 39-42, 100-101.

- Bart, Pauline B., and O'Brien, Patricia H. "Stopping Rape: Effective Avoidance Strategies." *Signs: Journal of Women in Culture and Society* 10 (Autumn 1984): 83-101.
- Bart, Pauline B., and O'Brien, Patricia H. *Stopping Rape: Successful Survival Strategies*. Toronto: Pergamon Press, 1985.
- Bashar, Nazife. "Rape in England between 1550 and 1700." In *The Sexual Dynamics of History: Men's Power, Women's Resistance*, pp. 28-42. Edited by London Feminist History Group. Great Britain: Photobooks Ltd., 1983.
- Bateman, Py. *Acquaintance Rape*. Seattle: Alternatives to Fear, September 1986 (Article).
- Bateman, Py. *Acquaintance Rape: Awareness and Prevention for Teenagers*. Seattle: Alternatives to Fear, 1982.
- Bateman, Py. "Film Review on 'Rethinking Rape: A Film on Acquaintance Rape and its Causes'." *Sexual Coercion and Assault* 1 (): 103-104.
- Bateman, Py, and Mahoney, Bill. *Macho: Is That What I Really Want?* New York: Youth Education Systems, 1986.
- Bateman, Py; Fischer, Shirley; Kane, Micheal; Martin, Jan Loreen; Martin, Sonja; McCutcheon, Connie Rae; Meyer, Julie; Miller, Julie; Saylor, Maureen; Silvestrin, Tony; and Thomas, Sheri. *Treatment, Prosecution, and Prevention of Acquaintance and Date Rape Among Teenagers: Conference Recommendations, September 1987*. Seattle: Alternatives to Fear, Sept. 1987.
- Bateman, Py, and Stringer, Gayle. *Where Do I Start?: A Parents' Guide for Talking to Teens About Acquaintance Rape*. Iowa: Kendall/Hunt Publishing Co., 1984.
- Bateman, Py. "Working with Boys in the Schools." *Drawing the Line: Romance, Rape, and Relationships- A Conference on Teen Sexual Exploitation*, Seattle, Washington. Workshop 4-2, 29 May 1987. Recorded by Audio Productions of Seattle.
- Battered Women's Support Services. *Dating Violence: Battering Within Young Peoples (sic) Relationships* (pamphlet). Vancouver: Press Gang, undated.
- Battered Women's Support Services. *Forced Sex in Marriage* (pamphlet). Vancouver, undated.
- Baxter, Leslie A. "Gender Differences in the Heterosexual Relationship Rules Embedded in Break-Up Accounts." *Journal of Social and Personal Relationships* 3 (September 1986): 289-306.

- Beattie, J. M. *Crime and the Courts in England: 1660-1800*. New Jersey: Princeton University Press, 1986.
- Becker, Howard S. *Writing for Social Scientists; How to Start and Finish Your Thesis, Book, or Article*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1986.
- Beeghley, Leonard, and Sellers, Christine. "Adolescents and Sex: A Structural Theory of Premarital Sex in the United States." *Deviant Behavior* 7 (1986): 313-336.
- Behrens, David. "Date Rape." *Glamour* (April 1981): 248-249, 315, 317-318.
- Beirne, Anne. "Marital Rape." *Châtelaine*, November 1982, pp. 61, 176, 178, 180, 182.
- Belcastro, Philip A. "A Comparison of Latent Sexual Behavior Patterns Between Raped and Never Raped Females." *Victimology: An International Journal* 7 (1982): 224-230.
- Bell, Alexa. "Date Rape: The Untold Story." *Teen* 30 (March 1986): 10, 80.
- Benderly, Beryl L. "Rape Free or Rape Prone." *Science*, October 1982, pp. 40-43.
- Beneke, Timothy. *Men on Rape*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1982.
- Benton, Gary. "Battering, Rape, and Teen Dating." Drawing the Line: Romance, Rape, and Relationships- A Conference on Teen Sexual Exploitation, Seattle, Washington. Workshop 5-3, 30 May 1987. Recorded by Audio Productions of Seattle.
- Berger, Ronald J.; Searles, Patricia; Salem, Richard G.; and Pierce, Beth Ann. "Sexual Assault in a College Community." *Sociological Focus* 19 (January 1986): 1-26.
- Bernard, M. L., and Bernard, J. L. "Violent Intimacy: The Family as a Model for Love Relationships." *Family Relations* 32 (April 1983): 283-286.
- Bernstein, Jean. "The Elementary School: Training Ground for Sex Role Stereotypes." *Personnel and Guidance Journal* 51 (October 1972): 97-101.
- Bogal-Allbritten, Rosemarie B., and Allbritten, William L. "The Hidden Victims: Courtship Violence Among College Students." *Journal of College Student Personnel* 26 (May 1985): 201-204.
- Boyle, Christine L. M. "Section 142 of the Criminal Code: A Trojan Horse?" *Criminal Law Quarterly* 23 (1980-81): 253-265.
- Boyle, Christine L. M. *Sexual Assault*. Toronto: Carswell Co., 1984.
- Boyle, Christine L. M. "Sexual Assault and the Feminist Judge." *Canadian Journal of Women and the Law* 1 (1985): 93-107.

- Bozzi, Vincent. "'Don't! Stop!' or 'Don't Stop!'" *Psychology Today*, March 1989, p. 62.
- Bradmillar, Linda L., and Walters, William S. "Seriousness of Sexual Assault Charges: Influencing Factors." *Criminal Justice and Behavior* 12 (December 1985): 463-484.
- Bray, Ruth M. *Sexual Assault in Canada*. Toronto: University of Toronto, 1980.
- Briere, John; Malamuth, Neil; and Check, James V. P. "Sexuality and Rape-Supportive Beliefs." *International Journal of Women's Studies* 8 (September/October 1985): 398-403.
- Briskin, Karen C., and Gary, Juneau M. "Sexual Assault Programming for College Students." *Journal of Counseling and Development* 65 (December 1986): 207-208.
- British Columbia Public Interest Research Group. *Against Sexual Harassment: A Handbook for Students at Post-Secondary Educational Institutions in British Columbia*. Victoria: Bayside Press, 1985.
- British Columbia Public Interest Research Group. *Guard Yourself Against Sexual Assault and Harassment* (pamphlet). Victoria, undated.
- Brophy, Julia, and Smart, Carol, eds. *Women-In-Law: Explorations in Law, Family, and Sexuality*. London: Routledge and Kegan Paul, 1985.
- Browder, Sue. "Social Rape: When Seduction Turns to Horror." *Cosmopolitan* 198 (January 1985): 150-153, 204.
- Brownmiller, Susan. *Against Our Will: Men, Women and Rape*. New York: Bantam Books, 1975.
- Brozan, Nadine. "Gang Rape: A Rising Campus Concern." *New York Times*, 17 February 1986, p.B8.
- Burger, Anne. "Report on Sexual Harassment and Sexual Assault at Simon Fraser University." Report prepared for B.C. Public Interest Research Group, Burnaby, December 1986.
- Burgess, Ann W. (ed.). *Rape and Sexual Assault: A Research Handbook*. New York: Garland Publishing, 1985.
- Burt, Martha R. "Cultural Myths and Supports for Rape." *Journal of Personality and Social Psychology* 38 (February 1980): 217-230.
- Butler, Ann. "Rape on a Date is the Hardest to Prove." *Bryan-College Station Eagle*, 15 January 1985, p.1. 3.
- Byers, E. Sandra, and Wilson, Paula. "Accuracy of Women's Expectations Regarding Men's Responses to Refusals of Sexual Advances in Dating Situations." *International Journal of Women's Studies* 8 (September/October 1985): 376-387.

Byers, E. Sandra, and Lewis, Kim. "Dating Couples' Disagreements Over the Desired Level of Sexual Intimacy." *The Journal of Sex Research* 24 (1988): 15-29.

Byers, E. Sandra; Giles, Barbara L.; and Price, Dorothy L. "Definiteness and Effectiveness of Women's Responses to Unwanted Sexual Advances: A Laboratory Investigation." *Basic and Applied Social Psychology* 8 (1987): 321-338.

Byers, E. Sandra. "Effects of Sexual Arousal on Men's and Women's Behavior in Sexual Disagreement Situations." *The Journal of Sex Research* 25 (May 1988): 235-254.

C.A.R.E. Productions Association. *Schools Can Help Prevent Child Sexual Abuse* (pamphlet). Surrey, undated.

"Cable Network to Air Film on 'Date Rape'." *National Organization for Victim Assistance (NOVA) Newsletter* 13 (February 1989): 6.

"Cagney and Lacey Episode Tackles the Issue of 'Date Rape'." *Vancouver Sun*, 5 January 1988, p.D7.

Cammaert, Lorna P. "How Widespread is Sexual Harassment on Campus?" *International Journal of Women's Studies* 8 (September/October 1985): 388-397.

Canadian Advisory Council on the Status of Women. *Sexual Assault* (Pamphlet). Ottawa: February 1985.

Canadian Human Rights Commission. *Sexual Harassment Casebook: 1978-1986*. Ottawa: Minister of Supply and Services, January 1987.

Carlson, Bonnie E. "Dating Violence: A Research Review and Comparison with Spouse Abuse." *Social Casework: The Journal of Contemporary Social Work* 68 (January 1987): 16-23.

Carter, Janet. "Incest Survivors and Vulnerability to Date Rape." Drawing the Line: Romance, Rape, and Relationships- A Conference on Teen Sexual Exploitation, Seattle, Washington. Workshop 1-1, 29 May 1987. Recorded by Audio Productions of Seattle.

Cate, Rodney M.; Henton, J.; Koval, J.; Christopher, F.; and Lloyd, S. "Premarital Abuse." *Journal of Family Issues* 3 (March 1982): 79-90.

Cate, Rodney M., and Koval, James E. "Heterosexual Relationship Development: Is it Really a Sequential Process?" *Adolescence* 18 (Fall 1983): 507-514.

Catton, Katherine. "Evidence Regarding the Prior Sexual History of an Alleged Rape Victim- Its Effect on the Perceived Guilt of the Accused." *University of Toronto Faculty of Law Review* 33 (1975): 165-180.

- Chan, Maxine; Ruiz, Michael; DuShane, Carole; and Kane, Michael. "Cultural Diversity and the Issue of Date Rape." *Drawing the Line: Romance, Rape, and Relationships- A Conference on Teen Sexual Exploitation*, Seattle, Washington. Luncheon Panel, 29 May 1987. Recorded by Audio Productions of Seattle.
- Chappell, Duncan and Singer, Susan. *Rape in New York City: A Study of Material in the Police Files and Its Meaning*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1973.
- Check, James V. P., and Malamuth, Neil M. "An Empirical Assessment of Some Feminist Hypotheses About Rape." *International Journal of Women's Studies* 8 (September/October 1985): 414-423.
- Check, James V. P., and Malamuth, Neil M. "Sex Role Stereotyping and Reactions to Depictions of Stranger Versus Acquaintance Rape." *Journal of Personality and Social Psychology* 45 (August 1983): 344-356.
- Clark, Anna K. "Rape or Seduction? A Controversy over Sexual Violence in the Nineteenth Century." In *The Sexual Dynamics of History: Men's Power, Women's Resistance*, pp. 13-27. Edited by London Feminist History Group. Great Britain: Photobooks Ltd., 1983.
- Clark, Lorenne M. G., and Lewis, Debra J. *Rape: The Price of Coercive Sexuality*. Toronto: The Women's Press, 1977.
- Coe, Christine; DeWolfe, Deborah; Kelch, Michael; Larson, Rae; McIntyre, Marilyn, and Seaman, Pamela. *Recovering from Rape: Healing Your Sexuality*. Washington: Seattle Institute for Sex Therapy, undated (Pamphlet).
- "College Women Cite Rape Tries." *Vancouver Sun*, 23 April 1987. p.B6.
- Collins, John K. "Adolescent Dating Intimacy: Norms and Peer Expectations." *Journal of Youth and Adolescence* 3 (December 1974): 317-328.
- Collins, Gloria. "Teens Need More Than No to Avoid Sexual Assault." *Times-Colonist*, 5 January 1985. p. C2.
- Connell, Noreen, and Wilson, Cassandra, eds. *Rape: The First Sourcebook for Women*. New York: New American Library, 1974.
- Costin, Frank. "Beliefs about Rape and Women's Social Roles." *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 14 (August 1985): 319-325.
- Creange, Renee. *The Problem of Rape on Campus*. Washington: Project on the Status and Education of Women, Association of American Colleges, 1978.
- "Danger Signs of Date Rape." *Glamour* (February 1988): 273-274.
- "Date Can Turn to Rape." *Vancouver Province*, 21 May 1985. p.41.

- "Date Rape." *Cagney and Lacey*: January 5, 1988 (Television Broadcast).
- Davidson, Lynne R. "Pressures and Pretense: Living with Gender Stereotypes." *Sex Roles* 7 (March 1981): 331-347.
- Deal, James E., and Wampler, Karen S. "Dating Violence: The Primacy of Previous Experience." *Journal of Social and Personal Relationships* 3 (December 1986): 457-471.
- Deaux, Kay. *The Behavior of Women and Men*. Belmont: Wadsworth Publishing Company, 1976.
- DeKeseredy, Walter S. "Woman Abuse in Dating Relationships: A Critical Evaluation of Research and Theory." *International Journal of Sociology of the Family* 18 (Spring 1988): 79-95.
- DeKeseredy, Walter S. "Woman Abuse in Dating Relationships: The Relevance of Social Support Theory." *Journal of Family Violence* 3 (1988): 1-13.
- Department of Justice Canada. *...After Sexual Assault...Your Guide to the Criminal Justice System*. Ottawa: Minister of Supply and Services Canada, 1986.
- Dickinson, George E. "Dating Behavior of Black and White Adolescents Before and After Desegregation." *Journal of Marriage and the Family* 37 (August 1975): 602-608.
- Dineen, Janice. "Rape Victim Relives Date with Terror." *Toronto Star*, 5 November 1977, p.A1.
- Doane, Debby, and Schub, Nancy. "The Needs of the Acquaintance Rape Victim." *Drawing the Line: Romance, Rape, and Relationships- A Conference on Teen Sexual Exploitation*, Seattle, Washington. Workshop 3-6, 29 May 1987. Recorded by Audio Productions of Seattle.
- Dranoff, Linda S. *Women in Canadian Law*. Women in Canadian Life Series. Toronto: Fitzhenry and Whiteside, 1977.
- Dull, R. Thomas, and Giacomassi, David J. "Demographic Correlates of Sexual and Dating Activities: A Study of Date Rape." *Criminal Justice and Behavior* 14 (June 1987): 175-193.
- Dutton, Donald G. "An Ecologically Nested Theory of Male Violence Toward Intimates." *International Journal of Women's Studies* 8 (September/October 1985): 404-413.
- Ehrhart, Julie K. and Sandler, Bernice R. *Campus Gang Rape: Party Games?* Washington: Project on the Status and Education of Women, Association of American Colleges, 1985.
- Eichler, Margrit. *Sexism in Research and its Policy Implications*. Canadian Research Institute for the Advancement of Women, no. 6. Ottawa: Bradda Printing Services, 1983.

- Ellis, Megan. "The Sexual Assault Provisions of the Criminal Code." In *Legal Services Society Schools Program Newsletter* 8 (March 1984): 3-6.
- Emihovich, Catherine A., and Gaier, Eugene L. "Women's Liberation and Pre-Adolescent Sex Role Stereotypes." *Adolescence* 18 (Fall 1983): 637-647.
- Estrich, Susan. *Real Rape*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1987.
- Feild, Hubert S. "Attitudes Toward Rape: A Comparative Analysis of Police, Rapists, Crisis Counselors, and Citizens." *Journal of Personality and Social Psychology* 36 (Feb. 1978): 156-179.
- Feldman, Kenneth A., and Newcomb, Theodore M. *The Impact of College on Students, Volume II: Summary Tables*. San Francisco: Jossey-Bass, 1969.
- Feldman-Summers, Shirley, and Ashworth, Clark D. "Factors Related to Intentions to Report a Rape." *Journal of Social Issues* 37 (Fall 1981): 53-70.
- Finkelhor, David and Yllo, Kersti. *License to Rape: Sexual Abuse of Wives*. New York: Holt, Rinehart, and Winston, 1985.
- Fischer, Gloria J. "College Student Attitudes Toward Forcible Date Rape: I. Cognitive Predictors." *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 15 (December 1986): 457-466.
- Fitzgerald, Maureen; Guberman, Connie; and Wolfe, Margie, eds. *Still Ain't Satisfied!: Canadian Feminism Today*. Toronto: The Women's Press, 1982.
- Forman, Bruce D. "Reported Male Rape." *Victimology: An International Journal* 7 (1982): 235-236.
- Frayling, Christopher. "The House that Jack Built: Some Stereotypes of the Rapist in the History of Popular Culture." In *Rape*, pp. 174-215. Edited by Sylvana Tomaselli and Roy Porter. Great Britain: Basil Blackwell, 1986.
- Freund, Kurt; Scher, Hal; Racansky, I. G.; Campbell, Kent; and Heasman, Gerald. "Males Disposed to Commit Rape." *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 15 (1986): 23-35.
- Friedman, Margie. "To Wild Guys at a Party, Rape Isn't a Crime. It's a Spectator Sport: Anatomy of a Gang Bang." *Mademoiselle* (July 1985): 104-105, 164.
- Garley, Ken D. "Date Rape and Sex Role Stereotyping: A Pilot Study." Paper presented at the Symposium on Sexual Offences Involving Children and Youth. Burnaby, B.C., 10 May 1985.
- Garley, Ken D. "The Law of Rape in Canada: A Critical Analysis of its Shortcomings with Suggestions for Reform." Honours thesis. Simon Fraser University, 1982.

- Gelles, Richard J. "Family Violence." *Annual Review of Sociology*. 11 (1985): 347-367.
- George, William H.; Gournic, Susan J.; and McAfee, Mary P. "Perceptions of Postdrinking Female Sexuality: Effects of Gender, Beverage Choice, and Drink Payment." *Journal of Applied Social Psychology* 18 (December 1988): 1295-1317.
- Gerdes, Eugenia P.; Dammann, Eric J.; and Heilig, Kenneth E. "Perceptions of Rape Victims and Assailants: Effects of Physical Attractiveness, Acquaintance, and Subject Gender." *Sex Roles*. 19 (August 1988): 141-153.
- Giacopassi, David J., and Dull, R. Thomas. "Gender and Racial Differences in the Acceptance of Rape Myths Within a College Population." *Sex Roles* 15 (July 1986): 63-75.
- Gilbert, Barbara, and Cunningham, Jean. "Women's Postrape Sexual Functioning: Review and Implications for Counseling." *Journal of Counseling and Development* 65 (October 1986): 71-73.
- Gill, Caroline. "Beyond 'Beyond a Reasonable Doubt': Corroboration in Rape Cases." *U.B.C. Law School Papers on Legal History* 5 (1983): 7-1 to 7-20.
- Gilmartin-Zena, Pat. "Gender Differences in Students' Attitudes Toward Rape." *Sociological Focus* 21 (October 1988): 279-292.
- Gilmartin-Zena, Pat. "Rape Impact: Immediately and Two Months Later." *Deviant Behavior* 6 (1985): 347-361.
- "Going Home with Man Invites Rape, Judge Says." *Montreal Gazette*, 16 March 1983, p.A2.
- Goldsberry, Nancy. ~~Rape~~ *Rape in British Columbia*. A Report to the Ministry of Attorney-General. Victoria: Publisher not given, 1979.
- Goldstein, Carol S. *The Dilemma of the Rape Victim: A Descriptive Analysis*. Vol. 7. No. 2. Texas: Sam Houston State University, 1976.
- Goyer, Peter F., and Eddleman, Henry C. "Same-Sex Rape of Nonincarcerated Men." *American Journal of Psychiatry* 141 (April 1984): 576-579.
- Greer, Germaine. "Seduction is a Four-Letter Word." In *Rape Victimology*, pp. 374-395. Edited by LeRoy G. Schultz. Springfield: Charles C. Thomas, 1975.
- Gregg, Gary; Preston, Thomas; Geist, Alison; and Caplan, Nathan. "The Caravan Rolls On: Forty Years of Social Problem Research." *Knowledge: Creation, Diffusion, Utilization* 1 (September 1979): 31-61.
- Griffin, Susan. *Rape: The Power of Consciousness*. San Francisco: Harper and Row, 1979.

- Grossman, Rochel, and Sutherland, Joan, eds. *Surviving Sexual Assault*. New York: Congdon and Weed, 1983.
- Groth, A. Nicholas. *Men Who Rape: The Psychology of the Offender*. New York: Plenum Press, 1979.
- Gruber, James E., and Bjorn, Lars. "Women's Responses to Sexual Harassment: An Analysis of Sociocultural, Organizational, and Personal Resource Models." *Social Science Quarterly* 67 (December 1986): 814-826.
- Guberman, Connie, and Wolfe, Margie, eds. *No Safe Place: Violence Against Women and Children*. Toronto: The Women's Press, 1985.
- Gundlach, Ralph H. "Sexual Molestation and Rape Reported by Homosexual and Heterosexual Women." *Journal of Homosexuality* 2 (Summer 1977): 367-384.
- Hale, Matthew. *Historia Placitorum Coronae: The History of the Pleas of the Crown*. 2 vols. London 1736, reprinted London 1971.
- Hall, Eleanor R., Howard, Judith A., and Boezio, Sherrie L. "Tolerance of Rape: A Sexist or Antisocial Attitude?" *Psychology of Women Quarterly* 10 (June 1986): 101-118.
- Hall, Ruth E. "Better the Rapist You Know?: The Myth of the Dark Stranger." In *Ask Any Woman: A London Inquiry into Rape and Sexual Assault*. Bristol: Falling Wall Press Ltd., 1985.
- Hamilton, Janice. "Woman Often Knows Her Sexual Attacker, Study Shows." *Winnipeg Free Press*, 29 June 1979, p.14.
- Hanneke, Christine R., and Shields, Nancy A. "Marital Rape: Implications for the Helping Professions." *Social Casework: The Journal of Contemporary Social Work* 66 (October 1985): 451-458.
- Hans, Valerie P., and Brooks, Neil. "Effects of Corroboration Instructions in a Rape Case on Experimental Juries." *Osgoode Hall Law Journal* 15 (1977): 701-716.
- Hay, Alex; Soothill, K.; and Walby, S. "Seducing the Public by Rape Reports." *New Society*, 31 July 1980, pp.214-215.
- Heath, Linda, and Davidson, Lynn. "Dealing with the Threat of Rape: Reactance or Learned Helplessness?" *Journal of Applied Social Psychology* 18 (December 1988): 1334-1351.
- Henton, June; Cate, R.; Koval, J.; Lloyd, S.; and Christopher, S. "Romance and Violence in Dating Relationships." *Journal of Family Issues* 4 (September 1983): 467-482.
- Hepburn, John R. "Violent Behavior in Interpersonal Relationships." *Sociological Quarterly* 14 (Summer 1973): 419-429.

- Herold, Edward S.; Mantle, D.; and Zemitis, O. "A Study of Sexual Offenses Against Females." *Adolescence* 14 (Spring 1979): 65-72.
- Hluchy, Patricia. "Rapist Could Well Be the Guy Next Door, Researchers Agree." *Toronto Star*, 24 July 1982, p.B7.
- Holmes, Karen A., and Williams, Joyce E. "Problems and Pitfalls of Rape Victim Research: An Analysis of Selected Methodological, Ethical and Pragmatic Concerns." *Victimology: An International Journal* 4 (1979): 17-28.
- Holmstrom, Lynda L., and Burgess, Ann W. *The Victim of Rape: Institutional Reactions*. Toronto: John Wiley and Sons, 1978.
- Howells, Kevin; Shaw, F.; Greasley, M.; Robertson, J.; Gloster, D.; and Metcalfe, N. "Perceptions of Rape in a British Sample: Effects of Relationship, Victim Status, Sex, and Attitudes to Women." *British Journal of Social Psychology* 23 (February 1984): 35-40.
- Hughes, Jean O. and Sandler, Bernice R. *"Friends" Raping Friends: Could It Happen to You?* Washington: Project on the Status and Education of Women, Association of American Colleges, 1987.
- Information on Date Rape*. Berkeley: Women's History Research Center, undated (Information Sheet). Interview with Robin Warshaw, Author of "I Never Called It Rape". KIRO News, August 30, 1988 (Television Broadcast).
- Johns, Esther. "Party Hearty? Substance Abuse and Date Rape." Drawing the Line: Romance, Rape, and Relationships- A Conference on Teen Sexual Exploitation, Seattle, Washington. Workshop 4-3, 29 May 1987. Recorded by Audio Productions of Seattle.
- Johnson, James D., and Jackson, Lee A. "Assessing the Effects of Factors that Might Underlie the Differential Perception of Acquaintance and Stranger Rape." *Sex Roles* 19 (July 1988): 37-45.
- "Judge Angers Raped Stripper." *Vancouver Sun*, 8 February 1985, p.A17.
- "Judge Weighs Relationship in Sex Assault." *Vancouver Sun*, 16 May 1985, p.C21.
- Kanin, Eugene J. "An Examination of Sexual Aggression as a Response to Sexual Frustration." *Journal of Marriage and the Family* 29 (August 1967): 428-433.
- Kanin, Eugene J. "Date Rape: Unofficial Criminals and Victims." *Victimology: An International Journal* 9:1 (1984):95-108.
- Kanin, Eugene J. "Date Rapists: Differential Sexual Socialization and Relative Deprivation." *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 14 (June 1985): 219-231.

- Kanin, Eugene J. "Female Rape Fantasies: A Victimization Study." *Victimology: An International Journal* 7 (1982): 114-121.
- Kanin, Eugene J. "Male Aggression in Dating-Courtship Relations." *American Journal of Sociology* 63 (September 1957): 197-204.
- Kanin, Eugene J. "Rape as a Function of Relative Sexual Frustration." *Psychological Reports* 52 (February 1983): 133-134.
- Kanin, Eugene J. "Reference Groups and Sex Conduct Norm Violations." *The Sociological Quarterly* 8 (Autumn 1967): 495-504.
- Kanin, Eugene J. "Selected Dyadic Aspects of Male Sex Aggression." *Journal of Sex Research* 5 (February 1969): 12-28.
- Kanin, Eugene J., and Parcell, Stanley R. "Sexual Aggression: A Second Look at the Offended Female." *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 6 (1977): 67-76.
- Kanin, Eugene J. "Sexually Aggressive College Males." *Journal of College Student Personnel* 12 (March 1971): 107-110.
- Karmen, Andrew. *Crime Victims: An Introduction to Victimology*. California: Brooks/Cole Publishing Co., 1984.
- Katz, Sedelle, and Mazur, Mary Ann. *Understanding the Rape Victim: A Synthesis of Research Findings*. Toronto: John Wiley and Sons, 1979.
- Kaye, Elizabeth. "Was I Raped?: That Question is Being Asked More Openly Than Ever Before." *Glamour* (August 1985): 258-259, 332-335.
- Kenig, Sylvia, and Ryan, John. "Sex Differences in Levels of Tolerance and Attribution of Blame for Sexual Harassment on a University Campus." *Sex Roles* 15 (November 1986): 535-549.
- Kinnon, Dianne. *Report on Sexual Assault in Canada*. Ottawa: Canadian Advisory Council on the Status of Women, December 1981.
- Kirkpatrick, Clifford, and Kanin, Eugene. "Male Sex Aggression on a University Campus." *American Sociological Review* 22 (February 1957): 52-58.
- Knox, David, and Wilson, Kenneth. "Dating Behaviors of University Students." *Family Relations* 30 (April 1981): 255-258.
- Korman, Sheila K., and Leslie, Gerald R. "The Relationship of Feminist Ideology and Date Expense Sharing to Perceptions of Sexual Aggression in Dating." *The Journal of Sex Research* 18 (May 1982): 114-129.
- Koss, Mary P. "Outrageous Acts and Everyday Situations." Drawing the Line: Romance, Rape, and Relationships: A Conference on Teen Sexual Exploitation. Seattle, Washington. Keynote Speech, 28 May 1987. Recorded by Audio Productions of Seattle.

- Koss, Mary P.; Dinero, Thomas E.; Seibel, Cynthia A.; and Cox, Susan L. "Stranger and Acquaintance Rape: Are There Differences in the Victim's Experience?" *Psychology of Women Quarterly* 12 (1988): 1-24.
- Koss, Mary P. *The Ms. Magazine Campus Project on Sexual Assault- Unreported Rape in a National Sample of Postsecondary Students: Implications for Educators and Service Providers*. New York: Ms. Foundation for Education and Communication, 1987 (Article).
- Koss, Mary P., and Harvey, Mary R. *The Rape Victim: Clinical and Community Approaches to Treatment*. Massachusetts: The Stephen Greene Press, 1987.
- Koss, Mary P.; Gidycz, Christine A.; and Wisniewski, Nadine. "The Scope of Rape: Incidence and Prevalence of Sexual Aggression and Victimization in a National Sample of Higher Education Students." *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology* 55 (April 1987): 162-170.
- Koss, Mary P.; Leonard, Kenneth E.; Beezley, Dana A., and Oros, Cheryl J. "Nonstranger Sexual Aggression: A Discriminant Analysis of the Psychological Characteristics of Undetected Offenders." *Sex Roles* 12 (May 1985): 981-992.
- Koss, Mary P., and Oros, Cheryl J. "Sexual Experiences Survey: A Research Instrument Investigating Sexual Aggression and Victimization." *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology* 50 (June 1982): 455-457.
- Kostash, Myrna. "Are We Winning the War Against Rape?" *Chatelaine* (September 1981): 55, 112, 114-117, 120-121.
- Kostash, Myrna. "Rape!" *MacLean's*, March 1975, pp. 62, 64, 66, 68-71.
- Labarge, Margaret W. "The Cultural Tradition of Canadian Women: The Historical Background." In *Cultural Tradition and Political History of Women in Canada*, pp.i-29. Studies of the Royal Commission on the Status of Women in Canada, no. 8. Ottawa: Information Canada, 1971.
- Landers, Ann. "A Predator Tells How to Avoid Him." *Vancouver Sun*, 6 July 1987, p.D4.
- Landers, Ann. "Afraid of Sex After Being Raped on Date." *Vancouver Sun*, 6 July 1989, p.F4.
- Landers, Ann. "Date Rape: A Stunning Rebuke." *Vancouver Sun*, 4 July 1988, p.C7.
- Landers, Ann. "Date Rape that Led to Three Years of Hell." *Vancouver Sun*, 14 August 1987, p.H3.
- Landers, Ann. "Dates that Ended as Horrible Experiences." *Vancouver Sun*, 13 April 1987, p.F3.

- Landers, Ann. "Kid Who Clings to Other Family Really Starved for Affection." *Vancouver Sun*, 2 July 1987, p.C7.
- Landers, Ann. "Message to Women: Men Prefer a Straight 'No'." *Vancouver Sun*, 9 November 1987, p.D4.
- Landers, Ann. "Rape: It Should Be Reported Right Away." *Vancouver Sun*, 18 March 1985, p.B3.
- Landers, Ann. "The Night her 'Friend' Turned into a Rapist." *Vancouver Sun*, 8 October 1987, p.D7.
- Landers, Ann. "When a Platonic Relationship Suddenly Leads to Violence." *Vancouver Sun*, 15 July 1986, p.C3.
- Landers, Ann. "Women Who Are Date-Raped Could Get Away if They Made a Genuine Effort." *Vancouver Sun*, 2 July 1988, p.F2.
- Landsberg, Michele. "Date Rape the Menace Women Face." *Toronto Star*, 7 January 1980, p.D1.
- Lane, Katherine E., and Gwartney-Gibbs, Patricia A. "Violence in the Context of Dating and Sex." *Journal of Family Issues* 6 (March 1985): 45-59.
- Laner, Mary R. "Abuse and Aggression in Courting Couples." *Deviant Behavior: An Interdisciplinary Journal* 3 (1982): 229-244.
- Laner, Mary R. "Unpleasant, Aggressive, and Abusive Activities in Courtship: A Comparison of Mormon and NonMormon College Students." *Deviant Behavior* 6 (1985): 145-168.
- LeBeau, James L. "Is Interracial Rape Different?" *Sociology and Research Journal* 73 (October 1988): 43-46.
- Leo, John, and Pelton, Charles. "When the Date Turns into Rape." *Time*, 23 March 1987, p.77.
- Levine-MacCombie, Joyce, and Koss, Mary P. "Acquaintance Rape: Effective Avoidance Strategies." *Psychology of Women Quarterly* 10 (1986): 311-320.
- Lewis, Debra J. *Dating Violence: A Discussion Guide on Violence in Young People's Relationships*. Vancouver: Battered Women's Support Services, undated.
- Lott, Bernice; Reilly, M.; and Howard, D. "Sexual Assault and Harassment: A Campus Community Case Study." *Signs: Journal of Women in Culture and Society* 8 (Winter 1982): 296-319.
- MacDonald, Joanne. "Man Jailed 30 Days for Raping Sleeper." *Vancouver Sun*, 31 January 1987, p. A11.

- Mackey, Aurora. "Sexual Hazards: Protecting Yourself and Your Body." *Teen*, February 1984, pp. 7-9, 75.
- Mackie, Marlene. *Exploring Gender Relations: A Canadian Perspective*. Toronto: Butterworths, 1983.
- MacQueen, Ken. "The Education of Bonnie Robichaud." *Vancouver Sun*, 30 May 1987, p. B1, B7.
- Makepeace, James M. "Courtship Violence Among College Students." *Family Relations* 30 (January 1981): 97-102.
- Makepeace, James M. "Life Events Stress and Courtship Violence." *Family Relations* 32 (January 1983): 101-109.
- Makepeace, James M. "Social Factors and Victim-Offender Differences in Courtship Violence." *Family Relations* 36 (January 1987): 87-91.
- Malamuth, Neil M. "Rape Proclivity Among Males." *Journal of Social Issues* 37 (Fall 1981): 138-157.
- Malamuth, Neil M., and Check, James V. P. "Sexual Arousal to Rape Depictions: Individual Differences." *Journal of Abnormal Psychology* 92 (February 1983): 55-67.
- Marolla, Joseph, and Scully, Diana. "Attitudes Toward Women, Violence, and Rape: A Comparison of Convicted Rapists and other Felons." *Deviant Behavior* 7 (1986): 337-355.
- Marsh, Jeanne C.; Geist, Alison; and Caplan, Nathan. *Rape and the Limits of Law Reform*. Boston: Auburn House Publishing Co., 1982.
- Martin's Criminal Code, 1988*. Toronto: Canada Law Book, 1987.
- Matsqui Police. *Matsqui Police Service Rape Prevention Manual*. Matsqui, undated.
- Matthews, William J. "Violence in College Couples." *College Student Journal* 18 (1984): 150-158.
- Mazelan, Patti M. "Stereotypes and Perceptions of the Victims of Rape." *Victimology: An International Journal* 5 (1980): 121-132.
- Medea, Andra, and Thompson, Kathleen. *Against Rape*. New York: Farrar, Straus, and Giroux, 1974.
- Meer, Jeff. "Date Rape: Familiar Strangers." *Psychology Today*, July 1987, p.10.
- Mehren, Elizabeth. "A Case of Attempted Rape." *Newsweek* (March 14, 1983): 11.

- Metzger, Deena. "It Is Always the Woman Who Is Raped." *American Journal of Psychiatry* 133 (April 1976): 405-412.
- Mewett, Alan W. and Manning, Morris. *Criminal Law (1st and 2nd Editions)*. Toronto: Butterworths, 1978 and 1985.
- Meyer, Thomas J. "Date Rape: A Serious Campus Problem that Few Talk About." *Baltimore Chronicle of Higher Education*, 5 December 1984, pp.1,12.
- Mezey, Gillian and King, Michael. "Male Victims of Sexual Assault." *Med. Sci. Law* 27 (1987): 122-124.
- Miller, Beverly. "Date Rape: Time for a New Look at Prevention." *Journal of College Student Development* 29 (November 1988): 553-555.
- Mills, Elizabeth A. "One Hundred Years of Fear: Rape and the Medical Profession." In *Judge, Lawyer, Victim, Thief: Women, Gender Roles, and Criminal Justice*, pp.29-62. Edited by Nicole H. Rafter and Elizabeth A. Stanko. Boston: Northeastern University Press, 1982.
- Mims, Fern H., and Chang, Audrey S. "Unwanted Sexual Experiences of Young Women." *Journal of Psychosocial Nursing and Mental Health* 22 (June 1984): 7-14.
- Ministry of the Attorney General. *Criminal Injury Compensation in British Columbia* (pamphlet). Vancouver: Sudden Graphics, 1986.
- Ministry of the Attorney General. *Preventing Sexual Assault* (pamphlet). Marcom Agency Ltd., Vancouver, undated.
- Ministry of the Attorney General. *What Young Women Should Know About Abuse by Their Boyfriends* (pamphlet). Vancouver: Press Gang, undated.
- Mithers, Carol L. "Date Rape: When 'Nice Guys' Won't Take 'No' For An Answer." *Mademoiselle* 86 (November 1980): 210-211, 269.
- Morgan, Robin. "Theory and Practice: Pornography and Rape." In *Take Back the Night: Women on Pornography*, pp.125-132. Edited by Laura Lederer. Bantam Books, 1982.
- Muehlenhard, Charlene L.; Friedman, Debra E.; and Thomas, Celeste M. "Is Date Rape Justifiable?: The Effects of Dating Activity, Who Initiated, Who Paid, and Men's Attitudes Toward Women." *Psychology of Women Quarterly* 9 (September 1985): 297-310.
- Muehlenhard, Charlene L., and Hollabaugh, Lisa C. "Do Women Sometimes Say No When They Mean Yes?: The Prevalence and Correlates of Women's Token Resistance to Sex." *Journal of Personality and Social Psychology* 54 (1988): 872-879.

- Muehlenhard, Charlene L., and Linton, Melaney A. "Date Rape and Sexual Aggression in Dating Situations: Incidence and Risk Factors." *Journal of Counseling Psychology* 34 (April 1987): 186-196.
- Murnen, Sarah K.; Perot, Annette; and Byrne, Donn. "Coping with Unwanted Sexual Activity: Normative Responses, Situational Determinants, and Individual Differences." *The Journal of Sex Research* 26 (February 1989): 85-106.
- McCabe, Marita P. "Toward a Theory of Adolescent Dating." *Adolescence* 14 (Spring 1984): 159-170.
- McCabe, Marita P., and Collins, John K. "Sex Role and Dating Orientation." *Journal of Youth and Adolescence* 8 (December 1979): 407-425.
- McDaniel, Clyde O. "Dating Roles and Reasons for Dating." *Journal of Marriage and the Family* 31 (February 1969): 97-107.
- McEvoy, Alan W., and Brookings, Jeff B. "Understanding Acquaintance Rape." In *If She is Raped: A Book For Husbands, Fathers, and Male Friends*, pp.29-36. Florida: Learning Publications, 1984.
- Nevid, Jeffrey S. "Sex Differences in Factors of Romantic Attraction." *Sex Roles* 11 (September 1984): 401-411.
- Norusis, Marija J. *Introductory Statistics Guide: SPSSx*. Chicago: SPSS, 1983.
- Norusis, Marija J. *The SPSS Guide to Data Analysis*. Chicago: SPSS, 1986.
- O'Keeffe, Nona K., Brockopp, Karen, and Chew, Ether. "Teen Dating Violence." *Social Work* 31 (November-December 1986): 465-468.
- "Ontario Police Attacks On Minorities Feared." *The Vancouver Sun*, 12 April 1989, p. A8.
- Pace, Diana and Zaugra, John. "Model of a Date Rape Workshop for College Campuses." *Journal of College Student Development* (July 1988): 371-372.
- Palmer, Craig T. "Twelve Reasons Why Rape is Not Sexually Motivated: A Skeptical Examination." *The Journal of Sex Research* 25 (November 1988): 512-530.
- Parker, Graham. *An Introduction to Criminal Law (3rd Edition)*. Toronto: Methuen Publications, 1987.
- Pemberton, Kim. "B.C. RCMP Rule Out Racism." *Vancouver Sun*, 31 March 1989, p. B2.

- Pena, Mary Ellen de la, and Lee, Dorothy. "Natural Helpers- Developing Peer Support for Acquaintance Rape Victims." *Drawing the Line: Romance, Rape, and Relationships- A Conference on Teen Sexual Exploitation*, Seattle, Washington. Workshop 2-4, 29 May 1987. Recorded by Audio Productions of Seattle.
- Pena, Mary Ellen de la, and Lee, Dorothy. "Natural Helpers: Developing Peer Support for Date Rape Victims." Seattle: Kitsap Mental Health Services and Kitsap County Rape Response, May 29, 1987 (Hand-out).
- Penfold, P. Susan, and Walker, Gillian A. *Women and the Psychiatric Paradox*. Montreal: Eden Press, 1983.
- Piercy, Marge. "Rape Poem." (1974, 1975). Reprinted in Cox, S. *Female Psychology: The Emerging Self Science Research Associates*, Toronto 1976 at 293.
- Pirog-Good, Maureen A., and Stets, Jan E. *Working Paper 8586-9: Sexually Abusive Behavior in Dating Relationships*. Indiana: Regional Economic Development Institute, Indiana University, [August 12, 1986].
- Pitch, Tamar. "Critical Criminology, the Construction of Social Problems, and the Question of Rape." *International Journal of the Sociology of Law* 13 (1985): 35-46.
- "Poll Shows View of all Men as Rapists." *Vancouver Sun*, 23 September 1987, p.A7.
- Popiel, Debra A., and Susskind, Edwin C. "The Impact of Rape: Social Support as a Moderator of Stress." *American Journal of Community Psychology* 13 (December 1985): 645-676.
- Porter, Roy. "Rape- Does it have a Historical Meaning?" In *Rape*, pp. 216-236. Edited by Sylvana Tomaselli and Roy Porter. Great Britain: Basil Blackwell, 1986.
- Porterfield, Kay Marie. "When Dating Turns Ugly: Date Rape Defenses." *Missing* 1 (1984): 60-63, 66.
- Press, Aric; McDaniel, A.; Shannon, E.; Kasindorf, M.; Agrest, S.; Namuth, T.; Sandza, R.; Raine, G.; Anderson, M.; and Prout, L. "Rape and the Law." *Newsweek*, May 20, 1985. pp.60-64.
- Pritchard, Carol. "Date and Acquaintance Rape." In *Avoiding Rape On and Off Campus (2nd Edition)*, pp. 15-22. New Jersey: State College Publishing Co., 1988.
- Pryor, John B., and Day, Jeanne D. "Interpretations of Sexual Harassment: An Attributional Analysis." *Sex Roles* 18 (April 1988): 405-417.

- Quinsey, Vernon L. "Sexual Aggression: Studies of Offenders Against Women." *Law and Mental Health: International Perspectives*, vol.1, ed. David N. Weisstub. Toronto, Pergamon Press, 1984, pp.84-121.
- "RCMP Admit Racism." *The Province*, 30 March 1989, p. 26.
- "RCMP Seek Bail Jumpers in Bizarre Sex Kidnap." *Montreal Star*, 18 April 1978, p. A6.
- Ramu, G.: N., ed. *Courtship, Marriage and the Family in Canada*. Toronto: Macmillan Co., 1979.
- Rapaport, Karen, and Burkhart, Barry R. "Personality and Attitudinal Characteristics of Sexually Coercive College Males." *Journal of Abnormal Psychology* 93 (May 1984): 216-221.
- "Rape O.K.!" *The Province*. 2 May 1988, p.9.
- Rape Relief. *Rape Relief* (Pamphlet) Vancouver, August 1982.
- "Rape Victim Wins \$365,000. Suit." *Crime Control Digest* 10 (February 9, 1976): 8.
- Reilly, Mary E.; Lott, Bernice; and Gallogly, Sheila M. "Sexual Harassment of University Students." *Sex Roles* 15 (October 1986): 333-358.
- Report of the Canadian Federal-Provincial Task Force on Justice for Victims of Crime*. By Don Sinclair, Chairman. Ottawa: Canadian Government Publishing Centre, 1983.
- Richardson, Deborah; Leonard, K.; Taylor, S.; and Hammock, G. "Male Violence Toward Females: Victim and Aggressor Variables." *The Journal of Psychology* 119 (March 1985): 129-135.
- Rioux, Marcia H. *The Web of the Law: A Study of Sexual Offences in the Canadian Criminal Code*. Ottawa: Advisory Council on the Status of Women, 1975.
- Rivera, George F., and Regoli, Robert M. "Sexual Victimization Experiences of Sorority Women." *Sociology and Research Journal* 72 (October 1987): 39-42.
- Rodabaugh, Barbara J., and Austin, Melanie. *Sexual Assault: A Guide for Community Action*. New York: Garland STPM Press, 1981.
- Rodgers, Elizabeth. "Sex and Your Body: Why Rape Often is Committed by a Girl's Own Date, Boy Friend, or Fiance- and What Can be Done to Prevent It." *Seventeen* 42 (March 1983): 36.40.
- Roscoe, Bruce, and Callahan, John E. "Adolescents' Self-Report of Violence in Families and Dating Relations." *Adolescence* 20 (Fall 1985): 545-553.

- Roscoe, Bruce, and Benaske, Nancy. "Courtship Violence Experienced by Abused Wives: Similarities in Patterns of Abuse." *Family Relations* 34 (July 1985): 419-424.
- Roscoe, Bruce, and Kelsey, Tammy. "Dating Violence Among High School Students." *Psychology: A Quarterly Journal of Human Behavior* 23 (1986): 53-59.
- Rothman, Ellen K. *Hands and Hearts: A History of Courtship in America*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1987.
- Rouse, Linda P. "Abuse in Dating Relationships: A Comparison of Blacks, Whites, and Hispanics." *Journal of College Student Development* 29 (July 1988): 312-319.
- Rozovsky, L.E. and Rozovsky, F.A. *Legal Sex*. Toronto: Doubleday, 1982.
- Ruebsaat, Gisela. *Sexual Assault Legislation in Canada: An Evaluation (The New Sexual Assault Offences: Emerging Legal Issues, Report No. 2)*. Ottawa: Department of Justice. [1987].
- Russell, Diana E. H. "Pornography and Violence: What Does the New Research Say?" In *Take Back the Night: Women on Pornography*, pp.216-236. Edited by Laura Lederer. Bantam Books, 1982.
- Russell, Diana E. H. *Rape in Marriage*. New York: Macmillan Publishing Co., 1982.
- Russell, Diana E. H. *The Politics of Rape: The Victim's Perspective*. New York: Stein and Day, 1975.
- Russell, Diana E. H. "The Prevalence and Incidence of Forcible Rape and Attempted Rape of Females." *Victimology: An International Journal* 7 (1982): 81-93.
- Rutter, Frank. "Sex-in-Chains Girl Could Be Here." *Vancouver Sun*, 17 April 1978, p. D11.
- Sacco, Vincent, and Glackman, Bill. *Vancouver Urban Survey- 1983: Interviewer's Handbook*. Burnaby: Criminology Research Centre, Simon Fraser University, 1983.
- Sanday, Peggy R. "Rape and the Silencing of the Feminine." In *Rape*, pp. 84-101. Edited by Sylvana Tomaselli and Roy Porter. Great Britain: Basil Blackwell, 1986.
- Sanday, Peggy R. "The Socio-Cultural Context of Rape: A Cross-Cultural Study." *Journal of Social Issues* 37 (Fall 1981): 5-27.
- Sarrel, Philip M., and Masters, William H. "Sexual Molestation of Men by Women." *Archives of Sexual Behavior* 11 (1982): 117-131.

- Sarrel, Philip M., and Sarrel, Lorna. "Can a Man be Raped by a Woman?" *Redbook* (May 1981): 92, 94, 96, 98.
- Sattem, Linda; Savells, Jerry; and Murray, Ellen. "Sex-Role Stereotypes and Commitment of Rape." *Sex Roles* 11 (November 1984): 849-860.
- Scheppele, Kim L., and Bart, Pauline B. "Through Women's Eyes: Defining Danger in the Wake of Sexual Assault." *Journal of Social Issues* 39 (Spring 1983): 63-81.
- Schultz, LeRoy G., and DeSavage, Jan. "Rape and Rape Attitudes on a College Campus." In *Rape Victimology*, pp. 77-90. Edited by LeRoy G. Schultz. Springfield: Charles C. Thomas, 1975.
- Schwendinger, Julia R., and Schwendinger, Herman. *Rape and Inequality*. Beverly Hills: Sage Publications, 1983.
- Schwendinger, Julia R., and Schwendinger, Herman. "Rape Myths: In Legal, Theoretical, and Everyday Practice." *Crime and Social Justice* 1 (Spring-Summer 1974): 18-26.
- Scott, Vernon. "Singer Funds Rape Film." *The Province*, 25 June 1989, p. 65.
- Scully, Diana, and Marolla, Joseph. "Riding the Bull at Gilley's: Convicted Rapists Describe the Rewards of Rape." *Social Problems* 32 (February 1985): 251-263.
- Seligmann, Jean; Huck, J.; Joseph, N.; Namuth, T.; Prout, L.; Robinson, T.; and McDaniel, A. "The Date Who Rapes." *Newsweek*, April 9, 1984, pp.91-92.
- Servedio, Marcie. "Acquaintance Rape Prevention: A Classroom Model." Drawing the Line: Romance, Rape, and Relationships- A Conference on Teen Sexual Exploitation, Seattle, Washington. Workshop 4-1. 29 May 1987. Recorded by Audio Productions of Seattle.
- Servedio, Marcie. "Touching the Future." *Outcry!* (Winter/Spring 1987): 1-3.
- "Sex-in-Chains Case: Missing Beauty Could Be Here." *Vancouver Sun*, 17 April 1978. p. A1, A2.
- "Sexual Assault an Epidemic." *Vancouver Province*, 24 September 1985, p.31.
- Shainess, Natalie. "Vulnerability to Violence: Masochism as Process." *American Journal of Psychotherapy* 33 (April 1979): 174-189.
- Sherwin, Robert, and Corbett, Sherry. "Campus Sexual Norms and Dating Relationships: A Trend Analysis." *The Journal of Sex Research* 21 (August 1985): 258-274.
- Shorter, Edward. "On Writing the History of Rape." *Signs: Journal of Women in Culture and Society* 3 (Winter 1977): 471-482.

- Shotland, Lance R. "A Preliminary Model of Some Causes of Date Rape." *Academic Psychology Bulletin* 7 (Summer 1985): 187-200.
- Shotland, Lance R., and Goodstein, Lynne. "Just Because She Doesn't Want To Doesn't Mean It's Rape: An Experimentally Based Causal Model of the Perception of Rape in a Dating Situation." *Social Psychology Quarterly* 46 (September 1983): 220-232.
- Sigelman, Carol K.; Berry, Carol J.; and Wiles, Katharine A. "Violence in College Students' Dating Relationships." *Journal of Applied Social Psychology* 5 (1984): 530-548.
- Smart, Carol. *Women, Crime, and Criminology: A Feminist Critique*. London: Routledge and Kegan Paul, 1976.
- Smith, Cyril J. "History of Rape and Rape Laws." *Women Lawyers Journal* 60 (1974): 188-191.
- Smith, Michael D. "Women's Fear of Violent Crime: An Exploratory Test of a Feminist Hypothesis," paper presented at the 38th annual meeting of the American Society of Criminology, Atlanta, Georgia, 1 November 1986.
- Snare, Annika. "Sexual Violence Against Women: A Scandinavian Perspective." *Victimology: An International Journal* 9 (1984): 195-210.
- Solicitor General of Canada. "Female Victims of Crime." *Canadian Urban Victimization Survey Bulletin*, 4, Ottawa, Ontario: Minister of Supply and Services Canada, 1985.
- Solicitors for Women's Legal Education and Action Fund et al. *Factum of the Women's Legal Education and Action Fund (LEAF), et al Concerning R. v. Canadian Newspapers Co.* Toronto, February 1988.
- Someone You Know: Acquaintance Rape*. Gaylord Broadcasting Co., August 22, 1988 (Television Broadcast).
- Speaking Out*. Berkeley: National Clearinghouse on Marital Rape, undated (Pamphlet).
- Spees, Emil R. "College Students' Sexual Attitudes and Behaviors, 1974-1985: A Review of the Literature." *Journal of College Student Personnel* 28 (March 1987): 135-140.
- Spence, Janet T.; Helmreich, Robert; and Stapp, Joy. "A Short Version of the Attitudes toward Women Scale (AWS)." *Bulletin of the Psychonomic Society* 2 (1973): 219-220.
- Sprecher, Susan. "Sex Differences in Bases of Power in Dating Relationships." *Sex Roles* 12 (February 1985): 449-462.
- SPSS. *SPSSx Tables*. Chicago: SPSS, 1985.

- Stanley, Marilyn G. *Sexual Assault Legislation in Canada: An Evaluation (The Experience of the Rape Victim With the Criminal Justice System Prior to Bill C-127, Report No. 1)*. Ottawa: Department of Justice, [1987].
- Stark-Adamec, Cannie, and Adamec, Robert E. "Problems in Aggression Research: An Introduction." *International Journal of Women's Studies* 8 (September/October 1985): 356-362.
- Stets, Jan E., and Pirog-Good, Maureen A. *Working Paper 8586-7: Violence in Dating Relationships*. Indiana: Regional Economic Development Institute, Indiana University, [August 12, 1986].
- Stone, Lawrence. *The Family, Sex and Marriage in England 1500-1800*. New York: Harper and Row, 1977.
- Story, Marilyn D. "A Comparison of University Student Experience with Various Sexual Outlets in 1974 and 1980." *Adolescence* 17 (Winter 1982): 737-747.
- Strauss, Marina. "Judge's Rape Rating Termed Unfortunate by Attorney-General." *Globe and Mail*, 24 January 1984, p.A1-2.
- Struckman-Johnson, Cindy. "Forced Sex on Dates: It Happens to Men, Too." *The Journal of Sex Research* 24 (1988): 234-241.
- "Study Marks Males." *The Province*, 10 February 1989, p. 10.
- Sweet, Ellen. "Date Rape: The Story of an Epidemic and Those Who Deny It." *Ms./Campus Times* (October 1985): 56-59, 84-85.
- Sweet, Lois. "Male Victims of Sex Assaults Look for Help." *Toronto Star*, 13 November 1984, p.E1.
- Sweet, Lois. "Why Aren't Men Doing Something About the Prevention of Sex Attacks?" *Toronto Star*, 18 July 1986, p.B3.
- Tait, Kathy. "Date with Violence." *The Province*, 7 June 1988, p.37.
- Taubman, Stan. "Beyond the Bravado: Sex Roles and the Exploitive Male." *Social Work* 31 (January-February 1986): 12-18.
- Taylor, Stuart P., and Smith, Ian. "Aggression as a Function of Sex of Victim and Male Subject's Attitude Toward Women." *Psychological Reports* 35 (December 1974): 1095-1098.
- Temkin, Jennifer. "Women, Rape and Law Reform." In *Rape*, pp. 16-40. Edited by Sylvana Tomaselli and Roy Porter. Great Britain: Basil Blackwell, 1986.

- Thomas, Sheri. "The Younger Adolescent: Bridge Between Child Sexual Abuse and Date Rape Prevention." *Drawing the Line: Romance, Rape, and Relationships- A Conference on Teen Sexual Exploitation*, Seattle, Washington. Workshop 5-2, 30 May 1987. Recorded by Audio Productions of Seattle.
- Thompson, Joey. "Rape Damages Sought." *The Province*, 9 May 1989, p.6.
- Thompson, William E. "Courtship Violence: Toward a Conceptual Understanding." *Youth and Society* 18 (December 1986): 162-176.
- Thornton, Neil. "The Politics of Pornography: A Critique of Liberalism and Radical Feminism." *Australian and New Zealand Journal of Sociology* 22 (March 1986): 25-45.
- Tolor, Alexander. "Women's Attitudes Toward Forcible Rape." *Community Mental Health Journal* 14 (Summer 1978): 116-122.
- Toner, Barbara. *The Facts of Rape*. Great Britain: Anchor Press, 1982.
- Turner, E. S. *A History of Courting*. London: Michael Joseph Ltd., 1954.
- "U. S. Crisis Centre Takes Survey: Students Find Date Rape Acceptable." *Globe and Mail*, 3 May 1988, p. A10.
- Vancouver Rape Relief. *Myths Mask the Facts About Rape* (pamphlet). Vancouver, 1977.
- Vogelmann-Sine, Silke. "Implicit Consent and Rape: An Integration Theory Analysis of Female Responses in a Dating Context." Ph.D. dissertation, University of Hawaii, 1980.
- Voilquin, Suzanne. *Souvenirs d'une Fille du Peuple, ou la Saint-Simonienne en Egypte, 1834 á 1836*. Paris, 1866.
- Waller, Willard. "The Rating and Dating Complex." *American Sociological Review* 2 (1937): 727-734.
- Walster, Elaine; Aronson, V.; and Abrahams, D. "Importance of Physical Attractiveness in Dating Behavior." *Journal of Personality and Social Psychology* 4 (1966): 508-516.
- Warner, Carmen Germaine, ed. *Rape and Sexual Assault: Management and Intervention*. London: Aspen Systems, 1980.
- Warshaw, Robin. *I Never Called It Rape: The Ms. Report on Recognizing, Fighting and Surviving Date and Acquaintance Rape*. New York: Harper and Row, 1988.
- Watt, David. *The New Offences Against the Person: The Provisions of Bill C-127*. Toronto: Butterworths, 1984.

Weiler, Dick, and Desgagné, Jean-Guy. *Victims and Witnesses of Crime in Canada*. Ottawa: Department of Justice, 1984.

Weis, Kurt, and Borges, Sandra S. "Victimology and Rape: The Case of the Legitimate Victim." In *Rape Victimology*, pp. 91-141. Edited by LeRoy G. Schultz. Springfield: Charles C. Thomas, 1975.

Weiss, Carl and Friar, David J. *Terror in the Prisons: Homosexual Rape and Why Society Condone It*. New York: Bobbs-Merrill Co., 1974.

"Where Tolerance is Misplaced." *Globe and Mail*, 6 May 1988, p. A6.

Williams, Joyce E., and Holmes, Karen A. *The Second Assault: Rape and Public Attitudes*. Westport: Greenwood Press, 1981.

Williams, Linda S. "The Classic Rape: When Do Victims Report?" *Social Problems* 31 (April 1984): 459-467.

Wilson, Kenneth; Faison, Rebecca; and Britton, G.M. "Cultural Aspects of Male Sex Aggression." *Deviant Behavior* 4 (1983): 241-255.

Wilson, Kenneth, and Faison, Rebecca. "Sexual Assault in Dating: A Profile of the Victims." *Sociological Research Symposium* 9 (1979): 320-326.

Wilson, Wayne, and Durrenberger, Robert. "Comparison of Rape and Attempted Rape Victims." *Psychological Reports* 50 (February 1982): 198.

Wisn, Gail. "The Treatment of Rape in Criminology Textbooks." *Victimology: An International Journal* 4 (1979): 86-99.

Women Against Violence Against Women. *Rape Crisis Centre* (pamphlet). Vancouver: Press Gang, undated.

Yllo, Kersti, and Straus, Murray A. "Interpersonal Violence Among Married and Cohabiting Couples." *Family Relations* 30 (July 1981): 339-347.

You Can be Hurt by Someone You Know: Sexual Assault by an Acquaintance. Washington: Coalition of Sexual Assault Programs and Department of Social and Health Services, 1987 (Pamphlet).

"\$50,000. Assault." *The Province*, 6 April 1989, p. 12.

LEGAL CASES CITED

- D.P.P. v. Hester*, [1973] A.C. 296 (H.L.).
- D.P.P. v. Kilbourne*, [1973] A.C. 729 (H.L.).
- Laliberte v. The Queen*, [1877] 1 S.C.R. 117.
- Laybourn, Bulmer and Illingworth v. The Queen*, [1987] 1 S.C.R. 782, 33 C.C.C. (3d) 385, 58 C.R. (3d) 48, 14 B.C.L.R. (2d) 196, [1987] 4 W.W.R. 577 (sub nom. *Laybourn v. The Queen*), 39 D.L.R. (4th) 641, 75 N.R. 271 (sub nom. *R. v. Laybourn*) (S.C.C.).
- Pappajohn v. The Queen*, [1980] 2 S.C.R. 120, 14 C.R. (3d) 243, 19 C.R. (3d) 97, [1980] 4 W.W.R. 387, 52 C.C.C. (2d) 481, 111 D.L.R. (3d) 1, 32 N.R. 104 (S.C.C.).
- R. v. Alderton* (1985), 44 C.R. (3d) 254, 17 C.C.C. (3d) 204, 49 O.R. (2d) 257, 12 C.R.R. 361 (Ont. C.A.).
- R. v. Barrett* (1984), 13 W.C.B. 96 (Ont. Prov. Ct.).
- R. v. Barrons* (1985), 70 A.R. 107 (Alta. Q.B.).
- R. v. Baskerville*, [1916] 2 K.B. 658, 12 Cr. App. R. 81 (C.C.A.).
- R. v. Bearhead* (1986), 27 C.C.C. (3d) 546 (Alta. Q.B.).
- R. v. Bird and Peebles* (1984), 40 C.R. (3d) 41 (Man. Q.B.); affirmed 41 C.R. (3d) xxix, 12 C.C.C. (3d) 523 (Man. C.A.).
- R. v. Blondin*, [1971] 2 W.W.R. 1 (B.C.C.A.).
- R. v. Brown* (1983), 34 C.R. (3d) 191 (Alta. C.A.).
- R. v. Brun* (1986), 28 C.C.C. (3d) 396 (N.B.Q.B.).
- R. v. Buttar* (1986), 52 C.R. (3d) 327 (B.C.C.A.).
- R. v. Camp* (1977), 36 C.C.C. (2d) 511, 39 C.R.N.S. 164, 17 O.R. (2d) 99 (C.A.).
- R. v. Canadian Newspapers Co. Ltd.* (1988), 43 C.C.C. (3d) 24 (S.C.C.).
- R. v. Cardo* (1888), 17 OR 11, 12-14.
- R. v. Chase* (1987), 37 C.C.C. (3d) 97 (S.C.C.).
- R. v. Colp* (1984), 36 C.R. (3d) 8 (N.S. Cty. Ct.).
- R. v. Cook* (1985), 46 C.R. (3d) 129 (B.C.C.A.).

- R. v. Coombs* (1985), 23 C.C.C. (3d) 356, 49 C.R. (3d) 78 (Nfld. S.C.T.D.).
- R. v. Cudmore* A0 RG22 York County Minute Books, 19 October 1865.
- R. v. E.H.B.* (1987), 58 C.R. (3d) 48 (S.C.C.).
- R. v. English* A0 RG22 York County Minute Books, 18 April 1866.
- R. v. Flick* (1866), 16 UCQB 379.
- R. v. Francis* (1855), 13 UCQB 116-117.
- R. v. George* (1985), 23 C.C.C. (3d) 42 (B.C.C.A.).
- R. v. Gregg et al.* A0 RG22 York County Minute Books, 6 January 1859.
- R. v. Guthrie* (1985), 8 O.A.C. 277 (Ont. C.A.).
- R. v. H.* (1987), 39 C.C.C. (3d) 177 (Nfld. C.A.).
- R. v. J.D.R.* (1987), 58 C.R. (3d) 28 (S.C.C.).
- R. v. J.W.B.* (1986), 72 N.S.R. (2d) 122 (N.S. Youth Ct.).
- R. v. Johnson* A0 RG22 York County Minute Books, 12 October 1866.
- R. v. Legacy* A0 RG22 Benfrew County Minute Books, 4 October 1883.
- R. v. LeGallant* (1986), 29 C.C.C. (3d) 291, 54 C.R. (3d) 46, [1986] 6 W.W.R. 372 (B.C.C.A.); reversing (1985), 47 C.R. (3d) 170 (B.C.S.C.).
- R. v. Mohr*, [1984] B.C.D. Crim. Conv. 1608-02 (B.C.S.C.).
- R. v. Moreau* (1986), 51 C.R. (3d) 209, 26 C.C.C. (3d) 359 (Ont. C.A.).
- R. v. Oquataq* (1985), 18 C.C.C. (3d) 440 (N.W.T.S.C.).
- R. v. Page* (1984), 40 C.R. (3d) 86 (Ont. H.C.).
- R. v. Petrozzi* (1987), 35 C.C.C. (3d) 528 (B.C.C.A.).
- R. v. R.D.M.* (1986), 31 C.C.C. (3d) 323 (N.S.C.A.).
- R. v. Robertson*, [1987] 1 S.C.R. 918 (S.C.C.).
- R. v. Roche* (1985), 46 C.R. (3d) 160 (Ont. C.A.).
- R. v. Simmons* (1973), 13 C.C.C. (2d) 165 (Ont. C.A.).
- R. v. Stead* A0 RG22 York County Minute Books, 11 October 1882; *Globe*, 12 October 1882.
- R. v. T.W.* (1986), 49 Alta. L.R. (2d) 215 (Alta. Q.B.).

R. v. Waggstaff A0 RG22 York County Minute Books, 4 October 1887.

R. v. White (1986), 24 C.C.C. (3d) 1 (B.C.C.A.).

R. v. Wiseman (1985), 22 C.C.C. (3d) 12 (Ont. Dist. Ct.).

Re Seaboyer and Gayme and The Queen (1987), 37 C.C.C. (3d) 53, 58 C.R. (3d) 289, 61 O.R. (2d) 290 (Ont. C.A.).

Rex v. Sussex Justices (1924) 1 K.B. 259.

Sansregret v. The Queen, [1985] 3 W.W.R. 701, [1985] 1 S.C.R. 570 (S.C.C.).

Thomas v. The Queen, [1952] 2 S.C.R. 344, 103 C.C.C. 193, 15 C.R. 1 (S.C.C.).

Name Index

Abbey, Antonia, 71
Alreck, Pamela, 127
Amir, Menachem, 50, 51, 52, 53, 54, 61
Backhouse, Constance, 17, 21, 26
Bailey, Kenneth, 131
Bart, Pauline, 58, 59, 66
Beattie, J. M., 25
Beezley, Dana, 74, 83
Bowlby, Justice John (Ont. S.C.), 45
Boyle, Christine, 44, 99
Britton, G. M., 74, 76
Brownmiller, Susan, 2, 57
Burt, Martha, 186
Byers, E. Sandra, 74, 79, 80, 81
Cagney and Lacey, 1
Check, James, 74, 93
Clark, Lorenne, 2, 19, 34, 60, 61, 74, 79
Donahue, Phil, 1
Dull, Thomas, 105
Estrich, Susan, 29, 32, 33, 98, 99
Faison, Rebecca, 63, 64, 74, 76
Fischer, Gloria, 74, 95, 96
Friedman, Debra, 74, 94
Garley, Ken, 19, 28
Giacopassi, David, 105

Goodstein, Lynne, 74, 93, 94
Groth, Nicholas, 2
Hale, Sir Matthew, 31
Harvey, Mary, 12
Kalven, Harry, 31
Kanin, Eugene, 3, 48, 49, 50, 62, 74, 78
Kirkpatrick, Clifford, 48, 49, 62
Korman, Sheila, 72, 73
Koss, Mary, 2, 12, 74, 75, 83, 84, 85, 100, 101, 207, 208
Leonard, Kenneth, 74, 83
Leslie, Gerald, 72, 73
Lewis, Debra, 2, 19, 34, 60, 61, 74, 79
Linton, Melaney, 61, 104
Malamuth, Neil, 74, 93
Marolla, Joseph, 74, 75, 81, 82, 83
McGillivray, Chief Justice William (Alta C.A.), 44
Merton, Robert, 3, 74, 76, 77, 78
Moon, Sueng Gyu, 2
Muehlenhard, Charlene, 61, 74, 94, 95, 104
Oros, Cheryl, 74, 83
Palys, Ted, 128
Parcell, Stanley, 62
Pepys, Samuel, 24
Pirog-Good, Maureen, 74, 88, 89, 90, 91, 92
Pritchard, Carol, 103
Raphael, Sally Jessy, 1
Regoli, Robert, 102

Rivera, George, 102
Russell, Diana, 2, 55, 56, 59, 68, 70, 71
Scully, Diana, 74, 75, 81, 82, 83
Settle, Robert, 127
Shotland, Lance, 3, 74, 85, 86, 87, 93, 94
Skogan, W. G., 144
Southey, Justice James (Ont. S.C.), 45
Stephen, Sir James Fitzjames, 17
Stets, Jan, 74, 88, 89, 90, 91, 92
Stone, Lawrence, 21, 22, 24
Thomas, Celeste, 74, 94
Vogelmann-Sine, Silke, 65, 66
Voilquin, Suzanne Monnier (1801-1877), 27, 28, 32
Warshaw, Robin, 209
Wilson, Kenneth, 63, 64, 74, 76, 77
Wilson, Paula, 74, 79, 80, 81
Winfrey, Oprah, 1
Zeisel, Hans, 31
Zimbardo, Philip, 80

Subject Index

- Abduction, 19, 21
- Acceptance of Interpersonal Violence, 186, 189, 227
- Acquaintance Rape, 44, 69, 93, 101
 - loss of trust, 58
 - psychological symptoms of, 101
 - reporting of, 54
- Acquaintance Sexual Assault, 69, 101
 - loss of trust, 58
 - reporting of, 54
- Adversarial Sexual Beliefs, 186, 189, 227
- Aggravated Rape, 30
- Aggravated Sexual Assault, 7
 - Criminal Code Offence of, 7
- American Criminal Justice System, 98
- Assault, 14
 - definition of, 15
- Assault with intent to commit rape, 26
- Bill C-127, 7, 34, 38, 39, 43, 99
- Boyfriend, 146
 - definition of, 146
- Bride Capture, 19
- Canadian Criminal Justice System, 99
 - its treatment of date sexual assault victims, 99
- Charter of Rights and Freedoms, s. 11(d), 40, 42
 - s. 7, 40, 42

Chastity and Credibility, 33, 34

Clothing, 24

introduction of the bra, 24

introduction of underwear, 24

Continuum of Coercive Sexuality, 79

Corroboration, 29, 38

legal definition of, 29

legal requirement for, 33

Court of Oyer & Terminer, 26

Court statistics, 51

Courtship, 21

among the poor, 21, 22

among the wealthy, 21, 22

Credibility and Chastity, 33, 34

Criminal Justice System, 32, 56

American, 32

Canadian, 32

Date, 146

definition of, 146

Date Rape, 9, 69, 70, 226

abbreviation of, 10

and the law, 98

criminal prosecution of, 181

definitions of, 10

early, 85

emotional consequences of, 226

exemption, 32

females harming males, 11
feminist view of, 55
headings it falls under, 10
heterosexual, 11
homosexual, 11
in a national sample, 98, 100
in-micro samples, 98, 102
labels, 9
legal action, 24
loss of trust, 58
males harming females, 11
of a crippled woman, 44
of widows, 23
psychopathological view of, 55
relational, 85
reporting of, 54, 181, 226
risk factors, 104
the present study's definition of, 10
the prevention of, 98
theories of, 74
unacknowledged, 53, 56
when males are victims, 63
Date Rape Attribution, 74, 92, 94
definition of, 74
weaknesses of four selected studies, 96
Date Rape Exemption, 32
Date Rape Prevention, 98, 103

Date Rape Research, 4

factors fueling increased research, 67

Past Errors, 4

period of largest growth, 68

Date Sexual Assault, 14, 69, 226

abbreviation of, 10

acknowledged, 15

civil prosecution of, 181

definitions of, 10

emotional consequences of, 226

females harming males, 11

feminist view of, 55

headings it falls under, 10

heterosexual, 11

homosexual, 11

in micro samples, 102

individual, 15

labels, 9

legal action, 24

loss of trust, 58

males harming females, 11

multiple or gang, 15

of a crippled woman, 44

of widows, 23

pair, 15

partially planned, 15

planned, 15

psychopathological view of, 55
reported, 15
reporting of, 54, 181, 226
risk factors, 104
the law regarding, 36
the present study's definition of, 10
the prevention of, 98
theories of, 74
unacknowledged, 15, 53, 56
unplanned, 15
unreported, 15
when males are victims, 63

Date Sexual Assault Prevention, 98, 103
Date Sexual Assault Research, 4
 Past Errors, 4

Disclosure, 228
 of sexual victimization, 228
 of sexual victimizing, 228

Doctrine of Recent Complaint, 33, 38, 39

Early Date Rape, 85
 definition of, 85

Evidentiary Rules Regarding Rape, 32, 33

Evidentiary Rules Regarding Sexual Assault, 38

Expressiveness, definition of, 89

External Validity, 59, 103, 128

Feminist Beliefs, 73

Gang Date Rape, 57

Gang Date Sexual Assault, 57

Gang Rape, 36

Gang Sexual Assault, 36

Gender Differences in Perception of Sexual Intent, 74

Generational Theory of Violence, 3, 74, 76, 77

Heiress-Stealing, 19

Honest but Mistaken Belief, 36

as to consent, 36, 88

Indecent Assault, 26

Instrumentality, definition of, 89

Internal Validity, 59

affected by sample size, 67

non-response bias, 127

reliance on a single method, 97

response bias, 127

threat to, 59, 96

threats to, 81

Major Findings of Pirog-Good & Stets, 90

Male Date Rape Victims, 63

Male Date Sexual Assault Victims, 63

Marital Rape, 44, 47, 68, 69, 70

exemption to, 53

loss of trust, 58

reporting of, 54

Marital Sexual Assault, 68, 69, 70

loss of trust, 58

reporting of, 54

Milieu Variables, 76
 definition of, 76

Multiple Date Rape, 57

Multiple Date Sexual Assault, 57

Negligence Liability, 98, 99
 Supreme Court of Canada's position, 99
 types of, 99

Non-Stranger Rape, police classification, 34

Objective Approach to Criminal Liability, 99

Objective Approach to Guilt, 37

Police, classification of rape cases, 61
 handling of sexual assault complaints, 54

Police statistics, 51, 54, 55

Power Theory, 74, 76

Prevention of Sexual Assault, 103, 104, 225

Prison statistics, 51

Probit Model of Date Rape (Pirog-Good & Stets), 88, 89, 90

Probit Model of Date Sexual Assault (Pirog-Good & Stets), 74

Proverb, 23

Psychopathological Model, 2, 225

Psychopathological Model of Date Rape, 74, 75, 76, 84, 85, 225

Psychopathological Model of Date Sexual Assault, 74, 75, 76, 84, 225

R. v. Alderton, 7

R. v. Barrett, 38

R. v. Bird, 41

R. v. Brun, 41, 42

R. v. Cardo, 30

R. v. Chase, 7, 8

R. v. Cook, 8

R. v. Coombs, 41

R. v. Fick, 30

R. v. Francis, 30

R. v. J.W.B., 41

R. v. LeGallant, 41

R. v. Mohr, 38

R. v. Oquataq, 41, 42

R. v. Ramos, 8

R. v. Taylor, 8

R. v. Wiseman, 41

Rape, 7

accessory to, 53

acquaintance, 12, 14

aggravated, 30

attempted, 25, 69

avoidance of, 66

completed, 69

convictions for, 1840-1892, 30

Criminal Code Offence of, 7

date, 12, 14

forcible, 26, 52

four main types of, 12, 14

in the Middle Ages, 19

its Latin derivative, 18

legal abolishment of Code offence, 34

marital, 12, 14

myths, 23

prosecutions commenced from 1840-1892, 30

psychopathological explanation, 82

psychopathological view of, 55

reasons for not reporting, 28

rules of evidence, 32

simple, 30

statutory, 26, 52

stranger, 12, 14, 30

trials, 25

unacknowledged, 53

underreporting of, 53

Rape Laws, 20

application to "suspicious" women, 31

application to women of doubtful reputation, 31

application to women of unconventional morals, 31

application to women who had been drinking, 31

application to women who had dated their attackers, 31

application to women who had hitchhiked, 31

in Pennsylvania in 1958 & 1960, 52, 53

in 1892, 28

of the Middle Ages, 20

Rape Myths, 33, 54, 62, 96, 103, 186, 203, 204, 227

acceptance of, 201, 202, 203

Re Seaboyer and the Queen, 41, 43

Recommendations of Present Study, 214

Refusal Rate, 59, 63, 69

Relational Date Rape, 85
definition of, 85

Relative Deprivation, 49

Replication, of Kirkpatrick's & Kanin's 1957 study, 62

Response Bias, 134, 228
in the present study, 134, 135, 178, 228

Response Rate, 134
for questionnaires completed in-class, 134
for questionnaires completed outside-of-class, 134

Rex v. Sussex Justices, 227

Self-Selection Bias, 59

Sex Role Stereotyping, 93, 186, 189, 227

Sexual Activity of Complainant, 38

Sexual Activity of the Complainant, 39

Sexual Assault, 14
Criminal Code Offence of, 7, 35

Sexual Assault Laws, application to a date sexual assault victim, 45
application to women of doubtful reputation, 45
application to women who have been drinking, 44
application to women who have been smoking marijuana, 44

Sexual Assault Research Project, 107, 214, 225, 228
agencies sexual assault victims referred to, 116
barriers to obtaining a representative sample, 113
classified request, 115
consent forms, 110
content analysis of questionnaire criticism, 121

data collection instruments used, 108

data processing and analyzing, 118

how subjects could acquire additional information, 110

how subjects could verify its authenticity, 110

implications for future research, 225, 228

implications for social policy, 225

information sheets, 110

interview procedures, 115

invitation to offer constructive criticism, 121

its abbreviation, 107

its Codebook, 119

its command files, 119

its complaint procedure, 110

its data collection procedures, 111

its Data Entry Book, 120

its datafiles, 119

its purpose, 107

its recommendations, 214

its shortcomings and limitations, 121

its two types of interview schedules, 110

its two types of questionnaires, 108

population surveyed, 112

process-editing of the data, 120

quantity of data processed, 118

questionnaire distribution procedures, 113

response rate for questionnaires completed in-class, 127

response rate for questionnaires completed outside-of-class, 127

the Overview Book, 116
the Pass On Book, 117
the Redbook, 116
training of research assistants, 116
two conditions under which questionnaires completed, 127
when it began, 107
when it ended, 107
Sexual Experiences Survey, 83
Sexual Frustration, 55, 78
Sexual Reputation of Complainant, 38
Sexual Reputation of the Complainant, 42
Sharing of Dating Expenses, 73
Simple Rape, 30, 98
 definition of, 98
Social Conflict Model, 2
Social Conflict Model of Date Rape, 74, 84
Social Conflict Model of Date Sexual Assault, 74, 84
Social Control Model, 2
Social Control Model of Date Rape, 74, 84
Social Control Model of Date Sexual Assault, 74, 84
Social Learning Theory, 74, 82
Spousal Competence and Compellability, 38
Statutes of Westminster, 20, 21
Stereotypical Beliefs, 63, 65
Stranger Rape, 30, 32, 44, 69, 93, 101
 police classification of, 34
 psychological symptoms of, 101

reporting of, 54, 61

Stranger Sexual Assault, 69, 101

 reporting of, 54, 61

Strengths of Shotland Model of Date Rape, 86

Subjective Approach to Criminal Liability, 99

Subjective Approach to Guilt, 37

System Variables, 76

 definition of, 76

The Queen v. Antoine Legacy, 30

The Queen v. Henry Wagstaff, 30

The Queen v. Robert Johnson, 30

Theory of Anomie (Merton), 3, 74, 76, 77, 78

Theory of Coercive Sexuality, 74, 80

Theory of Coercive Sexuality (Clark & Lewis), 79

Theory of Date Rape (Shotland), 3

Theory of Relative Sexual Frustration (Kanin), 3, 49, 74

Toronto Study (Clark & Lewis), 34

Town Meeting, 1

Trust, 58, 227

 betrayal of, 227

 loss of, 58

Types of Date Rape (Shotland), 85

Uniform Crime Reports, 53

Unwanted Male Sexual Aggression, 145

 definition of, 145

Validity, 59

 types of, 59

Vancouver Study (Clark & Lewis), 34

Victim-Offender Relationship, 50

 abbreviation for, 50

 Amir's 7 Categories of, 51

Violence, 15

 definition of, 15

Weaknesses of Shotland Model of Date Rape, 87

Women Who Married Their Rapists, 70

 reasons given, 71